



GOD OF SLAUGHTER

BOOK 10

Ni Cang Tian

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

God Of Slaughter

(杀神)

by

Ni Cang Tian

(逆蒼天)

Synopsis

Growing up parentless, Shi Yan, who was left with a large amount of inheritance money, bore a general disinterest in life.

The only times he felt alive was when adrenaline coursed thorough his veins. He quickly found that extreme sports, bungyjumping, cave diving & skydiving, gave him the biggest kicks. The bigger the adrenaline kick, the closer he was to death, the more alive he felt.

Waking up in a pile of dead bodies in an unknown land, after a diving adventure had ended disastrously, he quickly realizes the body he now possessed was not his own.

Follow Shi Yan as he explores this new world where danger lurks around every corner, and death is only a breath away; a world in which Shi Yan could not feel any more alive.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Sigma @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Sigma @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 901: Origin

Many heaven flames were bound under rules of Nature. They were brought into a mysterious, unknown area together with the Immemorial Demonic Flame. Nobody could enter or sense the mysteries of this place.

Shi Yan had a soul connection with the heaven flames so he could use the heaven flame's soul energy fluctuation to sense that something strange was happening in that place, something that the naked eye couldn't see. He could use his Soul Consciousness to grab something for a while...

Earth and heaven energy in that place was strange and had clear movement. It seemed that if a warrior cultivated there, he would simply receive the true meanings of a power Upanishad.

In that place, powers Upanishad could explain themselves in magical ways. If the soul of a warrior could get in there, that warrior could use this method to explain their powers and study further. He would eventually reach a profound level of understanding his power Upanishad.

The best place for the warriors to cultivate...

Shi Yan's eyes brightened. He couldn't press down the hope in his heart and he couldn't thank the Ring Spirit enough for its wide vision.

"It's hard to join the battle between the heaven flames. You can't do it." Na Xin glanced at him, speaking sincerely. "However, I heard that you could use your soul energy to strengthen the heaven flames. If it's true, I advise you not to hold it back. I think... you will receive a great benefit from this."

"Why do you seem to be so familiar with heaven flames?" Shi Yan didn't understand this. "You had never returned to the ancestral land. According to legends, only the ancient continent with an

Origin could have such strange living beings like the heaven flames. How do you know about them that well?"

Na Xin contemplated for a while, his face complicated and inexplicable. Then, he said faintly, "I was once close to a heaven flame..."

Shi Yan gawked.

Ouyang Luo Shuang put up her guard.

From the conversation between Shi Yan and Na Xin, she knew that Na Xin wasn't a native warrior of the Grace Mainland. She was too curious. And now, Na Xin said that he used to be close to a heaven flame, which made her listen to them more seriously.

"It's true that only the ancient continents with Origin can generate the heaven flames," Na Xin looked at Shi Yan, explaining, "but only our ancestral land was not the only ancient continent with an Origin. There is a life star with an Origin in our star area. When I was young, I had traveled there. That place was hazardous, totally different from our ancestral land. I found a strange flame there. It has its own consciousness. I wanted to capture it. Too bad, someone had attacked me at that time. My soul altar was almost broken. Sigh..."

Na Xin sighed, shaking his head begrudgingly. "I was too young at that time. I knew nothing about the heaven flames and I was impulsive. If I had gone with the knowledge I had today, it would have been different."

"Why?" Shi Yan was surprised.

"I wanted to force it to fuse with me. However, I underestimated the grade of that flame. It tricked me." Na Xin forced a smile. "While the heaven flame and I were battling with our souls, someone ambushed me. I got hurt badly. He took the heaven flame and left me almost dead..."

Na Xin didn't want to continue. At this point, he proactively

switched the topic. "You do have good fortune. I can't believe you can gather so many heaven flames..."

Shi Yan chuckled, "My fortune isn't bad, indeed."

Grace Mainland had ten heaven flames. Today, Shi Yan had seven out of ten staying together with his soul in his soul altar, becoming part of his powers.

Shi Yan had more than one heaven flame, something that ordinary warriors had yearned for their whole life. If it wasn't destiny, what was it?

"I hope you can succeed." Na Xin nodded, lowering his voice. "You and your heaven flames aren't in its combined form. Even if your heaven flames fail, your soul won't perish. However, getting hurt is unavoidable. You should be careful and find a countermeasure."

"I will," Shi Yan didn't say more. Right next to Na Xin and Ouyang Luo Shuang, he sat down quietly, closing his eyes and using his Soul Consciousness to travel between spaces.

He was a little bit confused.

The Earth Flame hadn't returned.

In this critical moment, if the Earth Flame had received his message, it would have answered, wouldn't it have?

However, Shi Yan couldn't feel the Earth Flame's aura.

Has something unexpected happened to it?

His thought flickered and a drop of jewel-like garnet blood seeped through his fingertip and exploded. A space of faint blood suddenly turned into only one beam shooting toward a space slit ahead of him.

He had consumed one drop of Immortal Demon Blood to search for the Earth Flame based on the subtle and miracle connection between their souls. Shortly after, an exploding halo was reflected

in Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness.

Shi Yan's face was cold but serious. However, he was shuddering inwardly. His power Upanishad changed, creating the Space God Domain.

Different abilities of space power were crossing his Sea of Consciousness. Then, he found a signal, reaching his finger to touch the void in some direction.

Space energy fluctuation suddenly surged from his fingertip. A space partition covered by his God Domain slowly projected an upside down image. It became visible shortly.

Space Inverted Image was an ability of Space power Upanishad.

That image became brighter and clearer. They saw clusters of red flames moving in the image.

In the next moment, the image stopped shaking. They saw that it was a place full of lava and fire. The Earth Flame flew through scorching lava, heading to the deepest part of earth's core. It seemed like it had found something magical there.

The earth's core wasn't watertight. It had slits and cracks.

Shi Yan's Space Inverter Image in his God Domain was showing layers of lava going through many fine slits and cracks in earth's core. Along the way, he could see many massive chunks of crystal. However, they didn't have any bit of energy remaining.

Thick layers of crystals filled each corner of earth's core. The Earth Flame was moving like a shuttle through the glacier. It became harder to dig further.

Eventually, it crossed the crystals, moving into an area of a floating fire vortex. That fire vortex had a warm and tender energy, emitting ivory flames. Clouds drifted and stayed together, making it look more like a dream with countless marvelous scenes.

Inside that flaming vortex, a miniature world was portrayed

using light, fire, clouds, and mist.

Concentrating his mind, Shi Yan's eyes brightened.

That miniature world was Grace Mainland!

The Quiet Could Clan, the Divine Great Land, seas, and lands were resized tens of thousands of times. Now it was as big as a rubber ball revolving inside the flaming vortex.

That flaming vortex bound that pocket-sized world, constantly taking in the energy of that world, which made it dimmer and dimmer. Beams of ivory flames shot out, falling into the eye of the flaming vortex.

Na Xin and Ouyang Luo Shuang were baffled, watching that upside down image. They looked attentive as if they were considering something.

"Primal Chaos Sacred Flame!"

Shortly after, a thought of the Earth Flame was sent from a deep place in the earth's core which exploded in his head.

Shi Yan was shaken, his face frightened. He couldn't help but shout, "Primal Chaos Sacred Flame! It's the Primal Chaos Sacred Flame!"

"Is it a heaven flame too?" Na Xin asked bewilderedly.

Shi Yan pointed at the flaming vortex in his inverted image, his visage serious. "It's the Primal Chaos Sacred Flame! In the Grace Mainland, it's ranked first!"

Na Xin was perplexed for a while before he hastened to ask.

"The earth's inner core of Grace Mainland, the deepest place underground!" Shi Yan gave a low shout.

Na Xin was shocked, pointing disbelievingly at that pocket-sized world inside the flaming vortex. "The Origin! It's the Origin of the ancient continent! That heaven flame is absorbing Origin energy! No wonder why earth and heaven energy in this continent has

been running out so quickly!"

Shi Yan and Ouyang Luo Shuang were baffled.

"I've never seen the Origin before, but I've heard about it. The Origin is the core of an archaic continent. It looks like a miniature of that continent. It's very mysterious and marvelous at the same time with many powerful abilities. However, the most important thing is that an ancient continent with an Origin can proactively gather energy from outer space. The Origin that had stayed in the earth's inner core of the ancient continent for billions of years of accumulation could gather a tremendous amount of earth and heaven energy for that continent. The Origin of our ancestral land is very small, too small, indeed. But now the Primal Chaos Scared Flame is absorbing the Origin energy. No wonder why the energy here has been running out rapidly!" said Na Xin with a serious face.

"How is the Origin formed? Will it be worn out?" Shi Yan was also shocked.

"No one knows how the Origin is formed. While it's gathering energy, it will also consume some. The Grace Mainland has existed for quite a long time, and the earth and heaven energy used to be extremely abundant. Of course, the Origin has to have consumed a lot. That heaven flame is tyrannical. It knows how to take in the Origin energy. It'll be really tough to deal with it." Na Xin took a deep breath then said sincerely, "It'll bring you a lot of trouble."

"I'll be in trouble?" Shi Yan was baffled.

In the next moment, he knew what Na Xin meant.

The Earth Flame had sent only one thought before it jumped into the flaming vortex. That vortex then dragged it into its core.

Right after that, the Primal Chaos Sacred Flame and the Earth Flame disappeared into an unrecognizable place under the power of Nature's Rules.

The area that warriors could only use Soul Consciousness to

sense a little bit now gathered all heaven flames of Grace Mainland!

The Origin was freed from the confinement of the flaming vortex. This fist-sized globe was still spinning, floating in the middle of a thick layer of crystals. Shi Yan's Space Inverted Image could still project it.

"Where did that heaven flame get the Origin?" asked Ouyang Luo Shuang all of a sudden.

Shi Yan was surprised.

Na Xin knitted his brows.

"You don't want to get that Origin? The Grace Mainland's energy is running out. Since that Origin is so small, it doesn't have a significant function. It would be better if we can absorb its magical powers." Ouyang Luo Shuang looked at Shi Yan. "According to what my inheritance told me, when we enter the Original God, with the support of the Origin, the Original Soul to be formed will be very marvelous. We can also transform the Essence Qi... It was also God Power!"

"Little girl, you do have great ambitions." Na Xin snorted.

"You're at the Ethereal God Realm. To you, the Origin is just an ingredient to refine treasures. You can't merge it with your soul anymore. Furthermore, you're from the Giant Clan. You won't do such a thing, will you?" Ouyang Luo Shuang exhaled slightly. Her clear but extremely cold eyes sparkled intimidatingly.

She seemed to have a vehement desire to get that Origin.

"If the Origin fuses with the heaven flame and releases the Origin energy, it can revive the Grace Mainland," Na Xin looked at Shi Yan.

"That is correct," Shi Yan nodded, speaking to Ouyang Luo Shuang. "I'm sorry. If I get it, it will benefit the entire continent. But if you get it, it will benefit only yourself. I'm sorry."

As soon as he finished, Shi Yan tore through space and left.

Chapter 902: The Heaven Flame that Ranks First

A space crack opened. Shi Yan jumped in immediately, disappearing in just a blink of an eye.

Ouyang Luo Shuang gawked, dropping her jaw.

Na Xin was astounded.

Too direct and resolute, wasn't it?

The Origin was the most magical and incredible inner core of the ancient continents. It was priceless to any warriors. Ouyang Luo Shuang knew it and so did Na Xin.

Previously, Shi Yan had shown that he wasn't interested in that thing. After the other two had explained its key features, he took action immediately. His change of mind was so fast it surprised the others a lot.

Shi Yan left right after he finished speaking. When the others had finally processed what he said, he had already disappeared

"Precursor, don't you want to have it?" Ouyang Luo Shuang frowned, looking at Na Xin of the Giant Clan. "At your realm, although you don't need to merge the Origin with your soul, it still brings you great benefits. You really don't want to take it?"

Na Xin beamed a faint smile. "As I said, if he gets it and uses it in the future, he can revive Grace Mainland. In my hands, it will only be a normal treasure. Of course, it will provide significant support, but I can't make Grace Mainland energetic once again to gather more earth and heaven energy. Thus, I'm willing to let him have it."

Na Xin was calm and tender. He smiled warmly without any gleam of discontent. He seemed to be very happy with this situation.

However, Ouyang Luo Shuang was unfulfilled and she gritted her teeth. Unclear light sparkled in her clear but cold eyes.

"First, you can't locate the Origin fast enough. Second, even if you can find the Origin, you aren't strong enough to be Shi Yan's rival." Na Xin smiled, speaking deliberately. "So you shouldn't think about it anymore. You've received the inheritance and the Incipient Extent. You're very lucky already. You also have an extraordinary innate endowment. Once you've entered the Original God Realm, you will have admirable attainments."

"I don't want to lose," Ouyang Luo Shuang's eyes became complex all of a sudden. "When I first knew him, he... he wasn't worth mentioning. His realm was too low that it was funny to me. However, after just ten years, he has surpassed me..."

Pausing for a while, her face became bitter. "I used to think that... after I got out of my seal of one thousand years, I would be able to step on the highest summit and become the new outstanding talent of Grace Mainland. Unexpectedly, he has towered over us all. When I got the inheritance from the Incipient Extent and combined it with my power Upanishad, I thought I could surpass and leave him far behind. I never expected that when we met again, he would also be at the Peak of King God Realm. I... I'm always lowered by him."

She had been sealed for one thousand years. During that time, she had accumulated energy of the moonlight. She was a special talent that arrogantly topped people in the world. It was unexpected that Shi Yan had always been more prominent than her since his debut. He had solved the issues between the forces himself. He had changed the overall situation of Endless Sea and Divine Great Land. She didn't know what she should comment about his attainments.

It was because of her natural arrogance that she couldn't accept that such a character had always been stronger than her. While Shi Yan didn't notice her much, she had considered him her most

challenging rival.

"You're a good girl," Na Xin looked at her deeply. "Your starting point isn't bad, and your innate endowment is also of high-quality. However, you lack experience. If you fight him in the given circumstances that your realms and powers are equal, you will lose quickly. Regarding bloody practical battles, you can't compete against him. That kid has a brutal, murderous aura. I don't know how many people he has killed. Can you be his rival?" said Na Xin seriously.

Ouyang Luo Shuang was dispirited as if she got hit at her weakest point.

Indeed, talking about ruthless deeds, she could never compare to Shi Yan. Shi Yan's progress was built off of bloody battles. He had tried his best in each battle. Afterward, he had accumulated many experiences.

"Honestly, I think you guys would be a perfect match," Na Xin said all of a sudden, laughing loudly. "You both have outstanding innate talents, your realms aren't too different, and your fortunes aren't bad. If you can be together..."

Ouyang Luo Shuang blushed, rolling her eyes at Na Xin. "I didn't think that you Giants will also babble about this."

Na Xin chuckled naturally.

"Forget it. I won't compete against him this time... Just let him get the Origin. Harrumph, I will depend on my power. I will not lag behind him!" Ouyang Luo Shuang mumbled.

Deep in earth's inner core of Grace Mainland.

Shi Yan frowned, standing upright by the Origin. Electric-like light flashed in his eyes. He didn't know how to take the Origin.

The Origin looked like a chaotic globe, spinning between the

crystals. It was covered by tens of thousands of gray air layers. Each air layer had an intimidating energy fluctuation that frightened him. He didn't dare to act rashly.

He was told about the magical features of the Origin, but no one had explained to him how to take it.

Billions of years have passed and Grace Mainland had given birth to countless geniuses, and none of them knew how to take this marvelous Origin?

If someone did know, why was the Origin still here?

Did it hide any perilous traps which prevented people from touching the Origin even though they all knew how precious it was?

Thoughts flashed through his mind. Still, he didn't dare to do anything recklessly.

Pondering for a while, he tried to connect the Blood Vein Ring's Ring Spirit.

His thought traveled like beams of light, entering the Blood Vein Ring. He extended his Soul Consciousness to find the aura of the Ring Spirit.

"Are you here?" He sent his Soul Consciousness.

There was no response.

The Blood Vein Ring had exhausted its energy to help him get rid of the restriction of God Perishing Land, which helped him summon the Divine Sword from Grace Mainland to the forbidden land in Raging Flame Star Area. Afterward, it went dormant.

It hadn't woken up yet.

The Ring Spirit didn't answer him. Shi Yan frowned, looking at that Origin. He didn't dare to act rashly without having a clear solution.

At the same time, his Soul Consciousness, which connected to the

Heaven Flame, showed him that the situation was getting worse.

Seven out of ten known heaven flame of the Grace Mainland had connected and was interlinked to him. However, in this battle, even when his seven heaven flame had joined hands, they seemed to not be getting the upper hand.

The Immemorial Demonic Flame had merged with the Purgatory True Flame, advancing its level to level 8. The Primal Chaos Sacred Flame had been dormant for so many years in the earth's inner core. It also took the Origin. Shi Yan didn't know its real level. He closed his eyes, trying to sense with a grimace.

The Primal Chaos Sacred Flame in that magical, unknown area was even more intimidating than the Immemorial Demonic Flame, pressing its seven flames.

The last flame that had entered this place took the biggest initiative that it even made the Immemorial Demonic Flame confused. At this moment, the Immemorial Demonic Flame seemed to have a tacit agreement with the other seven heaven flames. They had joined hands and attacked the Primal Chaos Sacred Flame together.

Shi Yan was stern, suddenly recognizing that the Prima Chaos Sacred Flame was the most dangerous flame among the heaven flames. It was worth its status as the highest rank.

Shi Yan suddenly remembered the legends of this heaven flame...

The Primal Chaos Sacred Flame was a flame that was formed naturally when earth and heaven began. Just like strong living beings in the Immemorial Era, it could cultivate and create life. It could resurrect the dead and reignite the flame of life one more time. This heaven flame ranked first.

It could cultivate by itself and it could even create lives by kindling the flame of life!

Shi Yan was shocked.

The heaven flame did deserve its first place rank!

The Immemorial Demonic Flame and the other heaven flames had joined hands to deal with the Prima Chaos Sacred Flame in that magical land. Although they were fighting under the rules of heaven flames, they couldn't gain the upper hand.

Not only that, within one hour, he continually received the soul message from the Corpse Vanishing Flame. "I can't resist it. Please help. Give me your life energy..."

The Corpse Vanishing Flame flashed on and off. It sounded like a heavily wounded warrior who couldn't even breathe.

The needed support that it called 'help' for was Shi Yan's life energy, the pure energy of his soul!

Shi Yan didn't hesitate. He darkened his face silently in front of the Origin. His consciousness hovered when the soul altar released his soul energy, seeping into the unknown, magical area...

His life energy slid fast. The Corpse Vanishing Flame's aura was condensed slowly as if it had actually restored most of its power.

"I need power!"

"More power!"

"Power!"

"I want power!"

For the time being, disorderly soul fluctuation like silver needles stabbed his head. The soul messages from the heaven flames were rushed and chaotic. Shi Yan felt pain in his soul. He tried to press down the uncomfortable feelings. He released his soul energy, turning it into pure soul energy and pouring them towards the heaven flames.

His life energy was drifting away. His God Body was shrouded in light, but he was exhausted.

What was being consumed wasn't the Essence Qi, negative

energy, or star energy. It was the pure soul energy of the God Soul in his Sea of Consciousness, which was responsible for the God Soul's functions and its very existence.

To a warrior, more Blood Qi strengthened his power, not the size or intimidating presence of the God Soul. When the warrior died, as long as his soul altar wasn't broken and his God Soul was still there, he would still have a chance to restore or even revive.

However, if the God Soul died, the power of the warrior's flesh body would vanish into earth and heaven. It was the rules of Nature. The warrior would then die completely.

As his pure soul energy was given away, Shi Yan became exhausted, his eyes empty. Eventually, his consciousness started to blur.

He didn't have more energy to give to the heaven flames which had a connection with his soul. The rest had to be used to support his soul. The Primal Chaos Sacred Flame that appeared the last couldn't swallow them.

However, it was still struggling.

Shi Yan still gave more of his soul energy was. He knew that his heaven flames were in a bad situation in the battle between the heaven flames. And it was getting worse!

The advantage of bigger numbers wasn't effective in this battle.

The seven heaven flames couldn't rival the Primal Chaos Sacred Flame by themselves. With the Immemorial Demonic Flame and Shi Yan's continual supply of soul energy, they could maintain an equal force against the opponent. Before they got the final result, Shi Yan would still need to give more soul energy.

However, he knew his limitations. He couldn't endure for a long time.

He became exhausted and his consciousness started to blur again. He couldn't help but look at the spinning Origin next to him.

Chapter 903: Seize the Origin!

Dead Soul Mountain Range.

Na Xin and Ouyang Luo Shuang stood next to each other as they were watching the sky with serious visages.

A shiny green light dot hovered above Ouyang Luo Shuang. A green halo shimmered, repeatedly enlarging and shrinking.

It was the dead soul's evil lair.

Because the Immemorial Demonic Flame had left the evil lair, Ouyang Luo Shuang could take control of it now. It also meant that she could eventually occupy the Incipient Extent.

Ouyang Luo Shuang narrowed her eyes slightly, her face cold but bright. She was spinning her soul altar, combining her soul energy and the Incipient Extent, creating a wonderful resonance.

The marvelous energy fluctuations emitted from her body. The evil lair bounced faster and faster...

Na Xin frowned, glancing at her. "It's no use. You can't find that unrecognizable place. Only the warrior who has fused with heaven flames can get in there after his heaven flame has swallowed all the other flames. And you don't have any heaven flames. Even if you cultivated space power, you wouldn't find it."

Ouyang Luo Shuang's bright eyes dimmed and she sighed bitterly. "Indeed, I can't find a trace."

"Did you also receive the method to get the Origin from the inheritance you receive from the Incipient Extent?" Na Xin suddenly asked, gazing at her. "As far as I've known, only a few of the best warriors knew how to take the Origin. I could see that you were impatient to get it. Do you know the method to seize it?"

"Can we not just combine it with our God Soul?" Ouyang Luo Shuang was confused, "Is there something else to be done?"

Na Xin was surprised, laughing oddly. "Oh, it turns out that you don't know. You little girl, you're lucky that you didn't enter earth's inner core. Haha. If you act rashly, your soul will perish, leaving nothing behind."

Ouyang Luo Shuang discolored, "Please enlighten me?"

"I don't know either," Na Xin forced a smile, shaking his head. "The archaic continents which have an Origin are so rare. They're so few that we can count them with our fingers even in a vast star area. In my knowledge, there were so many intimidating existences that wanted to take the Origin. More often, they were out of their place and acted rashly. None of them had a decent end."

"He doesn't know how either," Ouyang Luo Shuang was shocked. She jolted up, rushing, "He's a fool who entered that place recklessly. If he impulsively takes it, will he end up perishing his soul like you said?"

Na Xin frowned, "Would he be that impulsive?"

"You should have told him clearer!" Ouyang Luo Shuang snorted, "I'm afraid that he would take it immediately. You could have harmed him." Her words were heavy.

"He isn't the one who likes to take risks. He will be alright," Na Xin contemplated for a while. "The Origin of this land has existed for billions of years. This continent has given birth to countless outstanding warriors. It's still there, which means none of them had succeeded in taking it. Of course, it has something marvelous. He should know that, right?"

"If he didn't know it and took it deliberately, what would happen then?" shouted Ouyang Luo Shuang.

"I'm afraid. I'm afraid it won't be a good ending," Na Xin darkened his face. "I think he wouldn't be in trouble. His heaven flames got the Origin energy. He should have something unique to

connect to the heaven flames. I think he will be alright."

"You better hope you're right," Ouyang Luo Shuang's face was cold. It seemed like she didn't want to see something bad happen to Shi Yan.

Na Xin hesitated for a while. He seemed to recognize how serious the situation could be. He pondered, closing his eyes. A soul fluctuation covering the entire Grace Mainland was released from him, running directly into the earth.

Ten seconds later, Na Xin opened his eyes, giving a low shout. "I found him."

His Soul Consciousness had pierced through tens of thousands of miles underground to connect to Shi Yan.

"Don't take the Origin impulsively. If you don't know how, just watch how it changes!" Na Xin's Soul Consciousness thundered in Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness.

Shi Yan's consciousness was blurry. He woke up, his body shaking.

He had consumed too much life energy...

The fierce battle between the heaven flames was much more dangerous than what he had thought. It wasn't like the previous one!

The Primal Chaos Sacred Flame and the Immemorial Demonic Flame were the two high-ranked heaven flames. Their intellect was clear and their life forms had ascended to perfection. They were the most marvelous creatures in this world.

The Immemorial Demonic Flame was at level 8. Which level was the flame that could scare it, the flame that ranked first among the heaven flames?

Level 9!

The top level of the heaven flames!

A chill current poured into his God Soul from atop his head, covering the Sea of Consciousness and giving him an extreme fear.

At this moment, he recognized that he was too impetuous. He was just at the King God Realm and he thought that he could do anything as he pleased in Grace Mainland, including gathering all the heaven flames.

The appearance of the Immemorial Demonic Flame and the Primal Chaos Sacred Flame were powerful slaps to his face. He now knew how perilous this kind of creature was when they reached the high level.

Na Xin's Soul Consciousness came quickly and left even more quickly. It disappeared shortly after.

Shi Yan wore an unusually grim face while electric-like lights were crossing his mind. He was trying his best to find a way to support the heaven flames.

"I warned him," Na Xin took a deep breath, smiling reluctantly in the world outside. "It's not too late. He hasn't done anything. With my reminder, he won't act rashly."

Ouyang Luo Shuang exhaled in relief.

She considered Shi Yan a thorny section of her martial path. She had used Shi Yan as the target for her cultivation. If Shi Yan died, she would have no one to compete against.

At least, I have to defeat him myself. Then, he can die! thought Ouyang Luo Shuang.

The fierce battle of the heaven flames became more ferocious. Staying deep underground, Shi Yan could still feel the Ice Cold Flame and the Earth Flame shivering anxiously...

Before the Primal Chaos Sacred Flame appeared, the battle between the seven heaven flames and the Immemorial Demonic Flame could be considered an equal battle. He didn't need to supplement his soul energy.

However, when the heaven flame which ranked first appeared, not only the seven heaven flames but also the brutal Immemorial Demonic Flame had to change its opponent.

However, even when the heaven flames joining hands together with Shi Yan's life energy, they seemed unable to win.

The Primal Chaos Sacred Flame had been in earth's inner core, seizing the Origin energy for so many years. It was unimaginably powerful, indeed!

A wisp of Na Xin's Soul Consciousness had awakened Shi Yan. However, after several minutes, due to his continually consumed soul energy, he felt dizzy again and his consciousness started to drift away.

At this moment, Shi Yan figured out another meaning in Na Xin's words...

Origin!

It's true! It should be the Origin! And it must be the Origin!

His eyes brightened, gazing at the Origin in front of him, gazing at the most marvelous thing in this world! His desire was hard to calm down!

He has no choice.

The heaven flames had to take all of his life energy. Or his soul altar had to be broken and be vanishing.

Or he could let things go and let the Primal Chaos Sacred Flame take what it wanted and swallow all the heaven flames.

Or he will forcefully take the Origin energy and see if he can change everything...

All the heaven flames born in Grace Mainland were closely related to the Origin. The life form of each heaven flame depended on the Origin. If he seized the Origin, will he be able to change all these things?

This thought arose once more, and it was like a haunting ghost that wouldn't be driven away.

As his soul energy drifted, his consciousness became hazy. He chose to forget Na Xin's reminder while the thought of seizing the Origin was surging vehemently.

Eventually, when he couldn't gather his consciousness anymore, he had completely forgotten Na Xin's reminder. His shivering finger touched his forehead.

The soul altar looked like a precious tower with many tiers flying out from his head. The vast Sea of Consciousness, the magical powers Upanishad tier, the God Soul, the flame of life... they piled up marvelously and beautifully.

His God Soul floated on the tier of power Upanishad, flickering like a running candle in the light, which would extinguish in any minute...

Although he was in such a bad condition, his soul altar seemed unaware of the danger, flying towards the Origin.

Sizzle!

Shi Yan's soul altar collided with a layer of hazy gray air. The traces of Soul Consciousness in the Sea of Consciousness were burned down instantly!

Shortly, one-tenth of his vast Sea of Consciousness was consumed.

He felt a pain that he couldn't endure from deep inside his soul. It was like a sharp weapon stabbing his brain. This kind of pain couldn't be described.

Even if he was good at enduring pain and suffering, he couldn't stand it anymore. His God Soul swayed and it was about to vanish.

His dull, blurry consciousness woke up under such pain.

Also at that moment, the blood mark on the forehead of his God

Soul suddenly sparkled!

An electric-like light bloomed dazzlingly from the mark. A dusty memory fell like rain, running directly to a deep place of his soul.

Heaven Flame Refining Godly Technique!

Boom!

The Fantasy Sky ring on his finger exploded. All kinds of cultivating materials that he had to spend a lot of effort to collect floated from the broken ring.

Thunder Witch Wood, Bloody Soul Divine Water, Five Elements Crystal Marrow...

The three main ingredients and many auxiliary materials flooded his Sea of Consciousness, congregating there.

The gray air intruding the Sea of Consciousness seemed to stimulate something. The blood mark on the God Soul sent out a rainbow light, covering all main and auxiliary materials.

Sizzle Sizzle Sizzle!

The frightening electric light and the divine light gathered. All the materials scattered, turning into a thick, chaotic mist that covered the entire Sea of Consciousness and the soul altar under the effects of Heaven Flame Refining Godly Technique.

The pain that could be carved into his bones disappeared abruptly. The layers of gray air couldn't threaten him anymore.

Shi Yan was happy but he didn't dare to linger. He controlled the soul altar that directly crossed many gray air layers. He proceeded to seize the Origin.

As the Heaven Flame Refining Godly Technique was processing, the most magical energy in earth and heaven expanded from the soul altar, seizing the Origin.

At that moment, Shi Yan's soul altar and the Origin formed a connection. Then, a light radiated as his soul altar and the Origin

both appeared at the place where heaven flames were fighting fiercely.

The battle of the heaven flames was now taking place right in front of him. At the most critical moment, Shi Yan stormed in.

Chapter 904: Witness Billions of Years Pass

By

This was the unrecognizable area that Na Xin had mentioned.

This place was by the chaotic space basin. Five-colored light meandered beautifully like long rivers crossing the sky. Light dots fell like unceasing meteors.

Each moving light hid a power Upanishad, including the derivatives of Five Elements: Metal, Wood, Water, Fire, Earth, Gravity, True Light, Death and Life, Space, Reincarnation, and more. They were all mysterious and subtle, beyond people's imagination.

This place didn't have earth and heaven energy and the rivers carrying the powers Upanishad didn't have any attacking power.

However, the mysteries of those powers didn't need the energy to urge. They could move naturally under some rules of earth and heaven.

It was like a dream!

Ten flames in different colors and different auras were diverging in different areas just like the sea of light. They were trying to devour each other.

His soul altar floated above the center of the heaven flames' battle, which was at the critical moment.

However, his soul altar didn't look normal...

It had divided into two regions.

The Sea of Consciousness was the lowest tier. Above it was the heaven flames and the powers Upanishad. This was where the soul altar divided.

The God Soul hovered above the power Upanishad tier, moving

continually with the blood mark. The God Soul was a projection of his God Soul with the burning flame of life that looked magnificently beautiful.

Floating above the heaven flames tier was the Origin...

The Origin and his God Soul were in two different areas. The Origin didn't have layers of gray air circling it. Now, it had only the rare and precious cultivating materials.

The Heaven Flame Refining Godly Technique made Thunder Witch Wood, Five Elements Crystal Marrow, Blood Soul Divine Water, and other auxiliary materials cover the Origin like a membrane...

The materials gradually dissolved and the magical energy seeped into the Origin.

His God Soul still controlled the Heaven Flame Refining Godly Technique, trying to merge the Origin with his God Soul.

However, he didn't succeed.

Whenever the Origin came close to establishing a connection with the God Soul, an unknown force that went against rules of earth and heaven would appear and forcefully cut the connection between Shi Yan and the Origin.

He couldn't fuse with it.

It seemed like something went wrong with the Heaven Flame Refining Godly Technique that was instructed by the Ring Spirit. The Origin couldn't merge with his God Soul.

After many failed attempted, Shi Yan quieted down to analyze.

While his hands were tied, the blood mark in his God Soul had a strange commotion!

A flow of magical energy fluctuation was generated from the blood mark, flooding the God Soul.

The pure soul energy shot out, forcefully taking something from

Shi Yan's God Soul.

It was an illusory shadow, a replica of his God Soul that was identical to his!

Parts of the soul, thoughts, traces, memories, and even the foundation of life were withdrawn from his God Soul. The powerful energy of the blood mark then dragged it toward the Origin.

Soul Dividing!

A flash of light appeared in his mind and Shi Yan understood right away.

The profundity that the blood mark was using was to divide the soul. It split the soul and duplicated his seals, creating another version of him.

The soul that had just been split had taken a large amount of Shi Yan's life energy and his God Soul, making him exhausted and feel like he was actually dying. He didn't have any extra bit of energy to observe the situation.

The split soul moved toward the Origin under the blood mark's urge.

That split soul seemed to meet some requirements of earth and heaven's rules. It wasn't attacked and directly entered the Origin.

No gap between them!

Boom!

The Thunder Witch Wood sparked. The Blood Soul Divine Water, the Five Elements Crystal Marrow, and other auxiliary materials dissolved rapidly. Strange energies started to seep into the Origin from the membrane they had formed.

Shi Yan's split soul had fused into one with that Origin. Their fusion hadn't finished yet though...

During the progress, the main and auxiliary materials melted,

pouring into the Origin, which facilitated and perfected the fusion between the split soul and the Origin...

At that moment, glum and mournful emotions and auras of archaic times emerged from a deep place in his soul.

Billions of years ago, a life star floated in a desolate galaxy, continuously taking in energy from outer space, which gave vitality to it...

After an unknown period, the barren life star started to have seas and foliage. Some kind of outer space energy fell into that life star like giant meteors. It then stimulated the profundities of earth and heaven, which gave birth to formidable, giant immemorial creatures.

The immemorial creatures were born with the gift of knowing how to utilize powers, absorbing energy to strengthen themselves and advancing their realms...

Then one day, due to the competition for earth and heaven energy, wars exploded between immemorial creatures, sweeping the entire life star!

Many immemorial creatures fell. The perception of immemorial creatures which won the war became more profound. As they understood the truth of earth and heaven, they didn't want to limit themselves to only a life star. They then entered outer space to seek for utmost power.

This continent quieted down the second time.

The Immemorial Era ended.

Huge transformations happened. One hundred thousand years passed hurriedly.

One day, a bunch of strange light fell from outer space, exploding in the sky. New vitality came to the continent.

Although the immemorial creatures had fallen for many years,

some bodies still remained. Receiving the mysterious vitality, they started to change silently. Due to their different races, the dead immemorial creatures transformed, spending thousands of years for new developments and giving birth to new lives.

God Clan, Demon Clan, Monster Clan, Giant Clan, Dark Spirit Clan, Corpse Clan, Human Clan, Sea Clan, Ghost Mark Clan, Dark Clan...

Bizarre races originated from the dead bodies of different immemorial creatures. With different origins, they diverged into different races.

The archaic continent had creatures for the second time.

The Ancient Time started.

As they were from different races, they had different cultivation methods, so they didn't bring grudges or create tension. They had lived in peace for dozens of thousands of years. Then, the second war took place.

The God Clan became very powerful. The other nine clans united to exile the God Clan. Many experts had fallen. Then, the nine clans lived together in the ancient continent.

The Ancient Time ended.

Human Clan was the smallest and weakest clan. However, they had many dangerous and adaptive features. They could grow rapidly. They could breed and mix their blood with almost every race. Due to their bad innate endowment, they pursued intelligence instead. Members of the Human Clan were smart and they were good at strategizing and planning.

After blending their blood with different races, Human Clan eventually had outstanding talents, which were as excellent as other clans. With their super reproducing ability, the Human Clan multiplied their population, filling each corner of the ancient continent.

As the Human Clan's population had been increasing too much, their demands on natural resources became too burdening, which concerned the other eight clans. They recognized that a great disaster was about to happen.

Another war started for the entire ancient continent.

The Antiquity Era started.

Human Clan had depended on their advantages of large numbers and the abilities of their hybrids to gain the upper hand. After the hotshots of the eight clans had fallen, their next generations were hopeless. Day after day, the Human Clan pressed on their advantages, winning battle after battle. The populations of the other eight clans continued to decrease.

The Human Clan ultimately won the war. The other clans were sealed or fled away to the smallest spaces in outer space, leaving the archaic continent to Human Clan.

The wind changed. Whenever a new era arrived giving birth to new generations of experts, a war would take place on the continent.

The ancient continent had experienced the Immemorial Era, the Ancient Time, and the Antiquity Era. After three big epochs, the continent was shattered and worn out. The energy it had accumulated for billions of years was about to exhausted.

The Origin couldn't do anything as the ancient continent had come to the last phase of its energy cycle. During the three eras, the Origin had the chances to diverge its power to fuse with different creatures and create heaven flames.

The heaven flames were the Origin's hosts. It wanted those heaven flames to be stronger. It hoped that even if it vanished, it could still leave some of its vestiges to this world through the haven flames...

The ancient, desolate, and mournful overflowed from the Origin,

mixing with Shi Yan's split soul.

At this moment, Shi Yan became the Origin, and this continent his body...

He was like an audience watching the whole life of this ancient continent from birth, thriving and then vanishing...

As his soul and the Origin were fused, those images reflected in his heart, becoming his Life Seal, which stayed forever in the deep place of his soul, memories that he would never forget.

Today, he had fused with the Origin, and he seemed to become the real master of this ancient continent.

This continent had become like his child. He had just watched his child grow up, age, and come to the end of life. Eventually, it dried up and died.

This was a natural cycle.

From deep inside his soul, the ancient continent had finished by projecting the recent events and today's commotion until this very moment. Shi Yan suddenly found that while he didn't notice, his split soul had completely fused with the Origin. Now, it had replaced the Origin to be the new master of the ancient continent.

However, his newborn baby was already aged and senile. It was the sunset behind the mountain. It would pass away soon...

The Origin was the most mysterious existence in this world, and it wasn't a still object. Its life form was totally different from normal creatures. It had witnessed everything!

The three main materials and many more auxiliary materials had all melted, turning into a fluid that has been absorbed into his core and the Origin.

Now he had another soul on the heaven flames tier of his soul altar. It was a chaotic sphere, moving continuously as if it would never cease.

The God Soul and that Origin Soul seemed to become his left and right brain respectively. The two souls weren't independent but connected to each other. They had the same connection, thoughts, traces of memory, and the foundation of life.

Shi Yan knew that the chaotic sphere soul was also within him.

The fierce battle between the ten heaven flames was still happening. However, when he looked at them this time, he had a different feeling.

Those ten heaven flames were part of his Origin Soul. They were like ten wisps of his pure Soul Consciousness. When this thought appeared in his mind, the sphere Origin Soul suddenly generated a suction force.

His combined Origin Soul had gripped and pulled the ten heaven flames, which were floating everywhere, forcefully towards his soul.

The seven heaven flames, which were connected with him before, took the initiative and entered his sphere Origin Soul without any hesitation. Then, his power multiplied and the suction force increased several times!

The Immemorial Demonic Flame and the Primal Chaos Scared Flame tried hard to resist his force. However, after he had fused with the seven heaven flames, they couldn't struggle anymore. Eventually, they were pulled into that sphere of Origin Soul.

Ten different wisps of soul memory moved in panic and conflicted with each other inside the Origin Soul. They were all trying to take the upper hand, showing their traces of life.

However, under the power of the Origin Soul, ten soul memories and the soul thoughts had become part of his soul. Eventually, they fused with each other, turning into his incomplete traces of life.

This was true fusion.

Chapter 905: Two Souls

Shi Yan's soul altar was floating in the unrecognizable area. His soul altar divided into two sections with two souls.

One of them had a sphere shape with the chaotic energy of the ten heaven flames within, which was being adjusted and stabilized.

The soul above the tier of powers Upanishad was exhausted and dispirited. It was quiet as if it was trying to feel something in this mysterious area.

The mysterious rivers in this place twinkled like stars by his soul altar. Those rivers were filled with energy fluctuations of different powers Upanishad.

After an unknown period, a river appeared by his soul altar...

Shi Yan suddenly pulled his consciousness together and his soul altar moved accordingly, flying into that river.

That river contained space energy fluctuation!

The soul altar flew into the middle of the river. Shi Yan felt like he had fallen into layers of chaotic spaces. His soul altar moved like a shuttle, piercing through many doors.

He could get through several space doors without any trouble. The soul altar just flashed and slid through them smoothly.

It seemed like his understanding of Space power Upanishad had reached a certain level, which facilitated him to no longer be stagnant moving in this place.

However, not long afterward, he found trouble.

In front of him was a space layer, which was filled with radiant light. It functioned as a barricade to his soul altar. That 'door' had many space lines and patterns moving disorderly. They seemed to hide some truth of earth and heaven.

His soul altar had to stop. He tried to make his space energy

fluctuate in the same frequency as the space energy of that 'door.'

It wasn't an easy task...

His God Soul was dispirited, gazing at the area with glorious, moving light while trying to adjust the energy fluctuation of his tier of power Upanishad. His soul moved like tentacles, touching the patterns made of disorderly space energy to sense the meaning and new profundities of space.

Shi Yan didn't know how long had passed. He just calmed down and tried to comprehend.

After a while of comprehending the meanings, Space energy fluctuations in his tier of powers Upanishad had matched the patterns on that 'door.' On that space layer, a 'door' suddenly opened.

His soul altar seized the chance and pierced through.

A new door appeared similar to the previous one with hidden space mysteries. His soul had touched it once, and he became baffled immediately.

Swish!

His soul altar was shocked as if the sky had turned upside down. His consciousness became blurry.

While his soul was still perplexed, he woke up to see himself in the earth's inner core. However, the Origin was no longer in front of him.

His soul was tired while his God Body had an extreme desire for earth and heaven energy all of a sudden, a desire that he couldn't press down no matter how hard he had tried.

He was like a drug-addicted maniac who hadn't received a dose for quite a long time. This crazy yearning was madly burning his will!

His soul altar spun rapidly like a vortex as if it wanted to harvest

something!

Vaguely, he realized something, his face shocked.

In the next moment, the entire ancient continent was projected in his Sea of Consciousness. He could check any corner of this continent. No one could hide from his observation.

In this place, he was the sole God!

His finger touched the void and a space slit appeared in front of him. He flashed and disappeared.

After a blink, a space slit appeared above Cold Win Island of the Endless Sea. Shi Yan emerged from there immediately.

Fei Lan, Leona, Zi Yao, Feng Rao, and Ka Tuo were wandering around Cold Wind Island as if they were observing the magical features of this ancient land.

Shi Yan came out of nowhere, landing by Feng Rao and asking her hurriedly. "Do you have divine crystals?"

"Yes, I do," Feng Rao was scared, "Are you alright?"

"Give them to me! Give me all of them! All the divine crystals!" Shi Yan shouted hastily.

Feng Rao didn't hesitate, giving him all the divine crystals she had in the Fantasy Sky Ring. They looked like transparent rocks flying towards him.

A powerful suction force came from his God Body, covering all the divine crystals.

The divine crystals stuck on his body like fish scales like his armor. The energy in those divine crystals triggered at once, flowing massively into his God Body.

"Not enough!" Shi Yan hastened, saying only that. His body flashed. He disappeared one more time.

"Give me divine crystals! All of them!" He shouted at Ka Tuo, who

was confused, giving a low shout.

Ka Tuo was also astounded. However, he didn't say much. He just gave him all the divine crystals in his ring. Those crystals then stuck on Shi Yan's body like fish scales.

"Senior, Ka Fu keeps most of the divine crystals. I only have this many," Ka Tuo explained. He looked a little bit embarrassed.

Shi Yan was baffled for a while, disappearing.

"Give me divine crystals! All!" He appeared by Zi Yao.

"Give me divine crystals!"

"Give me divine crystals!"

"Give me divine crystals!"

He flashed on and off between Zi Yao, Leona, and Carthew, making the same request.

Those who knew him generously gave him all the divine crystals they had. The divine crystals then turned into the fish scales that stuck onto his God Body. Shortly after, his body looked like one giant chunk of divine crystal.

His God Body was like a sponge, taking in the energy of the divine crystals massively. Each of the vessels in his body bulged, refining the energy of the divine crystals. All the energy then flooded the Essence Qi ancient tree.

The Essence Qi ancient tree thrived rapidly. Its jewel-like branches were weaving thickly as the tree jutted higher and higher.

At the same time, Shi Yan took out the Heavenly Mending Pellet he had exchanged from Jester and swallowed it.

Shi Yan stayed in the center of Cold Wind Island, sitting down by Leona, Fei Lan, and Zi Yao.

People had recognized this significant event. Feng Rao, Carthew,

and Ka Tuo also gathered from their areas, surrounding Shi Yan with strange faces.

"Is he... about to break through?" Leona looked at Fei Lan as she couldn't confirm this fact.

"Yeah, he's about to break through to the Original God Realm." Fei Lan nodded, her face strangely frowning. "However, others didn't look like that when they went through their breakthrough."

"Is it maybe because of... the exhausted energy in this continent? So he needs a lot of divine crystals?" asked Ka Tuo.

"Even if there's no beam of energy, using tens of thousands of divine crystals is a little bit exaggerated, right?" Feng Rao had a stern visage. "Did something unexpected happen?"

People then looked at Fei Lan.

Fei Lan's eyes were filled with immense divine light as she continued observing Shi Yan, not losing track of him for even a moment. Suddenly, she said, "He's breaking through, but his tendency doesn't look normal!"

She screamed all of a sudden.

Everybody was frightened as they never imagined her screaming.

The thick layer of divine crystals suddenly brightened like electricity winding around Shi Yan. His pores now had a clear suction force that madly absorbed the energy of the divine crystals.

Gradually, light spots as glorious as stars shot out from Shi Yan's God Body marvelously.

"It's the light emitting from his acupuncture points!" Fei Lan hissed!

Everybody was frightened.

"Breaking through the Original God Realm could have this much activity from the acupuncture points?" Ka Tuo voice trembled as he asked.

No one could answer him.

"I think he's using so much energy from the divine crystals not just to break through or condense the Original Spirit. He ate two Heavenly Mending Pellets, which can heal even the greatest loss of his soul energy with only one piece..." After pausing for a while, Fei Lan continued, "He seems to have quenched his body. Using the acupuncture points to absorb the energy from the divine crystals, I have never seen anyone done it before. Also, I have never heard of anyone breaking through the Original God Realm with this form."

Everybody quieted down.

They knew Shi Yan must have undergone some marvelous changes. However, they didn't know whether those changes were good or bad.

The only thing they could do was to guard this area to prevent any other people from disturbing Shi Yan's advancement.

Cold Wind Island.

Shi Yan floated in the center of the island, closing his eyes with his God Body emitting strange energy fluctuations.

Tens of thousands of divine crystals shrouded his body, radiating dazzlingly. After the energy had started to pour into his God Body, one of his acupuncture points glowed.

At the same time, the divine crystals, which contained earth and heaven energy, lost their energy and turned into the ordinary rocks, falling off of his God Body.

After around six hours, half of the divine crystals were exhausted, turning into gray stones and falling off his God Body.

"Not enough! It's obvious that those divine crystals aren't enough!" Fei Lan was astounded, hissing, "He needs more divine crystals!"

Ka Tuo, Zi Yao, Feng Rao, and Carthew discolored, taking action

almost immediately.

They scattered, releasing their Soul Consciousness to find their friends who also came here.

Fei Lan took a deep breath, using her vast Soul Consciousness to contact the Giants. She wanted to do something for Shi Yan.

Dead Soul Mountain Range.

Na Xin, the Giant Oldie, was still waiting for something in silence. All of a sudden, he jolted and frowned. "He's in Cold Wind Island!"

"Please lend us the divine crystals. Have your tribal members bring them. We promise we will repay all of it. Shi Yan is breaking through... he seems to need a massive amount of earth and heaven energy... However, earth and heaven energy in this continent have been exhausted. He doesn't have enough." Fei Lan sent her soul message to Na Xin's Sea of Consciousness."

"Why did he go to Cold Wind Island?" Ouyang Luo Shuang was confused.

Na Xin shook his head, not explaining anything. He squinted, releasing his Soul Consciousness to contact his fellow Giants on this ancient continent. "Whoever is near Cold Wind Island, hurry back to the island and give your divine crystals to... our little friends."

Many Giants received his message. They didn't say anything, pausing their work and going to Cold Wind Island.

Four hours later, the first Giant came. He walked to Fei Lan and asked, "Our Tribal Oldie asked us. Do you need divine crystals?"

Fei Lan nodded.

That Giant smiled honestly, throwing the divine crystals he had to Fei Lan.

He had more than ten thousand pieces.

Fei Lan was so happy. She used her energy to cover the divine crystals and threw them at Shi Yan's God Body.

Shi Yan's body then sucked them. The divine crystal stuck on the chunk made of divine crystals.

At this moment, the divine crystals stuck on his body have almost all been consumed.

Half of seven hundred and twenty acupuncture points in his body were glowing magnificently.

However, it seemed that the quantity of divine crystal he had was insufficient.

Luckily, after another two hours, another clansman of the Giant Tribe returned. The Giant gave Fei Lan divine crystals as Na Xin had asked them to do and let her throw them to Shi Yan personally.

Chapter 906: Original God Realm!

Cold Wind Island, Endless Sea.

Shi Yan looked like a small mountain built of divine crystals, floating in the center of this island. Divine crystals of different sizes stuck to his body. The light was moving as the massive energy of the divine crystals continued to pour into his God Body.

Fei Lan, Leona, Zi Yao, Feng Rao, and Ka Tuo circled him, their faces strange.

Around ten Giants who were around ten meters tall also stayed nearby to watch him. They were very curious and excited.

Seven days passed quickly.

During these seven days, Shi Yan didn't move. His eyes were still closed. It seemed like his soul had wandered to the divine land. However, his God Body had continued to absorb the massive amount of energy from the divine crystals. This process seemed to never end.

Today, Na Xin took Ouyang Luo Shuang and they arrived in Cold Wind Island from Dead Soul Mountain Range. At first glance, they saw Shi Yan floating there.

Na Xin's eyes brightened like diamonds. He couldn't help but cry, "Indeed!"

Ouyang Luo Shuang shivered slightly as bright light sparkled in her eyes. She whispered loudly. "He must have fused with the Origin."

Na Xin nodded, giving compliments. "I can't believe it. This kid is supernatural! He dared to fuse the heaven flames with the Origin. When he breaks into the Original God Realm, it will be a big happy surprise!"

Seeing Na Xin arrive, Fei Lan's team came forward, bending their

bodies slightly to thank him for his generosity.

Na Xin waved his hands, smiling. "Just the divine crystals. No need to mind them. We're also happy to see that our ancestral land could have such a genius."

"Tribal Oldie, what's going on?" asked a muscular Giant.

"He has fused with the Origin. He's breaking through to the Original God Realm. When he wakes up, his Original Spirit will be formed," smiled Na Xin.

"Fused with the Origin?" Fei Lan's wrinkled face shivered as she was astounded. "This place has an Origin?"

"Of course," Na Xin confirmed, smiling. "Although the Origin is small, it does exist. He has such a fortune. He has fused his soul with the Origin. Perhaps, when he wakes up, he will be the sole God of this continent. Every single thing in this continent won't be able to avoid his soul's extent."

Everybody was dumbstruck.

"How much do you know about the Origin, precursor?" Fei Lan chose her words gingerly, speaking in a low tone. "Our Raging Flame Star Area doesn't have any ancient continents with an Origin. I've heard from my precursors just a little bit about them. Please enlighten us about the profundities of the Origin."

Leona, Carthew, and the others also looked at him yearningly.

"Ouch," Na Xin was bewildered. He looked a bit embarrassed. "I don't understand its mysteries thoroughly... Anyway, all we know about the Origin are told through generations. However, no one has ever seen it. I can confirm one thing though. The one who has the Origin will become the master of the ancient continent. He will be able to connect the entire continent using his soul."

After pausing for a while, Na Xin continued, "Anyway, there's something different. The Incipient Extent is generated by the soul altar of the warrior, which can be easily controlled to perform

different abilities. A warrior with the Origin can't do that. However, we have to use millions or billions to count the number of years an ancient continent has existed. The Origin is the witness of the long river of history. A warrior with the Origin can see the birth, the peak, and decline of the said ancient continent. Through that sequence, he will be able to understand some deep meanings of earth and heaven. This kind of encounter helps the warrior in progressing his realm a lot."

As soon as he said that, everybody admired while discreetly being surprised.

"Anyway, he doesn't look... like what I said," said Na Xin.

Everybody was stunned, waiting for his next explanation.

"Although he has to fuse with the Origin, I don't think he has to use so many divine crystals like that, right?" Na Xin wasn't sure. "Look at that amount of divine crystals. Even I can't estimate the pure energy in there. He's just breaking to the Original God Realm from his King God Realm. Why does he need a lot of dense energy like that? What is that light emitted from his acupuncture points?"

Apparently, he couldn't see what was happening either.

The Giant didn't know it, so everybody else could only force a smile and observe the situation.

Na Xin was bewildered for a while before he smiled and relaxed. "Seems like this boy knows something beyond our knowledge. Otherwise, we wouldn't see such a phenomenon. Haha, just keep it low and watch the changes."

Everybody didn't know what to say. Also, they knew they didn't have any better solution, so they continued to watch Shi Yan.

Several days passed.

The divine crystals lost their energy and fell off Shi Yan's body. They turned into normal rocks. Some even scattered into dust, scattering away.

Gradually, all the divine crystals stuck on his body fell.

In the end, dozens of remaining divine crystals still had a little amount of energy.

Shi Yan's God Body couldn't absorb all the divine crystals, which meant his need of energy had been saturated.

Although Shi Yan's God Body didn't take more energy, the light projected from his acupuncture points was still dazzling.

Seven hundred and twenty acupuncture points were spread around his muscles. They were blindingly bright just like marvelously twinkling stars.

His breathing gradually calmed down. It was like his breathing had magically matched with some movement of this archaic continent.

It was unknown why people could feel the aura of the earth under their feet from him. It seemed like he had turned into a part of this ancient continent.

The most important part.

At this moment, everybody now knew that Shi Yan's breakthrough had passed the critical point. He just needed time to finish it.

"The warrior who fuses with the Origin has to condense his Essence Qi several times more. It should be like a ribbon in the galaxy. It's the God power!" Fei Lan took a deep breath, turning to Na Xin and asking for his opinion. "So after Shi Yan has broken through, his Essence Qi will automatically transform into God power?"

People here had never heard about the God power. Listening to her question, they all turned to Na Xin.

Na Xin smiled and nodded. "True. He can control the God power in advance because his Original Spirit has the Origin." He paused

for a while, looking at Carthew, Zi Yao, and Ka Tuo, speaking sincerely. "Although you guys are all at the Original God Realm, the Original Spirit he has condensed should be much more magical than yours. I don't know much about it particularly. I just heard some rumors, so I don't dare say this is certain."

"God power?" Feng Rao's knitted her bold brows. "What's the difference?"

"It's the purest form of earth and heaven energy," said Fei Lan. "Before we've broken through to the Ethereal God Realm, the energies in the warriors' bodies are also different due to different races. For example, the Demon Clan cultivates earth and heaven energy in the form of Demon Qi. After they've refined it, it will turn into the Demon Origin. And the Ghost Mark Clan accumulate Mysterious Yin Qi in your body; it's the Yin power. The Dark Clan cultivates Nine Serenities Qi; it's the Dark power. And the Monster Clan has the monstrous power.

"Different races have different body structures. Although they are different forms of energy, they originated from the same earth and heaven energy.

"This condition will last until the warriors have reached the Ethereal God Realm. Their energies then will be converted to God power. The mighty God power can break the chains of limitation. Warriors with God power can seize any kind of energy. They can absorb Demon Qi, Nine Serenities Qi, Mysterious Yin Qi, anything to create the God power.

"God power can become the combination of different energies or the sublimated form of energy. It's the most primal form of earth and heaven energy..."

Fei Lan talked slowly and while she was speaking, she often looked at Na Xin as if she wanted him to confirm that what she was saying was true.

Na Xin smiled and continued to nod to confirm her knowledge.

After she finished, he summarized. "Usually, when a warrior is breaking through the Ethereal God Realm, he can convert his energy to God power. However, a few people with amazing destinies who got some mysterious but marvelous encounters can create God power in the Original God Realm. And Shi Yan is this sort of person."

Everybody put on a longing face.

"He's worth the name of my senior," said Ka Tuo.

"My man is that marvelously unique." Feng Rao smiled proudly and charmingly.

"He's Shi Yan alright," nodded Carthew.

Fei Lan and Leona expressed that this was inevitable and right.

While they were talking, the light on Shi Yan's seven hundred and twenty acupuncture points dimmed out. Eventually, all the light disappeared.

Those glorious beams of light seemed to be retrieved into his God Body. After a while, a surging wave of energy emitted from his God Body...

Tiny contaminants oozed out from his pores. Then, a sour smell diffused.

Those were dregs generated by the God Body, one of the barriers of the warriors' cultivation. While the God Body took in energy, contaminants and dregs would settle in the veins and pores.

They would hinder the circulation of energy, which reduced the performance of a tenacious God Body.

When those dregs oozed out, it meant Shi Yan's God Body had been quenched to another level.

A flame ignited and those dregs and contaminants were burned down, leaving no trace.

Shi Yan's God Body was dark red, emitting radiant light. He

looked like the perfect saber. Each of his muscles was lean and tight. They didn't look too big but they astonishingly matched with each other.

Everybody was surprised. Looking at his body, they could see the bursting energy within his muscles.

"That God Body is so strong that its tenaciousness could compare to our Giant Tribe! He seems to have something magical," Na Xin appraised. His body contains Blood Qi that is much more than the Giants at the same level and his body is dozens of times smaller than ours!"

A Giant at the Original God Realm looked at Shi Yan and then closed his eyes to sense. After a while, he became dispirited. "How could it be? He's just... a human. He looks fragile and small. How could he have reached such intensity?!?"

He couldn't explain it and neither could the others.

"Is it because of the Origin?" Carthew asked.

Na Xin shook his head, "No. The Origin could help the soul altar only. It has no effect on the God Body. His wonderful changes in his God Body could be because of something we didn't know."

They didn't know the reasons, and they were very suspicious. They thought that everything about Shi Yan was completely different from normal people. He was simply a freak.

While the others were still dumbstruck, Shi Yan's brows twitched. He had been quiet for so many days. It seemed like he was about to wake up as he had finally finished his breakthrough.

Seconds later, Shi Yan woke up, chuckling.

Chapter 907: The Sole God

Opening his eyes, Shi Yan smiled, seeing his friends.

His condition was now perfect.

His God Body was refined one more time. Each of seven hundred and twenty acupuncture points in his body had become a new world with territory several times bigger!

His Soul Consciousness checked his body's condition.

The massive vortexes were revolving unceasingly in the acupuncture points according to the miraculous rules of Nature.

Crystal lines crossed the world inside the acupuncture points like gorgeous rainbows in the void. They elongated to extremely far areas, creating some unknown, magical spirit chart.

Although the God Body was as rigid as the purest iron, once the energy circulated, it was extremely flexible. Shi Yan could do anything he pleased.

The soul altar had two areas in the tier of Upanishad and heaven flames above the Sea of Consciousness. The two souls floated above that tier. One was his original soul, controlling the important functions of the entire body. It connected the vortex in his abdomen and the luxuriant God power Ancient tree. The fountain of the enormous energy glowed radiantly.

Near there was an immense nebula with countless stars. A massive diamond-like star was still moving in that nebula.

His thought flickered. The newly generated God power flowed like a stream of stars, rolling in his vessels and creating the immense energy fluctuation.

Original God Realm!

He had finally crossed the threshold. After countless times of ascetical cultivation, he had finally reached this realm today.

Although they were all at Original God Realm, he believed his real competence had far surpassed Ka Tuo and Zi Yao's, the two warriors who had just entered the Original God Realm too. If he had to risk his life against them, he was definitely sure that he could easily kill those who had just entered the First Sky of Original God Realm like Ka Tuo and Zi Yao.

And it was highly possible that he could defeat Ao Gu Duo, a Second Sky of Original God Realm, as well.

A challenge of skipping level wasn't really a matter to him. Quite the contrary, it brought him more confident.

Na Xin, the Giants, Fei Lan, Leona, and Carthew were eyeing Shi Yan. They wanted to know how tremendous he had become.

Fusing with the Origin was something that only the luckiest man in legends could do.

His luck was amazing; he had the God power even before his right time!

"Such a lucky champ," Na Xin appraised. "He has the Origin and fused it with his soul. Haha, this time we got to our ancestral land. Nobody could get a bigger harvest than yours!"

Carthew's group was envious.

The Raging Flame Star Area didn't have any ancient continents. The description and explanation of the Origin were just legends. They didn't know about its profundities.

The legends of the Origin were mysterious and unclear. Still, their unclear knowledge of the Origin didn't mean that they knew nothing about its magical effects.

"My fate has always been good," Shi Yan chuckled.

The ten heaven flames were born by a beam of the Origin's purest energy. After they had been fused with the Origin, which then perfectly combined with Shi Yan's soul, the experience of each

heaven flame had become a trace of a memory deeply carved in his mind, becoming part of his soul.

The spherical soul was the Origin, the heaven flames, and the real Master of Grace Mainland.

The continent was divided into many pieces, projected in his Sea of Consciousness. When his thoughts flickered, no area on this continent could avoid his soul sensing.

He was the sole God of this continent!

Shi Yan was like an audience member watching the birth of a continent, observing it thrive to the peak and then decline. He saw all the events that had happened in the billions of years.

His familiarity with this continent was greater than any other existence. His soul was the inner core of the continent, which used to be the fountain of energy.

"Have you found what you wanted to see yet?" Shi Yan stopped smiling, glancing at Na Xin.

"We haven't located the target yet." Na Xin shook his head, forcing a smile. "The ancestral land that year and what we see today are different. We need more time."

"Let me help you," Shi Yan pondered for a while and then grinned.

He touched the air. Space power Upanishad changed at his fingertip. A ring of light suddenly enlarged, creating a light passage. People could see a vague area through that light passage.

"The ancient continent is divided into several pieces. Due to the change of seas, many areas were relocated. I can find what you can't search as easily as flipping a hand." Shi Yan said seriously. "Go. At the end of that light passage is a piece of the barren continent. It used to be the cradle of your Giant Clan and it is also the ancestral land you've mentioned. There's a strange area one thousand meters underground. It should be the forbidden land

that the Giant Clan protected."

He was now the master of the ancient continent. After he had fused with the Origin, he had all things of the continent projected in his mind. None of those areas could avoid his sensing.

Shi Yan would be the first one know any warrior regardless of his profound realm or power, once he descended on this continent.

Many holy lands of the original areas of the ten clans had sunk underground or were sealed with many barriers and restriction. It would be tough for other people to search and access the place.

However, it was easy to him.

His Soul Consciousness had sensed the birthplace of the Giant Clan underground. It was a large area of stone buildings and palaces. He could even see statues of the Giant ancestors. It was the homeland that the Giants had protected with their history and inheritance...

Na Xin's eyes brightened.

Taking a deep breath, he smiled and nodded. "Thank you. You helped us save a lot of time and efforts."

"I want to thank you for your heavy gift. If you didn't give me so many divine crystals to break through, I couldn't have gotten through it safely," said Shi Yan honestly.

"With your innate endowment and competence, your future... is immeasurable." Na Xin appraised. Then, he didn't say more. He just nodded to the Giant clansmen standing next to him. "Let's go. We're going to the ancestral land."

The Giants agreed grumbly, their faces thrilled as their giant bodies shook slightly.

Members of the Giant Clan entered the space passage created by Shi Yan as guided. They started to move to the most mysterious land of their Clan.

After the last Giant disappeared into the passage, Shi Yan arched his brows, asking Fei Lan. "Fusing with the Origin is just accommodating the soul, right? Could it be... two souls co-existing?"

Fei Lan was baffled. She carefully remembered the legends. After a while, she spoke up, "Never heard of such a strange phenomenon."

Shi Yan's heart shivered. His face darkened, but he didn't say anything.

He also knew it wasn't normal.

Both Na Xin and Fei Lan's explained that once fusing with the Origin, the soul would be merged perfectly with the Origin. They would become one.

But Shi Yan... had two souls. His soul seemed to be split... and they seemed completely different.

Since Na Xin and Fei Lan were precursors with profound knowledge, if they didn't know it, Shi Yan was afraid that the others couldn't. This planted a seed of anxiety in his heart.

However, when he circulated his soul altar, he found nothing wrong with the two souls. They had even supported each other, and Shi Yan didn't feel anything annoyed.

Between the two souls, his original soul was in charge of everything as if it was the host soul. It controlled the God Body and all powers, urging the powers Upanishad.

The ball-shaped soul could urge and use the powers of the heaven flames. It was familiar with all abilities of the ten heaven flames.

His thoughts moved, and the icy, scorching auras could perform naturally and strongly. The fountain of these energies stayed deep in his soul. It didn't need the other energies in his body.

The heaven flame tier in the soul altar had the auras of ten

heaven flames. Just like the powers Upanishad, they were interlinked with his soul. The abilities and energy of the heaven flames in the heaven flame tier could run into the Sea of Consciousness and expand to the entire body from there. He could activate them in any minute.

Shi Yan sensed carefully for a while. He found no conflict between the two souls. Although they were distinctive, they were actually matched without any gap.

Currently, he found no abnormal signals or aftermath of the fusion.

Although he was suspicious, before he could find an answer, he didn't want to explain it to everybody. Thus, he decided not to say anything.

"I think you will feel bored staying in this place," smiling, he spoke to Fei Lan and the others, "Give me a little time. After the Giants have done their stuff, we will get back immediately, returning to that level 7 life star."

"Yeah, earth and heaven energy in this place are almost exhausted," Fei Lan nodded, "After you've fused with the Origin, earth and heaven energy in this area had been running out faster. In several years, there will be no beam of energy left. This place isn't suitable to cultivate or understand realms."

Everybody nodded.

Shi Yan understood. He didn't say anything and just took a deep breath. Space energy fluctuated around him.

He extended his arms, tearing the void. A new passage appeared by him, leading directly to the Perpetual Night Forest in Divine Great Land. He could vaguely see Utmost Eight Purgatories City at the end of the passage.

In this archaic continent, his Space power Upanishad wasn't limited. The abilities he couldn't use in other areas would be much

easier here due to the Origin.

In the past, if he wanted to connect two areas in the Grace Mainland, he must use the formation and some other materials.

However, he directly carved the formation in the void using his Soul Consciousness with the energy supply from the magical energy fluctuation of the Origin. He could simply and easily connect different areas.

In the ancient continent, he was the master. With his understanding of space power, he could connect two poles of the continent as he pleased.

However, this ability was only effective in the ancient continent. When he wasn't in this area, this ability wouldn't work.

Moving like an electric rainbow, he entered the passage. After a flash, he appeared inside Utmost Purgatories City.

Many warriors had realized the passage in the void. They lifted their faces to observe. Seeing him emerging, they were all startled.

"Shi Yan!" Yang Mu couldn't help but shout.

The youth of the Yang family including Yang Xue, Li Feng, and Yang Meng were perplexed to see him. They were astounded discreetly.

"Da-ge," Shi Yan smiled, talking right after he landed. "How is your preparation?"

"Almost done," Yang Mu answered and took a step forward to hug him. He didn't know why he suddenly felt uneasy.

Shi Yan was very different, while Yang Mu had just the Sky Realm. Because of the big gap between their realms, he felt a little bit embarrassed.

Chapter 908: Her News

Shi Yan smiled brightly, walking forward to hug him back. He laughed, "Da-ge, don't mind it too much. When we arrive in the new place, with your talent and realm, you will advance quickly. I know many pellets and magical inheritance. I'm sure you won't be disappointed."

"You didn't change. Haha, you didn't change even a bit. That's good," Yang Mu was happy. "I was worried that you wouldn't want to accept such a useless da-ge like me."

"Why?" Shi Yan spoke to him honestly, "When I was in trouble in the Endless Sea, you had crossed thousands of miles to rescue me. I will never forget your great kindness to me."

"Good brother!" Yang Mu patted his shoulder. Then he cried in pain. "Hey, is your body made of iron?"

Currently, Shi Yan was at the Original God Realm. The tenacious of his body wasn't something Yang Mu could imagine.

He patted Shi Yan's shoulder but Shi Yan didn't feel anything. On the contrary, Yang Mu felt like he had hit iron or steel. His hand felt numb, his mind blown away.

Shaking his arm, Yang Mu forced a smile, sighing unceasingly.

He knew that the gap between him and Shi Yan was like the sky and the abyss.

Yang Mu was at Sky Realm. In Shi Yan's eyes, the eyes of an Original God Realm expert, he wasn't different from a worm or an ant on the ground. Shi Yan just needed to raise his hand and he could kill many.

"You're so awesome!" Yang Meng was terrified.

Shi Yan chuckled, "One day, you guys will have the same things. Moreover, I believe you don't need a long time to reach a profound

realm. The Grace Mainland isn't suitable for you guys. When we come to another better world, you will see many unbelievable things, but you can touch them all."

The level 7 life star where Na Xin lived had a lot of spiritual herbs on the ground. With alchemist Jester's support, they could refine many kinds of magical pellets.

Staying in the exhausted Grace Mainland, they could reach such levels. That would be enough to prove their innate ability and competence.

Once they had a richer arena, their breakthrough would occur faster and smoother.

"Long time no see," Shi Yan looked at the two girls in the ground, smiling brightly. "Have you prepared to leave yet?"

They were He Qing Man and Qu Yan Qing.

After many years, they still had the same beautiful makeup. Their bodies were charming and stunning and their faces were like the blooming flowers.

"Almost done," Qu Yan Qing smiled. "It's good to see you again."

"Have you ever met Xin Yan jie-jie?" He Qing Man studied him, contemplating for a while and then asking weakly.

Shi Yan frowned. A gleam of sadness crossed his eyes. "No, I haven't heard from her for so many years."

Shi Yan's heart was very soft for Xia Xin Yan. When he left Grace Mainland that year, they had lost the connection. He knew that she was still alive, but he didn't know where she was.

As He Qing Man said so, he suddenly realized that he should go to that hidden domain to check. Perhaps he could find something.

In that year, his realm wasn't enough and his knowledge of space power wasn't as profound as it is now. Also, he had many important things to shoulder. He didn't dare to risk his life

searching her.

However, he thought his chance had finally come today.

"Xin Yan went through many hardships for you, though. When she came to the Endless Sea with you, she had done as much as she could for you," He Qing Man lowered her head, sighing.

"I know. After I'm done with matters here, I'm going to find her. Don't worry," Shi Yan nodded, his face touched.

It's true. When he had nothing with him, he had Xia Xin Yan. They had befriended and went to the Endless Sea together. Through many adventures, this girl had borne a lot of things because of him...

Yang Tian Emperor, Long Zhu, and Yun Hao came after they had seen the passage. They were all excited, satisfied, and full of wishes for the new life.

"I've opened the passage. When you're done, you can get in at any time. I've arranged the other side too. Nothing unexpected" explained Shi Yan with a smile.

"Alright, we're almost done," Long Zhu nodded, his face cheerful.

"I want to help more people," Shi Yan explained reluctantly, "I'll see you guys at the entrance."

Then, he left. Shortly after, his aura disappeared as if he had directly merged himself to earth and heaven.

Shi Yan went to the gathering place of the Demon Clan. It was a misty gray area. He shouted, "I bring you hope."

Shi Yan appeared out of nowhere in the Ancient Corpse Tomb, speaking to Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea, the masters of the Corpse Clan now. "Follow me. We're going to leave this continent. It's no longer suitable for you guys."

He found the remaining members of the Ghost Mark Clan in the Shady Firmament Old Mound. He said the same thing. "This place

is no longer suitable for your cultivation. I've found you guys a new place."

Deep under the Endless Sea, Shi Yan directly talked to the Chiefs of the tribes of the Sea Clan. He said the same thing. "I bring you new hope!"

Among the ten clans from the ancient times, Shi Yan had visited the Demon Clan, the Monster Clan, the Ghost Mark Clan, the Dark Clan, the Corpse Clan, and the Sea Clan, all the Clans except for the God Clan that had disappeared and the Dark Spirit Clan which got eradicated. He created a passage connecting to the Cold Wind Island of the Endless Sea. He brought them new hope.

Energy in the Grace Mainland was about to empty out. If the warriors stayed here, their energy would be drained out gradually, leading to their deaths.

After receiving the Origin, his point of view changed completely.

The clans he used to think that should be swept over were now parts of the continent in his eyes. The Origin had given birth to them. As he had fused with the Origin, it was his responsibility to find them a way to survive.

Kante was dead. The Dark Spirit Clan was uprooted. Now, Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea ruled Corpse Clan. Shi Yan had lost his interest in taking revenge to the Ghost Mark Clan since Zenith was also dead. The Monster Clan, the Dark Clan, and the Demon Clan didn't have any hotshots worth his intention. After he showed off his power, he had encountered no resistance.

All clans understood the situation of the continent well. When he told them that he wanted to take them out of this place, no one opposed it. All thanked him for his favor.

The seven remaining clans included the Demon Clan, Monster Clan, Dark Clan, Ghost Mark Clan, Corpse Clan, Sea Clan, and Human Clan. All of their members had received Shi Yan's favor of

having a chance to leave this continent.

Passages appeared above the Cold Wind Island, connecting many places of the Grace Mainland.

Clansmen of different races followed their leaders, crossing through the passage to gather in this island.

With existences at high levels like Fei Lan and Leona, all the clansmen were as nice as the sheep. They cooperated well and followed their management.

Of course, members of the clans were scattered around the continent. It took a lot of time to gather them.

After Shi Yan had created the passages for the clans, he left by himself to go to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain.

He stood in front of that chaotic space, frowning and looking at bunches of light shooting disorderly. He urged the Soul Consciousness to check.

His Soul Consciousness moved like a bunch of light piercing through the place, trying to use the mysterious ability of the Immortal Demon Blood to find Xia Xin Yan.

After a while, a beam of his Soul Consciousness was stopped by a thick space barrier. No matter how hard he had tried, he couldn't get through it.

Frowning, he tried to release more energy to attack that barrier. However, he found that it was really tough. With his cultivation base of the Original God Realm, his current powers, and his perception of Space power Upanishad, he still couldn't get through the barrier.

It was obvious that this barrier was formed recently. It seemed like someone had sealed the place.

This barrier looked like the closed border between the Raging Flame Star Area and Na Xin's star area. It seemed like only the

hollow channel could connect them.

With his cultivation base of the Original God Realm and his current powers, he couldn't create the hollow channel under the given circumstances since he knew nothing about the other star area.

He didn't have that ability yet.

However, he knew one thing. He knew that the area behind that barrier should be another star area, another world. It might be close to Grace Mainland or pretty far away.

If his Immortal Demon Area couldn't seep through that barrier, it was possible that it was a star area far, far away.

Vaguely, he felt Xia Xin Yan was still alive. But he couldn't trace her location, her thoughts, and soul energy fluctuation.

After several attempts, he reluctantly gave up and returned to the Cold Wind Island dispirited.

Na Xin and the clansmen of the Giant Tribe had come back. They looked excited as if they got a big harvest.

"What happened?" Seeing Shi Yan have a bad mood, Na Xin asked deliberately. "Is there anything you couldn't do in Grace Mainland with your competence now?"

"I wanted to find a person. Unfortunately, I got nothing," Shi Yan sighed. "My Soul Consciousness can't pierce through the barrier because it could lead to another star area. Sigh. I don't know when I will get a chance to see her again..."

"Where is it? Can you take me there to check?" Na Xin was curious.

Shi Yan was surprised. He nodded as he spoke to him. "Follow me."

Shortly afterward, Shi Yan and Na Xin appeared in the Ice and Fire Secret Domain. He led the Giant to that chaotic space,

pointing at the passage with many beams of shooting light. "There."

Na Xin observed for a while, releasing his Soul Consciousness to sense for something.

After a long time, Na Xin's eyes brightened. He looked very shocked, speaking to Shi Yan. "That space barrier has the aura of the 'Shadow Ghostly Prison,' which is dark and gloomy. It gives the soul shadows of ghosts as if we're in Hell. I'm sure it's the 'Shadow Ghostly Prison!'"

Shi Yan's eyes were sharp as he hissed, "... Shadow Ghostly Prison? Where is it?"

"A mysterious area in our Agate Star Area. I heard that it has a shattered hollow channel and a hollow flood current that is sealed. It used to be the Space Gate Hub of the Agate Star Area."

Na Xin took a deep breath, speaking seriously. "If the one you are looking for has crossed the chaotic space current in this area, that one should be in our Agate Star Area if nothing unexpected happened. Perhaps you know that not only our Giants had pursued the God Clan that year. Many other clans of Grace Mainland have come and lived in the Agate Star Area like us. Perhaps they have found the line connecting to the ancient continent in the Shadow Ghostly Prison of the Agate Star Area."

"Ah!" Shi Yan was stunned, "Are you saying that the one I'm looking for is in the Agate Star Area? The star area that we are about to go to?"

"If nothing's wrong with my sensing abilities, it should be like that," Na Xin nodded to confirm his presumption.

Shi Yan was completely shocked.

Chapter 909: A great migration

When the last batch of the lowest-realm warriors got through the Ethereal Extent and landed on the level 7 life star, the great migration of the Grace Mainland's residents finally ended.

Old Orchid Star was the name of this level 7 life star, where dwelled the Giant Tribe.

Shi Yan, Fei Lan, Leona, and the Giant joined hands to cast complex barriers and formations by the lake near the foot of the mountain, which reduced the gravity by two hundred times to help the newcomers adapt to the environment here.

Old Orchid Star had a tremendous gravity, much more than the Grace Mainland. Even True God Realm warriors found it hard to get used to his place, panting while walking.

If they didn't set up another destination, which had adjusted gravity, for the warriors lower than Sky Realm, the warriors wouldn't even be able to stand. They could only crouch on the ground and do nothing.

Only warriors at the King God Realm could move freely in the Old Orchid Star. However, even they couldn't fly.

Warriors from the Grace Mainland came from different races. There were dozens of thousands of them, and most of them had low realms, around Nascent Realm or Disaster Realm.

After they arrived, they were taken to the new rest stop, which saved them from being crushed by the massive gravity.

Life stars with such formidable gravity were really rare in the Agate Star Area.

It might be because of this reason that many strong clans couldn't stay in this life star, leaving the Giant Tribe live in peace until now.

Shi Yan had a better knowledge of the Agate thanks to Na Xin.

Na Xin said that the Agate Star Area was immensely vast, with countless life stars at different levels.

It had around one hundred level 7 life stars, and perhaps thousands or even dozens of thousands of level 6 life stars. Mineral stars, dead stars, solar stars, and lunar stars were like sand or gravel by the sea, scattered along the whole star area.

This place didn't have only the races they knew about. Besides the Demon Clan, Dark Clan, Monster Clan, Dark Spirit Clan, Ghost Mark Clan, Sea Clan, and Human Clan, there were more living in different corners of the star area.

They could find the clans who had existed in the Antiquity Time of the Grace Mainland in the Agate Star Area, including the God Clan!

However, this clan wasn't welcome in this star area. Many clans were hostile towards this clan. Perhaps, it was the reason why the members of the God Clan in the Agate Star Area were so little. Once they appeared, they could be hunted down immediately.

Clearly, the Agate Star Area wasn't a paradise for the God Clan, where the other big clans hated them a lot.

This new star area had around one hundred different races. Some were extremely intimidating, while the others were weak and fragile. Some had even gone extinct.

The Agate Star Area was a real big hodgepodge of races.

There were Fire Clan, Ice Clan, Wood Clan, Crystal Clan, Wind Clan, etc. were all living in this star area. Many of them were so peculiar that they were beyond Shi Yan's perception of this world.

Taking the Fire Clan as an example, this race lived only on the solar stars. All members of the Fire Clan cultivated the scorching power, and a flame was always burning on their body, making them magical and extraordinary.

Most of the solar stars of the Agate Star Area were controlled by the Fire Clan. This clan even had the power to block the flaming energy of the solar star, saving the energy for their clansmen's cultivation.

The Ice Clan was totally opposite to them. They lived in the extremely cold areas. They were born and lived in the glaciers. The clansmen of this race had a unique body structure, and they only cultivated icy power.

And, then there was the Wood Clan. Rumors said that they were born from an ancient holy tree. They had a wooden body, with real wood texture on it.

Clansmen of the Wood Clan knew how to use Wood power Upanishad from the day they were born, and they could use only the wood power. They were the indulged children of the woods, the Master of the woods. They lived in the forest, with towering ancient trees as their homes.

Another example was the Crystal Clan. Their God Body was a crystal, as if they were cut and engraved by different colored crystals. They were infinitely magnificent, with brilliant, marvelous light.

This star area had more amazing yet bizarre clans, living in different areas. They all had their own life stars and territories.

Almost one hundred clans were scattered around this immensely vast star area, living on countless life stars, and owning a large number of mineral stars, dead stars, solar stars, and lunar stars. Together with the other mysterious and perilous lands, they created this high-level life star called Agate Star Area.

Na Xin's introduction had scared many warriors, including Fei Lan, Leona, and the warriors from the Raging Flame Star Area. They were surprised a lot because of the profundities of the Agate Star Area.

Before they came here, who could have ever imagined such a strange star area? How could it have almost one hundred extraordinary races like that?

"You guys can live here. This Old Orchid Star is our Giant's territory at the moment. This star doesn't have many natural resources, but I think it's... enough for you." Na Xin walked to the lake, looking at the warriors who came from his ancestral land while talking seriously, "You can collect all the materials in the Old Orchid Star; we won't mind it. The Old Orchid Star has many regions we haven't explored and exploited yet. You guys can work on it later."

"Does the Old Orchid Star have a divine crystal mine?" asked Ka Tuo.

Starting from the King God Realm, divine crystals became the main items they used to restore their energy. It was also the currency in the Raging Flame Star Area. The divine crystals could be absorbed and turned into different kinds of energy, suitable for warriors of different races. With this characteristic, the divine crystal was popular in any star area, because it was the main assurance for the warrior's cultivation.

"No, it doesn't," Na Xin shook his head, explaining, "At least, we haven't found one."

Pausing for a while, Na Xin added, "The Old Orchid Star's a little bit strange. The gravity will become more dangerous deep underground. Experts of our Giant Tribe can't endure it more than one thousand meters underground. However, our precursor used to say that there should be something special under the ground of the Old Orchid Star. Especially with the fact that there are more spiritual herbs there. If you're interested in it, you can try."

Na Xin smiled, but his eyes didn't.

Ka Tuo was surprised, rubbing his nose and talking awkwardly, "Never mind, never mind. If you guys don't dare to explore, it will

be impossible for us."

Na Xin was at the Ethereal God Realm, and his realm was higher than Fei Lan. Perhaps, he was at the Second of the Ethereal God Realm. If this existence didn't dare to explore the underground, who could?

Fei Lan? Leona? Or Shi Yan?

Ka Tuo forced a smile.

"Your realms were low, and your knowledge of power Upanishad is... shallow. I think it will not be easy for you to live on the surface of the Old Orchid Star. You shouldn't take any risks." Na Xin kindly reminded them.

Everybody was reluctant as they nodded, knowing that he just told the truth.

"I think you need to build a city first," Na Xin pointed at an area, "There're a lot of good rocks over there. They should be suitable for your city. Yeah, if you need help, I can send two Giants to transport the rock for you. It's to pay tribute to Shi Yan, for his help in finding our ancestral land."

"Thank you, precursor," Shi Yan slightly bent over while smiling, "Then, we will do it."

The gravity in the Old Orchid Star was scary. In this place, even the ordinary Fantasy Sky Rings were affected. They couldn't contain heavy objects anymore.

The Giants were tall, and were used to the gravity in this area. There was nothing more suitable than them to transport the heavy rocks.

"I will arrange it. You just need to assign someone to go with us and show what kind of rocks you want." Na Xin was generous, frankly calling his clansmen.

Shortly, two brawny men of the Giant Clan ran towards them

from the big mountain.

"You guys stay here and help our friends to transport some rocks. Just follow them." Na Xin advised his fellows then smiled, "Our guests here come from pretty far. They will stay with us in the Old Orchid Star, near our mountain. They will be our friends, our neighbors. We will get along well with them."

"We got it, Tribal Oldie."

The two Giants looked nice and friendly. They were all at the Original God Realm. They had agreed with their elder without a bit of hesitation.

"You guys will be busy for a while, so I won't disturb you anymore." Na Xin smiled and nodded to Shi Yan, then excused himself, walking back to his big mountain.

"Who will go with us?" A muscular Giant shouted. His voice was like the thunderclaps striking people's eardrums.

Many lower realm warriors tumbled, falling because of his loud voice. They were all perplexed.

The two Giants were at the Original God Realm. While they were talking, their bodies emitted an intimidating aura. Disaster Realm warriors in Shi Yan's side couldn't endure such pressure.

"Are there any blacksmiths? Who knows about the special stone materials, step forward!" Shi Yan turned around and shouted.

"Although I'm an alchemist, I know stone materials. Count me." Jester smiled until his eyes narrowed. He took part in the responsibility on his own initiative.

"Anybody else?" Shi Yan asked again.

There were blacksmiths among the warriors came from the Grace Mainland. However, since their realms were low, they were inferior to Jester, a high-level existence. They didn't have the guts to show themselves.

"Aren't you a blacksmith?" Zi Yao was surprised.

"Yes, I am. But, I'm not familiar with rock materials." Shi Yan smiled. His eyes narrowed as he looked at the clansmen from the Grace Mainland. "Don't worry about realms. You guys will show which rock materials are suitable to build the city. Whoever works in this field, step out some."

With his encouragement, an old human at the Nirvana Realm gritted his teeth, walking out of the crowd with his face worried. "Sir, I'm a blacksmith. Although my realm isn't high, I've got an ancient book with great information of rock and stone materials."

"Alright, you're in. Anybody else?" Shi Yan nodded. Hesitating for a while, he added. "I will give magical pellets as a reward to you."

Many people looked touched. They seemed excited, but none of them volunteered. It looked like they weren't confident at all.

Shi Yan waited for a while but he got no one else. He sighed begrudgingly, talking to the Giants, "Only three of us. Let's go."

"Come, climb on our shoulders," The two muscular Giants squatted down to let Shi Yan, Jester, and that old man get on their shoulders. Then, they strode and ran, making the earth rumble.

Chapter 910: One thousand miles underground

The two brawny Giants strode fast as if they were flying. Small trees rattled along their way, sending leaves everywhere. Shi Yan's group sat on the shoulder of the Giants. Looking at the trees collapse like grass under their feet, they somehow felt magical.

The old man was called Li Xiao; he was only at the Nirvana Realm. Under the extreme gravity and the bumpy journey, he paled, his eyes so worried.

After a while, when the Giants stopped, the old man couldn't hold it anymore and began vomiting.

Swoosh!

Shi Yan lifted Li Xiao and landed in the middle of a crushed stone area. Li Xiao bent his body and threw up, his face ashen.

Although he was at the Nirvana Realm, he hadn't adapted to the gravity of the Old Orchid Star yet. He staggered, his legs shaking as if he were carrying a whole mountain on his back.

This was a mine around several hundred mu of land, with many collapsed mountains and chips of rock. One of the muscular Giant spoke, his voice sounding like a thunderclap. "This is our quarry we use to build houses. You guys can choose whatever you want."

Li Xiao was shaken as he spurted out blood under such pressure. He looked so unwell. Shi Yan forced a smile, shaking his head. He raised his hand, releasing a brilliant starlight that covered Li Xiao entirely.

Li Xiao was shrouded in the starlight, which separated him from the extreme gravity and the thundering voice. He finally got some color back on his face.

Jester frowned, throwing him a pellet. "Swallow it."

Li Xiao was baffled, looking at Shi Yan.

"Eat it. He won't harm you," Shi Yan nodded and smiled.

Only then did Li Xiao take the pellet. Immediately, a flow of medicinal efficacy, which he considered immense, diffused in his body. The damage done to his body was healed rapidly, as his face started glowing with health. Shortly after, he became full of spirit.

Li Xiao checked his condition for a while. He was thrilled, kneeling and bowing to Jester, continually thanking him. To Jester, the lowest level pellet he refined was at least a level 6 or 7 Sacred Grade. As Li Xiao was only at the Nirvana Realm, that pellet was a priceless treasure to his cultivation.

He could feel his energy leap up several times with only a pellet Jester had just given him. The contaminants and dregs on his body were also filtered.

With the power of this pellet, it was possible to break through one level!

Of course, he was thrilled.

Shi Yan didn't mind the old man, smiling at a Giant. "What kind of stone material do you use? How to know it's suitable for your houses?"

"Simple." A muscular giant grinned, talking, "We hit it. The one that can resist to the last minute under the powerful pressure is the toughest one, and the most suitable material."

"Oh, really simple," Shi Yan smiled frankly.

However, inwardly, he didn't dare to agree with the Giant.

Shi Yan could consider himself an average blacksmith. He had a good knowledge of blacksmithing anyway. The Giant's method to choose the material, to people who didn't know how to refine items, was effective indeed. However, different kinds of materials could be fused or blended with each other.

In many cases, weak stone materials could become tougher and better quality material after being refined, even dozens of times more rigid.

As they knew the refining methods, the crude method of the Giants was... simple indeed.

Alchemist Jester frowned, seeming to be a little bit disdainful. "If it were that simple, there would be no alchemist or blacksmith in this world. If it were so, would the weapon made of the toughest material be the most dangerous one? It's not that simple."

The Giant wasn't enraged. He just laughed foolishly. "Our Tribe doesn't know these things. Also, we don't pay much attention to it. We've done things that way for years. Yeah, we knew that the blacksmiths could refine and forge materials into powerful weapons. But, my tribe doesn't have a blacksmith."

Listening to him, Jester and Shi Yan couldn't comment anything else.

"You guys watch around. When you see the stone you like, call us." One of the two Giants told them then sat down leisurely by a pile of stone. He dozed off, his face satisfied.

Shi Yan smiled and said nothing more. He turned to Jester and Li Xiao. "We should scatter and find the materials. The stone material is the foundation we will build our city with. It'll guarantee our future home and homeland. I hope you guys would choose wisely."

"I will do my best," Li Xiao took a deep breath, his face stern. He walked towards the area filled with crushed stones. Jester also looked serious while his eyes sparkled continually. He took out a yellowed old book, carefully checking for something.

It seemed that he didn't actually know about types and structures of stone materials. Since he had a good source to refer, he got his confidence.

Although Li Xiao had a low realm, and he wasn't worth

mentioning in Shi Yan and Jester's eyes, he had special knowledge of stone materials. Unlike Jester, who was using a book, he was knocking and sometimes pounding on the stone, releasing a wisp of energy to sense.

Sometimes he frowned, and at times he smiled.

The style of a master.

Shi Yan observed Li Xiao for a while and gradually eased his mind, thinking that this man could perhaps give him happy surprises.

Shi Yan didn't know much about materials to build a city. He was good at choosing materials for forging treasures or weapons. The Blacksmith's Secrets of Success mainly mentioned those materials.

That was why he brought Li Xiao and Jester here to help him choose.

Although the Agate Star Area was vast, and the Old Orchid Star was the exclusive land of the Giant Tribe, it wasn't safe. Otherwise, the Giant Tribe wouldn't need to set up layers of barriers outside the mountain.

This meant that Old Orchid Star used to be invaded. Someone had targeted the Giant Tribe.

This immense star area had almost one hundred clans, with countless intimidating existences scattering everywhere. Shi Yan's fellows were just some low-realm outsiders, their competence limited. If they could have a tough city, it would be a good advantage to their future development.

With this thought, he was earnest about choosing the materials for the city.

He neither watched Jester and Li Xiao nor talked to the two Giants, just frowned while walking in the quarry and releasing his Soul Consciousness to sense something.

Since his Soul Consciousness had space power, although his realm wasn't high, the coverage of his Soul Consciousness was larger and deeper than the other warriors with higher realms.

Space power Upanishad had such ability.

Flows of his Soul Consciousness shot out like shuttles. Shi Yan had now more 'eyes', observing the entire area around him.

"Ah?"

After a long time, he sighed, his eyebrows twitching. He silently flew to the center of the quarry.

With his power at the Original God Realm, he couldn't travel one thousand miles in just a blink under the tremendous gravity of the Old Orchid Star. He was slowed down a lot.

He got to his target after fifteen minutes.

Standing in the center of the three collapsed mines was a massive chasm, so deep that people couldn't see its bottom. It seemed to run to the deepest place underground.

A beam of his Soul Consciousness moved to that pitch black hole. However, when his Soul Consciousness reached to an extremely deep place, he felt a wisp of an extraordinary energy...

It seemed to be some kind of a crystal. It was like crystal rock or some special iron. It felt so... wonderful.

The Old Orchid Star was odd with its tremendous gravity, indeed. But, the gravity at the star surface wasn't the heaviest on this star. The deeper one went underground, the heavier the gravity got. Even the experts of the Giant Tribe didn't dare to linger, or else, they would get their God Body crushed.

However, there would be something magical in the earth of the Old Orchid Star as it could produce more excellent spiritual herbs. If the warriors could resist the terrifying gravity, they could have a chance to search...

Shi Yan suddenly recalled what Na Xin had told him, and his eyes brightened silently.

Taking a deep breath, he released more beams of Soul Consciousness. He then condensed the wisps of his Soul Consciousness into one big beam, which was purer and sharper. Of course, it could pierce the layers of soil faster.

A flow of combined Soul Consciousness slowly intruded the gloomy, massive pit like an arrow. Shortly, the magical feeling became more intense.

Boom!

His Sea of Consciousness was shaken, as beams of Soul Consciousness in his Sea of Consciousness also trembled. This wonderful feeling multiplied by a hundred times. It was like there were tens of thousands pieces of the same material, as many as the stars in the sky, inlaid in the bottom of the pit.

It was some special matter that could resonate with the Sea of Consciousness, making his Soul Consciousness dart fast like an electric arrow.

A flow of Soul Consciousness was constantly surging in response, which seethed his Sea of Consciousness and shook the soul altar. Shi Yan was frightened. He hastened to retrieve his Soul Consciousness, his face turning strange.

Pondering for a while, Shi Yan found that his beam of Soul Consciousness had pierced more than one thousand meters into the ground. Even Na Xin couldn't reach this depth for sure.

Since Na Xin didn't have the space power, and although his Soul Consciousness could cover a large area, his elongated Soul Consciousness was limited. It couldn't get deep into the earth like Shi Yan's.

Contemplating for a while, he decided to find someone to ask. He wanted to tell about the magical changes of his Soul

Consciousness, so that the others could guess about the situation.

He came to where the two Giants were resting. Hesitating for a while, he asked frankly, "I've just found a dark hole leading to a deep place underground. A beam of my Soul Consciousness felt something wonderful down there..."

He explained to them how his Sea of Consciousness reacted to that energy fluctuation of some matter underground. The two Giants listened to him. When he told them how his Sea of Consciousness surged, they jolted up. Light shot out marvelously from their eyes up into the sky.

Shi Yan was shaken as he lowered his voice, asking, "Is there something strange?"

The other two seemed to not being able to hear him. They were so excited that their body shaking.

Two muscular Giants exchanged looks. They didn't hesitate, running towards the grand mountain of their Tribe while thundering, "Tribal Oldie! Tribal Oldie! Our Old Orchid Star does have that thing! The rumor's real!"

Shi Yan was perplexed.

Chapter 911: Thousand Fold Lotus

Shi Yan didn't know why the two Giants were so excited, as if they were about to go crazy. However, he could confirm one thing: the thing that could resonate with his Sea of Consciousness must be extremely marvelous!

Jester and Li Xiao also heard the Giant's earth-shaking call. They were astounded for a while, then got back to their work of sensing the stone materials. They didn't pay much attention to them.

Shi Yan hesitated for a while, then returned to that gloomy, passive pit, waiting in silence.

After two hours, he was dumbstruck.

Clansmen of the Giants emerged from the mountain, led by their Tribal Oldie – Na Xin.

He took a dozen brawny Giants, running at their max speed towards Shi Yan. They looked so happy that they couldn't hide it.

Shortly, the Giants arrived, looking at him with complicated eyes.

Na Xin's voice trembled as if he wanted to confirm something, but he was afraid it would only disappoint him. "Little Yan, did you... did you find something underground within one thousand li that could resonate with your Sea of Consciousness? Are you sure?"

"I'm sure," Shi Yan nodded, asking curiously, "But, what is that?"

"Ha ha ha! Turns out it's real!"

"The rumor's true!"

"Rich! We're going to be rich!"

"So good. With that thing, we can exchange for many goods! It's a big surprise, it is!"

"Shi Yan's our lucky charm! He took us to ancestral land, and we found the ancient inheritance there! Now, he found that thing. He's the lucky charm of our Giant Tribe! A real lucky charm!"

"True! He's our best friend!"

"Best friend forever!"

Soldiers of the Giant Tribe looked at him, expressing their most sincere affection. Na Xin was trembling in thrill. He was filled with excitement, laughing unceasingly.

"What is it?" asked Shi Yan again after waiting for them to finish their happy time.

"Thousand Fold Lotus!" Na Xin said resolutely. "It must be the Thousand Fold Lotus! If it can resonate with the Sea of Consciousness, no doubt it's the Thousand Fold Lotus!"

"Ouch, please elaborate," Shi Yan forced a smile.

Taking a deep breath, Na Xin said, "There's a rumor about the Old Orchid Star, which says that the star has the Thousand Fold Lotus. They say that some experts had found it in the Original God Realm. However, we, the Giant Tribe, had never seen it before. Many people have come here to find. Anyway, they got nothing. Gradually, people stopped keeping an eye on this star anymore."

Pausing for a while, Na Xin laughed, "If they knew the Thousand Fold Lotus is actually in the Old Orchid Star, they would regret to death. They would regret that they had eyes but couldn't see. They came to the right place, but they didn't take the precious treasure. Haha. It must belong to our Giant Tribe, our fortune that no one can take away!"

Shi Yan still knew nothing, looking at him begrudgingly. "After all, what's it? What's it good for?"

"You've cultivated Space power. Your Soul Consciousness has space power, which is why you could send your Soul Consciousness more than one thousand li underground. I should have thought

about this." Na Xin didn't explain, talking to his fellows. "Even the Peak of Ethereal God Realm experts can't send their Soul Consciousness one thousand li underground. It's because the gravity in that area is thousand-fold stronger than on the surface of the star! Ethereal God Realm experts can't do that, let alone entering the area. No wonder why they couldn't locate it!"

"Of course, they had searched for it on the surface. It's impossible to find the Thousand Fold Lotus! It's deeply subterranean!" said a Giant with his good mood.

Na Xin put on a serious countenance, explaining Shi Yan, "The Thousand Fold Lotus is a material of the Original Incipient Grade. It can be used to refine pellets and weapons at the Original Incipient Grade. It's the rarest item among the strange and precious items that could give a tonic to the soul altar. It's the top precious treasure, indeed!"

"Original Incipient Grade?" Shi Yan was surprised.

"You don't know about it?" Na Xin was skeptical.

Shi Yan shook his head.

"Spiritual pellets, medicines, cultivating materials, treasures, alchemists, and blacksmiths are categorized into grades. Each grade has seven levels. They are Mortal Grade, Mystery Grade, Spirit Grade, Sacred Grade, Divine Grade, and Original Incipient Grade, where the Original Incipient Grade is the top one. You didn't know this?" Na Xin was surprised.

Shi Yan beamed a forced smile. "I've told you, my knowledge is shallow. The ancestral homeland has existed for millions of years, using up energy. It's a really long time since we had a last King God Realm warrior. Of course... I don't know much."

As it turned out, there was the Original Incipient Grade above Divine Grade. It was indeed true that the higher-level star area had higher-level existences.

"Original Incipient Grade Pellets, treasures, and materials in the Agate Star Area are also extreme. They are all the most marvelous treasures. The Thousand Fold Lotus is an Original Incipient Grade material. We can use it to refine soul class treasure, or Original Incipient Grade pellets that could boost the soul altar!" Na Xin took a deep breath. "The Thousand Fold Lotus has its sets of petal piling up on each other. It looks like a wave expanding outward continually. They connect to each other too. After the flower has one thousand sets of corollas, it's considered mature, becoming the Thousand Fold Lotus. The Thousand Fold Lotus can enlarge the Sea of Consciousness, refining the Soul Consciousness to the point that it can become a real, sharp object like a sword!"

Shi Yan was moved, and couldn't help but exclaim, "Awesome!"

In any inhabited area of a star area, materials or items that could nurture the soul would always be the top-selling items. If the Thousand Fold Lotus could expand the Sea of Consciousness and make the Soul Consciousness as refined as a real matter, it would absolutely be the top treasure!

"The Thousand Fold Lotus and the Sea of Consciousness have something in common. No one knows how it's formed to have layers of folds like that. It's marvelous and precious, indeed!" Na Xin took a deep breath while smiling. "The Thousand Fold Lotus is the rarest thing in the Agate Star Area. Yeah, it's like this. A Thousand Fold Lotus can be compared to the value of a whole life star, at least a level 6 one. Of course, in many cases, even a level 6 life star couldn't be exchanged for a Thousand Fold Lotus!"

Shi Yan was thrilled.

From Na Xin and the Giants' excitement, Shi Yan could guess that the Thousand Fold Lotus was really precious. However, he had still mistaken its value.

A Thousand Fold Lotus could be exchanged for at least a level 6 life star? What kind of logic was that?

It was unimaginable!

"Can you certify how many lotuses are there?" Na Xin asked seriously, "One or two flowers, you think? Oh, I forgot to tell you that the Thousand Fold Lotus is huge. With one thousand sets of corolla, it is at least one mu large. Can you return there and check out their number?"

Many Giants were looking at him with hope in their eyes.

Shi Yan nodded. "Okay, I'll try."

He condensed his Soul Consciousness, entering the deep place underground. He quieted down his mind to sense.

After a while, his Sea of Consciousness resonated. He didn't hasten to retrieve the Soul Consciousness, continuing to explore. As Na Xin had told him, he identified the area and dimensions to certify the number of the lotus.

The Giants looked hopeful and excitedly. Their eyes were glued on him without blinking, while they were smiling like the blooming flowers.

Na Xin was stirred up. He had to take several deep breaths to calm down his seething mind.

The Thousand Fold Lotus was critical. Each flower was a real fortune. To the Giants who lived humbly and poorly, it was so important that nothing could compare with it.

Anyway, it was not just the earth and heaven energy they depended on to cultivate. They had to use more materials, treasures, and pellets. The Giants were poor in those terms. Besides the Old Orchid Star, they didn't have much to exchange for the goods. Compared to other clans, they were inferior.

If they had the Thousand Fold Lotus, everything would be much easier. They could solve the troubles they had had for so many years.

After a while, Shi Yan retrieved his Soul Consciousness, looking at Na Xin. "I feel like there're at least twenty Thousand Fold Lotuses..."

The Giant clansmen cheered loudly, hugging and bumping each other's shoulder. They had shaken the mountainous area, sending rocks everywhere.

Na Xin faced the sky and laughed crazily. However, his eyes were watery. "God still favors us! Our time has finally come. Our soldiers can have better conditions for their cultivation!"

"Ha ha ha!"

More than ten Giants were laughing and cheering, their voices shaking the sky. They were so happy they almost cried.

"Who can take them?" Shi Yan was surprised. After being baffled for a while, he asked.

All members of the Giant Tribe were dumbstruck, darkening their faces.

Na Xin was embarrassed, pulling himself together from his crazy happiness. He scratched his head, giving a forced smile. "It's trouble. The gravity at the elevation of one thousand li underground is also one thousand times stronger. I don't dare to get underground that deep."

"Then what should we do?"

"The treasure is down there but we can't take it out. Isn't it different from getting nothing?"

"Damn it! God, are you kidding us? The heavenly treasures are down there but you guard it with a natural gravity shield. How can we get in there? Damn!"

Many clansmen were pounding their chest, stomping their feet as they were so enraged.

"If you can't get it, why don't you hire someone else to do it?"

asked Shi Yan.

The Giant clansmen quieted down, their countenance strange.

"No," Na Xin forced a smile, "Our Giants are straightforward, but we aren't fools. If we can get the Thousand Fold Lotuses, we won't sell them out under our name. We will do it through many brokers. If someone could spot that we have the Thousand Fold Lotus in our land, we would have a lot of troubles. I'm afraid we won't be able to keep the Old Orchid Star. We Giants aren't really strong. We can't protect the Old Orchid Star from invasion all the time."

Listening to him, Shi Yan sighed inwardly. "What kind of existence could get one thousand li underground?"

"The legendary Incipient God Realm warriors." Na Xin suddenly felt displeased. "We can count the Incipient God Realm experts in the Agate Star Area with our fingers. They are hiding like ghosts in the mysterious lands, and don't go out often. Maybe they would go out after several hundred years. It's easy to hire those people to take the Thousand Fold Lotus. However, if they want to rob us, I'm afraid..."

Shi Yan became dumbstruck on listening to him. This Old Orchid Star was marvelous. In this life star, only the Incipient God Realm warriors could get underground.

So, the Thousand Fold Lotuses were subterranean, but they had no option? They were sitting on the treasures but they couldn't take them?

The Giant clansmen frowned, stooping in distress. They felt so annoyed.

Chapter 912: Myriad Weighty Stone

"Sir! Sir!"

Li Xiao's voice came from afar, sounding excited. The Giants and Shi Yan were all depressed because they couldn't dig up the Thousand Fold Lotus. Hearing Li Xiao's voice, Shi Yan frowned while contemplating. He decided not to overthink about the Thousand Fold Lotus at the moment, walking towards Li Xiao.

Na Xin and the Giant soldiers surrounded the massive pit with a worried frown. They didn't mind Li Xiao much, because they were busy figuring out how to obtain the Thousand Fold Lotus.

Crossing several li, Shi Yan walked to Li Xiao while frowning. "What's happened?"

"I found something!" Li Xiao was cheered up, pointing at a dark stone by his feet. "Myriad Weighty Stone! It's the Myriad Weighty Stone!"

That stone was ink black, around fist sized. It wasn't eye-catching, mingling with the other stones in the pile. It didn't look odd or have any beam of energy.

Shi Yan was surprised. "Is that stone suitable for building the city?"

"Sir, if you don't mind, please pick it up," Li Xiao smiled.

As Shi Yan was skeptical, he reached and grabbed the Myriad Weighty Stone, releasing his energy while trying to pull it up.

"Eh?" Shi Yan changed his visage.

At his realm, when he released energy, it was enough to pick up a small-sized mountain. However, that fist-sized stone didn't move even inch.

Shi Yan's interest arose. He walked to the stone and didn't draw it into the void using energy anymore. He extended his hand,

touching that Myriad Weighty Stone.

It felt firm and cold in his hand, but there was nothing else special about it.

However, when he tried to lift up the rock, his face changed.

Heavy! Too heavy!

It was just a small rock, but it was as heavy as a small mountain. Shi Yan had to use his Essence Qi to lift it up. His arm shook as he hardly endured it.

Shi Yan's eyes brightened up, "That stone's too heavy!"

Li Xiao nodded continually, looking strangely happy. "The Myriad Weighty Stone is extremely heavy. In a normal situation, it's thousands of times heavier than the rock of the same volume. This fist-sized Myriad Weighty Stone can compare to a small mountain!"

Shi Yan was shocked. "It's strange, indeed! Can we use it to build the city?"

"The best material to build the city! It's tough enough to resist almost all kinds of attacks. It's immune to weapons, strong impacts, fire, or water! It's the top stone material to build a city!" Li Xiao stressed on the stone's features.

"Alright!" Shi Yan was excited. "Where did you find this Myriad Weighty Stone? How much of it can we collect?"

The smile on Li Xiao's face faded. "I found only that stone. I've checked around, but I couldn't find more. I don't know where it's from."

Shi Yan was surprised, pondering for a while, then said, "There should be more around. We'll scatter and search then."

"Okay," Li Xiao was really excited. He immediately moved towards another stone pile, trying to find more Myriad Weighty Stone.

The two of them then focused on searching for more stones. They forgot the time, just raking through the stone quarry and checking each pile of stones.

After waiting for Shi Yan for a long time but not seeing him come back, the Giant clansmen became curious. Na Xin contemplated, then took his fellows to search.

Afterward, Jester also came to their area. Seeing Shi Yan and Li Xiao burying their heads into piles of stones, he couldn't help but ask skeptically, "What are you looking for?"

Shi Yan turned to him. He had many crushed stones sticking on his face. He threw the stone in his hand to Jester. "This. Alchemist Jester, have a look and tell me if you're familiar with this kind of stone."

Jester extended his hand to catch it. At the moment the Myriad Weighty Stone fell into his hand, his body was blown backward. Half of his body was pressed into the ground, and he almost got his wrist strained.

He was scared, screaming continually. "Oh motherf*cker! What the heck is this stone? How could it be so heavy! Oh damn!"

"It's called Myriad Weighty Stone. Alchemist Jester, you don't know about it?" Shi Yan was surprised.

Jester still had half of his body underground, forcing a smile while shaking his head. "Never heard of it before."

Shi Yan was bewildered, and couldn't help but look at Li Xiao. Now he knew that perhaps alchemist Jester wasn't better than Li Xiao in terms of knowledge of stone materials. Although Li Xiao didn't have a high realm, his knowledge of stone materials wasn't shallow.

"We're trying to find that kind of stone. If we can find enough, it will be the main material to build our city. Alchemist Jester, please come and help us," Shi Yan smiled inaudibly.

Jester was surprised, then nodded and smiled. "That's good. I'm on it."

Not long afterward, Na Xin took some brawny Giants coming from afar. Seeing the strange operation of the other threes, he got suspicious.

"Little Yan, what are you doing?"

"Finding a stone material which is very weighty." Shi Yan pointed at Jester's. "That black stone on the ground is what we want to find. Have you ever seen it before?"

Jester had put that Myriad Weighty Stone on the ground.

Na Xin jumped over there, touching the stone. He picked it up easily while hissing, "My, it's heavy!"

"Yeah, pretty heavy. We need this kind of stone to build the city. As you live in the Old Orchid Star precursor, do you know any place has this kind of stone?" Shi Yan smiled and asked.

Na Xin was a little bit embarrassed. "I don't pay much attention to these things."

He turned around, hurling the Myriad Weighty Stone to the Giants coming with him. "Have a look at it. Do you know where to find this kind of stone?"

The Giant clansmen looked at the Myriad Weighty Stone, shaking their heads while responding in negative.

After a while, some other Giants came. One of them was an ugly Giant. As soon as he arrived, he screamed, "Tribal Oldie, I know where to find this kind of stone."

People had their eyes brightened.

"Take us there," ordered Na Xin.

That Giant didn't say anything, striding in a direction. People followed him immediately.

After two hours, the Giant led them to a one-thousand-meters-high bleak and barren mountain. However, when they approached the mountain, they found that the gravity in this area was even several hundred times stronger.

Jester was hovering. However, when they arrived at this area, he fell onto the ground immediately, rushing into the pile of crushed stone in a sorry state.

Shi Yan staggered for a while before he could steady his God Body in the air. He didn't fall like Jester.

"This mountain has the same kind of material. When I hunted near here, I used to see it," said the Giant honestly.

Shi Yan was moved. He didn't talk more, hauling the divine sword out and slashing the mountain.

The surface rock of the mountain wasn't Myriad Weighty Stone. It was just a typical one. When his divine sword slashed down, blocks of rock fell like tofu cubes.

Clink Clink!

Digging dozens of meters deep into the mountain, the clinking noises of metal on metal echoed. The massive sword that was still working effortlessly met an obstacle for the first time.

Shi Yan stepped forward while glancing, and couldn't help but smile. "Indeed, inside the mountain is this very kind of material, the Myriad Weighty Stone."

People could see a dark area inside the cave Shi Yan had just dug up. The black stone had a deep scratch, which was left by the divine sword.

The sharp divine sword that had cut the stone steles in the God Perishing Land as easy as cutting tofu couldn't break the Myriad Weighty Stone. Thus, it had proven how tough the Myriad Weighty Stone was.

Rattle Rattle Rattle!

Shi Yan swung the sword, breaking the typical rock by the cave to enlarge it.

After a long moment, the entrance of the cave was now dozens of meters large, enough for two Giants to enter and check the special things inside.

"It's the same stone material inside," Li Xiao stood in the distance, pondering for a while. He didn't dare to step forward as he just muttered.

Shi Yan nodded, "It's true. The inside of this mountain is the Myriad Weighty Stone. It should be enough for us to build the city."

"Too heavy. I'm afraid we can't move them out," Li Xiao forced a smile. "The amount of Myriad Weighty Stone in this mountain is even heavier than a medium sized life star. Perhaps, even the Giant precursors can't move it."

Na Xin nodded, talking seriously. "Based on the weight of that fist-sized stone, and with the entire inside of this mountain being made of it, we really can't move it. It is going to be too heavy. We don't have a solution."

Shi Yan couldn't help but smile miserably.

The Thousand Fold Lotus was deep underground, so they couldn't touch it. And now, they found a special material to build the city that they couldn't move. He suddenly felt that God was playing with him. He could see them but couldn't touch.

This was much harder to endure than not knowing anything.

"I'll try to use space power to move it." Contemplating for a while, Shi Yan took a deep breath, making up his mind. He didn't want to leave empty handed.

Holding his breath and concentrating his mind, Shi Yan

condensed beams of Soul Consciousness, seeping into the mountain made of Myriad Weighty Stone.

His Soul Consciousness found it difficult to move further.

The Myriad Weighty Stone was unique. His Soul Consciousness could pierce through the normal stone, but it felt like countless of ropes were tying it down when he attempted to pierce through the stone. He had to use a lot of soul energy.

He didn't give it up, gritting his teeth to get through the stone.

After a while, his brain was shaken, his face showing an expression like he had found something wonderful!

His Soul Consciousness found something inside the Myriad Weighty Stone mountain. It had thousands or even tens of thousands of thick lines! Those thumb-sized lines glowed brilliantly, spreading in the center of the mountain like a big spider web. Shi Yan could see them in every corner.

Those glowing lines looked like a mysterious spiritual formation!

However, that formation was shattered. Many thumb-sized lines were broken, which had stopped the energy circulation of that formation, making it incomplete.

Retrieving his Soul Consciousness, Shi Yan's face was stern. He took a deep breath and then talked, "There's a formation inside the mountain, but it's damaged."

The Giant clansmen were shocked, unable to believe what he had just told them.

They'd been living in the Old Orchid Star for so many years, but they had never found this magical area. No one had ever thought that their homeland could have something so wonderful. This information had them baffled.

"I can fix it," Shi Yan pondered for a while before speaking up again, causing everyone to have their eyes brightened.

Chapter 913: Fix the ancient formation

The Giant Tribe had a lot of astonishments today.

First, it was the Thousand Fold Lotus, then the Myriad Weighty Stone, and now, they found the mysterious ancient formation. Was it true that the Old Orchid Star used to have some great marvelous things?

The Giant Tribe had lived in the Old Orchid Star for tens of thousands of years. After that almost-perpetual time, due to their limitation, they had explored the surface of the star several times, but still had never spotted anything magical before.

Since Shi Yan cultivated Space power and due its powerful piercing ability, plus his determination to reside in the Old Orchid Star, he didn't save his energy, trying to search further. And with that, he Indeed found many magical areas.

This cheered up the Giant Tribe.

To any person, knowing that his hometown had a treasure was a joyful thing. Of course, the Giants weren't an exception.

It was especially true because of the fact that the Giant Tribe was poor. They didn't have many precious materials. They always lived a humble, lean life. All of a sudden, discovering that they were actually sitting on a fortune had them totally thrilled.

"You can fix it? Really?" People could even see how happy Na Xin was. It was all over his face as he excitedly walked forward, using one finger to pat Shi Yan on his shoulder. "Good job! I know Little Yan will be the lucky charm of our Tribe. You didn't fail me. Xiao Man has brought you to our tribe. He's a good kid too. Haha!"

Many giants were so happy they couldn't hold it, their countenance bright and cheerful.

"I can use God power to connect the broken formation. Let me give it a try," Shi Yan sensed carefully, then said, "I need more

time."

"Haha, you can do it again and again. We have plenty of time. Time is the one thing we have in abundance," Na Xin was blooming with smiles.

Jester and Li Xiao were also excited discreetly.

They could confirm one thing; the Old Orchid Star must have something marvelous. Otherwise, it wouldn't have had a mysterious, damaged formation inside this mountain.

The formation meant that some living beings used to live or stay in the Old Orchid Star a long time ago. The more ancient they were, the more profound would their realms, cultivation base, powers, and knowledge of this world be.

If they could find something marvelous the ancient living beings left, it would be good news for the residents of the Old Orchid Star.

If the members of the different clans from the Raging Flame Star Area and the Grace Mainland could have the support from the top treasure, they could stand firmly faster in the Agate Star Area. Their lives would be much better.

It was indeed an amazing opportunity.

Closing his eyes and placing one hand on the ground while aiming at the pitch black Myriad Weighty Stone, Shi Yan continually condensed his Soul Consciousness, seeping underground towards the massive chunk inside the mountain...

He had cultivated space power, so his Soul Consciousness also had space power, which made it the most amazing type of Soul Consciousness.

That was why he could sense the areas the Giants couldn't.

Realms didn't matter here. It was all due to the different power Upanishad. Warriors cultivating space power were mysterious and rare in any star area after all.

Condensing Soul Consciousness and sending it towards the chunk inside the mountain, the spider web formation was suddenly projected in his Sea of Consciousness. It looked complex and inexplicable, just like a star map.

It was a one-thousand-meters-high mountain, so the chunk of the stone inside was extremely massive. The spiritual formation had tens of thousands of lines, spreading out everywhere and connecting with each other.

Dozens of the lines were cut off by some power. However, the distances between them weren't too big...

Shi Yan couldn't understand the profundity of the formation or simulate it. But, fixing it couldn't trouble him anyway.

Shi Yan could be considered an extraordinary blacksmith. He had studied all kinds of formations in the Blacksmith's Secrets of Success, and had a special knowledge of fixing formations.

With his Soul Consciousness as the connector, he coiled it around the two ends of the broken line. His space power seeping into the Myriad Weighty Stone was suddenly activated its energy!

A pure God power flowed like a spirit snake. Following the connection the Soul Consciousness had formed, it moved to the broken area. Seconds later, the God power started to slowly pull and glue the two ends...

It wasn't really hard, anyway.

Shortly, a 'swish' sound reflected in his soul and the broken line was mended by his Soul Consciousness and God power.

Shi Yan was cheered up, smiling.

He didn't take a break, just focusing and continuing his mending work. He continually used his Soul Consciousness to find the broken point, then released the God power to connect them.

Time flew fast.

Shortly, ten days had passed. The Giants, Jester, and Li Xiao were still staying with him to guard and observe.

Regarding this discovery, the Giants were very cautious. Before they could confirm the situation, they all stayed. No one had left yet.

Na Xin was the one who got the most nervous. He was tense, watching Shi Yan's operation as hope filled his heart. He hoped that Shi Yan could bring a positive change to his Giant Tribe, so they could live better in the Agate Star Area.

On this particular day, Shi Yan suddenly shivered. Sweat beaded on his forehead while his soul flickered unsteadily. Na Xin's group became nervous as if their hearts were hung on a thread, waiting for something.

They knew the critical moment was coming.

Boom!

A series of strong gravity movements burst out from inside the mountain, and Shi Yan's God Body was blown backward.

The Giants standing nearby the mountain discolored. They felt their body became so heavy that they had to stagger at each step. Instinctively, they stepped backward.

Jester and Li Xiao were standing afar from this mountain. Still, they could feel the tremendous gravity, and had to retreat further.

A beam of light blue light suddenly stretched to somewhere far away from the peak of the mountain. That light had the clear energy fluctuation of extremely terrifying gravity.

Shi Yan was blown backward more than one thousand meters by the shockwave. He hissed, "I'm done fixing it!"

Na Xin and the other Giants were so happy they almost cracked. All of them looked at the light blue beam elongating to somewhere with astonishment. Some then started to fly in that direction.

Shi Yan was surprised for a while, talking to Jester. "Bring Li Xiao. We're going there to see."

Jester nodded then grabbed the void to pick Li Xiao up. They also walked to the destination the light blue light was showing.

Na Xin left shortly, looking so happy.

After a long time, they gathered again by a new mountain, which was also a bleak and barren one. From all aspects, it was similar to the previous mountain Shi Yan had just fixed.

However, the stone atop the mountain was broken, revealing a faint blue light. It was dim and flickering like a candle.

The broken peak exposed the ink black stone underneath. It was the Myriad Weighty Stone again!

Shi Yan was astonished. He used the giant sword to cut the mountain, digging a cave to enter the mountain. He was the first one jumping into the mountain.

"It's the same! This mountain also has Myriad Weighty Stone!" Shi Yan stood at the entrance of the cave, turning his head to talk to Na Xin. "I can see a shattered formation inside the mountain, too! It's pretty similar to the previous one!"

"Oh, it hasn't completed?" Na Xin was shocked. All of a sudden, he talked complacently, "It should have something wonderful. Shi Yan, put a little bit more effort, please! Fix that formation. I think after you've completed all the formations, the real power of the formations could be activated."

All the members of the Giant Tribe put on a longing face, smiling until their eyes narrowed while looking at Shi Yan.

"Ouch, I need to recover first," Shi Yan beamed a forced smile. "I've used a lot of energy. If you ask me to fix it now, I think I won't be able to do it."

Jester pondered for a while, then talked to him generously,

"Here! These pellets should be enough for you to recover fully and quickly!"

These five-colored pellets had a sweet aroma, glowing brilliantly like jewels. Each of these pellets contained an extraordinary energy. They were all high-quality pellets Jester had refined. They were dozens of times better than the one he gave to Li Xiao.

Shi Yan wasn't trying to be too polite. He grinned, then took all of the pellets, swallowing them straight up. Then, he sat down cross-legged by the entrance to adjust his energy. He hoped to recover his full energy at the fastest speed.

Three days later, Shi Yan opened his eyes. He looked bright and refreshed, with high spirit. Then, he continued to do his great repairing work.

The mountain was the same. The Myriad Weighty Stone inside was also the same, and the similar formation also had the same damage level as the previous formation.

To Shi Yan, it was easier because he just needed to repeat what he had done. Gathering his spirit, he started to mend the broken formation, using his Soul Consciousness and the God power as the source of the connector to connect the broken lines.

Seven days later, explosions reverberated inside the mountain. Another bunch of light blue light shot out to an area afar.

As expected, they were just surprised for a while before dashing to where the bunch of light pointed.

It was another mountain with the same broken formation carved inside the Myriad Weighty Stone. Shi Yan needed to fix it, too.

This time, he didn't need people to ask him to fix the formation. Shi Yan took Jester's pellets, then rested to recover his energy. Afterward, he continued fixing the shattered formation.

After he had repaired this formation, the blue light pointed to another mountain...

And it kept going like that...

Shi Yan had to continually fix the broken formations inside the new mountains.

Three months had passed hurriedly.

There were sixteen mountains in total. They arrayed in a circle, as if they were surrounding something.

They measured the area, finding that those sixteen mountains circled the massive pit where the Thousand Fold Lotuses were deep underground!

This discovery cheered up all the Giants.

"This is the sixteenth mountain, the last one. After Shi Yan's done with it, we will see the change!" Na Xin's voice trembled. "Perhaps, it's related to the Thousand Fold Lotus!"

He licked his lips, talking seriously, "Little Yan, you must help us."

Standing by the last mountain, Shi Yan retracted his hands, smiling at the Giant. "Precursor, if we find something or get the Thousand Fold Lotus, can we get a share of it?"

"Equal share!" Na Xin laughed straightforwardly. "I know Human Clan is cunning, but I like you. No matter what we can get, we will share equally. How does it sound?"

"I know you guys won't lie," Shi Yan grinned, talking frankly. "Alright! I'm going to fix this last damaged formation!"

He closed his eyes, concentrating on the last repair.

Several days later, a deafening explosion came with a great shaking simultaneously from sixteen mountains made of Myriad Weighty Stone. Light bloomed from the center, reaching thousands of meters away. Vaguely, a blue light circle was formed, connecting the mountains.

Abruptly, all sixteen mountains collapsed while explosions

reverberated in that massive pit. Vaguely, something slowly emerged.

Chapter 914: The Mysterious Ancient City

Boom Boom!

The ear-splitting explosions echoed from the deep place in the massive pit. It seemed like something giant was about to emerge.

The massive pit was larger than ten mu and it seemed to be almost bottomless. The subterranean gravity inside the pit was hundreds or even one thousand times stronger than gravity on the surface. Even Na Xin who was at Ethereal God Realm didn't dare to jump in rashly.

Each of the sixteen mountains had the Myriad Weighty Stone as its core. The mountains acted like a load of a lever. Once they sank deep underground because of the Myriad Weighty Stone and the heavy gravity, their falling momentum would be terrifying.

In the tremendous thunderclaps, sixteen mountains pounded on the ground like giant iron hammers. Then, sixteen mountains disappeared, sinking deeply into the earth.

Sixteen massive holes appeared strangely as if they kept some stunning secrets.

Shi Yan, Jester, Li Xiao, and the Giants approached the massive hole in the center, waiting for something with weird faces.

A long time afterward.

A group of grand, imposing palaces slowly emerged from that massive pit.

This group of palaces was around ten mu. Each of the palaces was made of Myriad Weighty Stone with carvings of complex and inexplicable patterns and drawings. They seemed to hide some marvelous secrets.

Those palaces were built long, long time ago, and they had been buried underground for an unknown period. Dust and ashes

covered everything. The gravity around the palaces was also intimidating.

The group of grand palaces emerged completely from the deep pit. They were now situated above that pit.

Earth and stones around the massive pit moved toward the center and compacted together, supporting the palaces. At this moment, the huge pit had disappeared, turning into a strange foundation for that group of palaces.

The city walls of the palaces were as black as ink, and there were four gateways. The palaces looked like massive cubes, dozens of meters high. Each of the gateways was wide open, revealing four spacious roads leading to the inside of the palaces.

However, these roads were magical. Unlike the other areas, they didn't have the extreme gravity.

The palaces were bizarre indeed. Except for the four roads leading to the inside of the city, the gravitational field elsewhere was present and several hundreds of times heavier than the natural ground. However, standing on any spot on the roads would save people from the terrible gravity.

Na Xin and Shi Yan were perplexed. They dully watched the palaces arising from underground, not knowing what to do.

"I think we can get in there and see." After a while, all anomalies disappeared. After waiting and seeing nothing else, Shi Yan couldn't help but remind the crowd.

Na Xin nodded continually, his eyes astounded. "We should go in there and check."

Then, he led them on a road and entered the city.

Shi Yan didn't lag behind. He chuckled, gathering his energy discreetly and walking with Na Xin to the city.

This group of palaces was situated on a ten-mu area. It looked

like a royal abode. Inside the city, they could see hundreds of different sized buildings and neatly arranged streets. Each of the buildings here was made of Myriad Weighty Stone with different patterns and drawings in the wall that perfectly combined with the Myriad Weighty Stone, hiding unknown mysteries.

It was strange that the gravity inside the city was normal, which was several hundred times less than on the surface of the Old Orchid Star.

Shi Yan sensed and found that the gravity in this city was very similar to Raging Flame Star Area and Grace Mainland, the normal life stars. It seemed like it wasn't affected by the Old Orchid Star.

Shi Yan was surprised. He released his Soul Consciousness, scanning the entire palaces. Then he shook his head. "No living beings here."

"Yeah, no living beings, indeed," Na Xin nodded, "but we found so many skeletons..."

They saw many peculiar, big skeletons on the streets and inside the houses. They seemed to belong to the pagans, Monster Clan, or Demon Clan, whose physiques were huge. And they also found some small skeletons as small as a human child.

Thousands or even tens of thousands of skeletons were scattered around the city, on the streets, and inside the houses. Their postures varied.

Some skeletons gathered on the street as if they were speaking to each other when they were still alive. Some stood by the shops as if they were bargaining for some goods.

Shi Yan's group also found some sitting skeletons inside the special training yards. They seemed to have been cultivating before they died all of a sudden.

...

It seemed like those thousands of skeletons around the corners of

the city were doing their business and didn't know what would happen to them in the next minute.

The disaster must have come abruptly. Nobody could have predicted it. All died at their spot. No one survived.

Jester touched a skeleton. When his finger touched the bone, the whole skeleton turned into dust, falling to the ground and scattering.

His face became gloomy, a little bit pale. "It has decayed for so many years, dozens of thousands of years at least... Even if they were stronger when they were alive, they can't resist time. After the energy has dispersed all, the skeleton couldn't resist anymore..."

Li Xiao and the Giants also tried. They came up with the same results.

Whether it was a huge or lanky skeleton, once they touched it, it turned into bone dust and fall. So weak!

Perhaps some of them used to be formidable. However, since they had died for tens of thousands of years, the energy in their bodies had all vanished. They became feeble, indeed.

"Thousand Fold Lotus!"

Na Xin suddenly shouted, dashing towards an area, his face thrilled.

Thump Thump Thump!

The thudding footsteps of the Giants echoed like drumming. All the Giant soldiers ran after Na Xin, their countenance excited.

Na Xin didn't hesitate much taking Jester and Li Xiao there as well.

In the middle of the city, there was a massive pool.

The pool was pitch black as if the water in there was actually ink. It looked thick and viscous. A faint but pure aroma diffused from

this pool.

Jutting from the water of the pool was the Thousand Fold Lotuses. The Thousand Fold Lotus looked like water lilies that were much larger. Each of its petals was like brown glass growing magnificently. Each Thousand Fold had one thousand set of petals. From the seed pod outward, the number of the petals also increased.

The ink-like water in the pool bubbled. Twenty-three Thousand Fold Lotuses grew in every corner of the pool as if someone had arranged them that way with hidden meanings.

After they came, some of them released Soul Consciousness to sense. Immediately, they felt like their brains were shaken hard with buzzing and echoing sounds.

"Be careful! Don't release your Soul Consciousness! If you stir up your Sea of Consciousness, something serious will hit you hard!" Na Xin hissed, preventing people from acting rashly.

His reminder was a little bit too late...

Jester and Li Xiao sat down, their eyes empty as their Sea of Consciousness was surging very hard and they couldn't bear it. They were frightened. Apparently, they had used Soul Consciousness to sense the flowers.

Shi Yan sneered and then walked to Jester and Li Xiao. He stretched both hands above their heads.

The strange energy of his soul urged.

An extremely cold air shot out from his fingers which looked like transparent threads, entering Jester's and Li Xiao's heads.

Their chaotic Sea of Consciousness gradually calmed down under the effect of his strange energy.

After a while, Jester and Li Xiao recovered. They paled and grimaced, not daring to act rashly anymore. When they looked at

Thousand Fold Lotuses, they seemed scared.

They understood that if Shi Yan didn't help them in time, when their Sea of Consciousness got completely chaotic, it would explode their souls. There was a high possibility that they would become crazy and never get their mentality healed again.

Na Xin glanced at the two of them, frowning. "The Thousand Fold Lotus is really eccentric. Your realm is low and you... aren't mysterious like Little Yan. Don't rush."

Jester and Li Xiao beamed a forced smile, nodding in agreement. They had made up their minds.

Twenty-three Thousand Fold Lotuses scattered in the pool. When the bubbles in the water exploded, they created a black mist covering the entire pool like a black fabric sheet. Faint energy fluctuated from that mist.

Na Xin and the Giants became excited but they didn't dare act recklessly. They wanted to see if this palace had something magical.

This grand and imposing city suddenly emerged in the Old Orchid Star. Inside the city was a pitch-black pool that seemed to be the resource that nurtured the Thousand Fold Lotuses. That pool should have something good.

The more mysterious it was, the more dangerous it could be. As they knew nothing about this place, they had to restrain their excitement.

"Ah?" Shi Yan suddenly lifted his face and studied the walls around. He was astounded, shouting. "The city wall is taking in heaven and earth energy!"

Na Xin was very surprised, closing his eyes to sense. "True. The strange patterns and drawings on the walls are also complicated formations. They can draw earth and heaven energy."

"This ancient city should have some exquisite Spirit Gathering

Formations. It can gather earth and heaven energy. Those formations are even more perfect and marvelous than ones that I can make," Shi Yan complimented.

After several minutes, he found that earth and heaven energy inside the city was much thicker than the energy in Old Orchid Star.

Old Orchid Star was a level 7 life star with dense earth and heaven energy. The Spirit Gathering Formation had guided and thickened earth and heaven energy, pouring it into the ancient city and making it more abundant that it almost broke the limit. Warriors cultivating in this city could harvest a lot to increase their realms.

"Excellent!" Shi Yan grinned continually. "We wanted to build a city and now, it has just come to us. Haha."

Na Xin was bewildered. "You little boy. You are so lucky. Everything you touch becomes a fortune."

"This ancient city is big enough for our fellows," Shi Yan rubbed his chin, looking at the architecture of the city and speaking to Na Xin. "Although houses in this city aren't small, it's still uncomfortable to the Giants. I think it's not suitable for you guys to live here, right?"

Buildings in this ancient city weren't low. Living beings around five meters tall could stay here. However, Giant children were already ten meters tall. It would be a burden for them to live in this city. Apparently, the Giants had never lived in this city before because it didn't have any similar buildings suitable for the Giants.

"Oh, then can we have this ancient city?" Shi Yan smiled, asking.

Chapter 915: Harvest

"No!"

Na Xin shook his head firmly and then forced a smile. "If this ancient city can draw earth and heaven energy continually, cultivating here can help warriors a lot... However, it's like a country of the dwarves to our Tribe. I want to consider this matter more. Let's see if we can build more houses, the ones that our fellow Giants can live in."

Apparently, he didn't want to give it up.

This ancient city was magical, indeed. However, at this moment, they didn't know much about this place. They didn't know what it was most suitable for. However, they knew that this place was very good for warriors to cultivate.

Since the Giants were also warriors, how could they give up a place that could boost their cultivation?

"How can we take the Thousand Fold Lotuses?" Shi Yan pondered, looking at Na Xin.

"They need a special container. Otherwise, their magical energy will disperse. And how to refine that container... I... I don't know." Na Xin beamed a forced smile. "I will find someone to fabricate the container. After that, we will try to take the lotuses."

"I'm a blacksmith," Shi Yan said seriously, "Tell me the materials. I can forge it for you."

"Materials?" Na Xin scratched his head, speaking begrudgingly, "I still need to ask someone."

"Alright, so we will leave the Thousand Fold Lotus for now. We're going to check this ancient city for once. Let's see if it has anything else strange."

"Alright!"

Shi Yan, Jester, and Li Xiao formed a team, walking around the city to see if they could find anything good.

The Giants also scattered to different places of the city, raking through every corner to see if they could find anything special.

This ancient city wasn't really big. It wasn't bigger than Utmost Eight Purgatories City Shi Yan had built before.

Shi Yan's team walked East. They searched each house carefully.

Many corpses lay inside the houses. However, their skin and flesh were all gone, leaving only the decayed skeletons which scattered away at the first touch.

After tens of thousands of years buried deep under the ground of the Old Orchid Star, all things in this city had gradually lost their magical effects under the terrifying gravity.

Many skeletons still had accessories like rings and jewels. However, they were all broken. And the items they stored inside were all damaged once they were exposed. No beam of energy could be found.

Checking each house, they couldn't find anything useful. The team was disappointed.

The three of them walked to the tallest building in the East part of the city. This building was like a nine-level tower, which looked similar to a soul altar.

This tower had a large foundation and it got smaller all the way to the top.

The main gate of that building was closed, and so were the doors of the other levels. This building didn't have a single window. It was also made of the black Myriad Weighty Stone. However, there was no trace on the wall that proved that it was formed naturally.

The three of them stood by the main door, trying to push it open.

However, no matter how hard they had tried, they couldn't open it.

Their Soul Consciousness couldn't seep through the stone either.

Shi Yan even took the divine sword and slashed it several times. He could only leave some shallow marks on the stone door.

"We can't break it," Jester shook his head. "This building doesn't look like other houses. It doesn't have any drawings or patterns. And it's not made of only the Myriad Weighty Stone. It should have some other strange material."

"The Myriad Weighty Stone is a top quality stone material. I don't know which material can combine with the Myriad Weighty Stone. However, I can confirm that refined Myriad Weighty Stone is the toughest material in the world." Li Xiao also expressed his agreement. "If we can't find the secret, we will never get into the place."

"Secret?" Shi Yan smiled, "All the items in this ancient city are decayed and rusted. Nothing remains. Where will we find the secret then?"

"I don't know either," Li Xiao opened his arms, indicating that he had no idea.

The three of them wandered around the tower building, trying everything they knew. However, they didn't succeed.

Begrudgingly, they could only return to the pool where grew the Thousand Fold Lotuses. At this moment, the Giants had already returned. They were discussing something loudly.

"What did you find?" Na Xin smiled, asking Shi Yan.

"A strange building that looks like a tower. It has nine levels. But we couldn't open it."

"Did you find anything special?"

"No."

"We found something."

Shi Yan's eyes brightened. "What is it?"

Na Xin unfolded his hand, smiling. "These three things. They didn't decay after tens of thousands of years. Still intact."

On his massive palm were a huge scarlet dragon skull with a red light moving on its surface, a wood lock around the size of a brick with natural textures as complicated as lines in human palms, and a small, thin book that was yellowed like a dried leaf. The thick words in that book looked like tadpoles. Shi Yan didn't know what language it was and which race it came from.

"I know two of them," Na Xin smiled contentedly.

"Please do tell," Shi Yan was eager to learn.

"This is the skull of the most valiant and dangerous Evil Dragon, a strong branch of the Dragon Clan. This Evil Dragon could be at level 13, as strong as an Incipient God Realm warrior. Its skull hasn't decayed yet even though it has been more than tens of thousands of years. It's the toughest and most magical bone then." Pausing for a while, Na Xin smiled and continued, "To our Giants, it's a good thing. After fusing it with our God Body, we can reach a whole new level."

While he was talking, the other warriors of the Giant Tribe all looked at that Evil Dragon's skull with a great desire in their eyes.

Apparently, each soldier of the Giant Tribe knew the benefits that this skull could bring them.

Evil Dragon was one of the strongest branches of the Dragon Clan. They were famous for their tough body and bones. A level 13 Evil Dragon was extremely rare. It could be compared to an Incipient God Realm expert. The skull was the unbreakable part of the Evil Dragon. To the Giants who were good at physical training, it was the best treasure.

"What else?" asked Shi Yan.

"This lumber has a special, natural texture. If I'm not wrong, it's a piece of Life Ancient Tree of the Wood Clan." Na Xin paused for a while and then explained seriously, "Legends say that the Wood Clan was born by a mysterious ancient tree. They call it the Life Ancient Tree. The power Upanishad the Wood Clan has been cultivating comes from the wood texture of that ancient tree."

"Where is that Life Ancient Tree?" asked Shi Yan.

"I don't know. People say that it disappeared in the ancient time. The wood texture of the Life Ancient Tree is formed naturally. It's not something people could carve. The wood texture is the basic power Upanishad the Wood Clan cultivates. This lumber should be an Original Incipient Grade material. If the Wood Clan fellows could have it and comprehend the mysteries of the wood texture, they would gain supernatural powers."

Na Xin frowned and continued, "I heard that the Wood Clan can use a special method to fuse the lumber of the Life Ancient Tree into their body, which then brings them greater advantages. I think this lumber is the most precious treasure in this world to any member of the Wood Clan."

"How precious?" asked Shi Yan.

Na Xin smiled, not trying to conceal anything, "I think the value of this lumber is enough to exchange for several life stars if we deal with the experts of the Wood Clan."

"Several life stars?" Shi Yan was dumbstruck.

Nodded, Na Xin confirmed, "It's useless to other clans, but it's a unique treasure to the Wood Clan! Intimidating existences of the Wood Clan could go crazy because of it. They could give up everything just to have this lumber!"

Shi Yan was moved, asking again. "How about that book?"

"I'm not sure about it," Na Xin shook his head. "The language in this book is strange. I have never seen or heard about it before."

However, since it could survive tens of thousands of years, it should be miraculous. Unfortunately, we can't understand the words."

"Oh," Shi Yan smiled, "Precursor, you said that we would share all things equally right?"

Na Xin's smile withered. After a long moment, he nodded reluctantly, "Tell me, how do you want to share them?"

"The Evil Dragon's skull, the piece of the Life Ancient Tree of the Wood clan ~" Shi Yan stretched his voice.

Na Xin and the Giants put on a bad countenance. They stooped as if it was their parent's funeral. All were dispirited.

"I want neither of them," Shi Yan added and then pointed at the ancient book, "I want that freaking book."

Na Xin's eyes brightened.

The Giants also cheered loudly. They didn't pretend or hide emotions, showing their real joy and excitement. "You're a good guy!"

"It's for you!" Na Xin flicked his finger to throw the unknown ancient book to Shi Yan as fast as he could as if he was afraid that Shi Yan would change his mind. Then, he hastened to stash away the Evil Dragon's skull and the lumber of the Life Ancient Tree, laughing happily. "Done! You can't change your mind! The Evil Dragon's skull and the lumber belong to me."

The Giant Tribe was well known for their kind nature. They weren't narrow-minded or sinister. They would show their hatred and friendliness on their faces.

It was easy to live with this race.

"We can't take advantage of you," Na Xin was a little embarrassed. Hesitating for a while, he said, "After we could harvest those twenty-three, you guys should take thirteen of them."

It's... the compensation for your loss. Please don't reject it."

"Okay," Shi Yan agreed frankly and forthrightly.

"Tribal Oldie! Tribal Oldie!"

While they had just sealed their deal, an earth-shaking voice arose from the grand mountain of the Giant Tribe. A muscular Giant ran toward them, his body damp with sweat.

After he arrived, he was startled to see the ancient city. Then, he shouted, "Tribal Oldie! Zhen Gu is back! He's wounded severely!"

Na Xin changed his visage, walking out of the city and headed to the grand mountain. He didn't even have time to notify Shi Yan.

All the Giants followed him, cursing and shouting indignantly.

Shi Yan was surprised. Hesitating for a while, he turned to Jester and Li Xiao. "We should go and check it out too."

Chapter 916: The Ransom of Seven Hundred Thousand Divine Crystals

Grand mountain range.

A beefy Giant lay on the ground in the mountain. He looked pale and exhausted.

Standing next to him were five Giant soldiers. They also had wounds all over their body. They stooped not saying anything, their face dismal.

Xiao Man kneeled on the ground; his eyes were watery as he sobbed and called, "Dad."

The Giant Tribe lived in the Old Orchid Star. Their population was just several hundred. Na Xin was the only Tribal Oldie and the one who had the highest realm at the Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm.

Na Xin was the only Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm warrior of the Giant Tribe.

Under his command was Xiao Man's father, Zhen Gu, the current Chief of the Giant Tribe. He had the First Sky of Ethereal God Realm cultivation base. In the Far West of the Agate Star Area, he had quite the reputation.

At this moment, Zhen Gu was hurt severely, which was mainly from the damage in his soul altar. His eyes were dim and reflected no light.

When Shi Yan, Jester, and Li Xiao arrived, Na Xin was frowning, asking the five wounded soldiers to explain the situation.

Listening to the soldiers, Na Xin grimaced as rage filled his eyes.

After Shi Yan had arrived, he just listened, not participating in their conversation.

Shortly after, he knew what had happened.

The Old Orchid Star was in the Far West of the Agate Star Area, one of the most remote areas in this star area. There were around ten life stars near the Old Orchid Star where the members of the Demon Clan and the Monster Clan dwelled.

Besides this Far West area, there was another strange place: Broken Star Field.

Broken Star Field was in the center of the ten life stars in the Far West. Rumor said that it was formed by countless pieces of dead stars. The Broken Star Field was rich with special cultivating materials. Some people used to find Original Incipient Grade materials there.

Because of this reason, many lived around this area and warriors from other regions of the Agate Star Area would also often come to the Broken Star Field to collect materials.

The Giant Tribe often went to the Broken Star Field to find some special materials to exchange for divine crystals or something suitable for their cultivation.

Anyway, the Broken Star Field wasn't a peaceful place. It was very chaotic.

A group of lazy bandits in the Broken Star Field who didn't want to work often robbed the weak forces when they had found something special. This bandit group were dominant forces, so they were confident enough.

Zhen Gu had brought ten Giant soldiers on that trip. They had found a valuable Heaven Fiery Crystal. However, a force came to rob the fruit of their labor before they could harvest the crystals.

Of course, Zhen Gu and the Giants wouldn't let them do that. They burst out fighting. The Giants won.

However, the Giants were always kind and friendly. They didn't destroy the others and instead let them leave. Shortly afterward,

the bandits came back with more support.

They had prepared for a new battle. Zhen Gu and his Giant fellows were beaten up.

Not only did the attackers occupy the Heaven Fiery Crystal mine but they also damaged the Giants badly. They had captured seven Giants and asked Zhen Gu to give one hundred thousand top-quality divine crystals to exchange for one Giant.

If they didn't submit enough divine crystals, they wouldn't let the hostages go. Those Giants would become their mine slaves forever.

That force had two leaders. Both of them were at the Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. Zhen Gu and his Giants weren't their equal opponents. They retreated, defeated.

Zhen Gu had his soul altar damaged badly. His condition was awful and it would take a lot of time to recover. Although they had Na Xin, they had only one Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. If they had to fight, they would be defeated again.

"Seven Giants mean seven hundred thousand top-quality divine crystals. We can't give so many divine crystals like that," one of the wounded soldiers gritted his teeth. "Tribal Oldie, we should risk our lives and fight them! I know where their base is!"

Na Xin was worried. He didn't smile as he used to do. Light sparkled in his eyes continually as if he was considering something.

After a while, Na Xin sighed weakly. "They have two Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm experts. Our tribe has only me at this level. Zhen Gu was able to fight once. But he's hurt now. If we have to fight them, nothing good will happen."

As the tribal oldie of the Giant Tribe, he knew what to consider, which was to protect the Giants. He didn't let anger confuse him.

"But we can never get seven hundred thousand divine crystals!"

One of the others hissed. His eyes were bloodshot like a caged wild beast struggling painfully.

"... Tribal Oldie," Zhen Gu exhaled, his face ashen, "we can't be impulsive... We aren't... their equal matches."

Na Xin forced a smile, "I won't lose my mind. For the future of our tribe, I won't act recklessly."

He sighed. Then, he stepped forward and patted Zhen Gu by his shoulder. Glancing at Xiao Man sobbing, he smiled reluctantly. "Don't worry. I'll handle this. I won't let our fellows be humiliated by becoming the other's slaves."

". . . But seven hundred thousand divine crystals?" Zhen Gu wanted to get up, "Even if we gather all of what we have, we would still lack a lot!"

"We might have no solution if this happened sometime before. However, while you were away, some distinguished guests came," Na Xin glanced at Shi Yan, comforting them. "Don't worry. If I say I can handle it, I won't let our fellow Giants be imprisoned. I promise you!"

Listening to his solemn words, Zhen Gu could ease his mind a little bit. However, he was still confused.

"Take a good rest," Na Xin said weakly and then turned to the other five Giants, "You all too. Go rest and recover well... The children need you to live well."

"Wahhhh! Dad! I swear I will take revenge for you!" Xiao Man cried hoarsely, clenching his fists. His eyes were watery as he said, "I will definitely become stronger. I will kill all of my Dad's enemies!"

"Good boy, good boy... I know... you will be stronger than your old man..." Zhen Gu's tired face was loving. "But you have to promise me that before you are capable, you will never act impulsively!"

"I understand! Dad, I understand! Xiao Man is a good boy!" The teenager nodded resolutely, his young and tender face filled with reverence.

Na Xin sighed inwardly, asking Zhen Gu and the other five Giants to rest. He took around ten Giants, leaving in anger.

"Oldie, no matter what you want to do, we will support you!" the ten Giants were longing for a fight. It was obvious on their kind and honest faces.

The Giant Tribe was never cowardly. Quite the contrary, they were valiant and powerful. The same level warriors weren't equal matches to the Giants.

However, there were two reasons explained why this race wasn't strong enough. First, their population was small. And their reproduction wasn't quick enough.

The other reason was their simple minds. People always took advantage of them. In many battles to compete for materials or other goods, they always fell into the disadvantageous position.

Gradually, they lost cultivating materials while enemies plotted against their members who died on the battlefield. Even if they were strong, with this kind of decrease for tens of thousands of years, they would decline.

Their tribe was gradually declining.

"Absolutely, we won't fight!" Na Xin darkened his visage. "We aren't strong enough. If we lose our members, our number will decrease even more. We've been in the disadvantageous for tens of thousands of years. If we don't change our mindset to be more patient instead of fighting recklessly, our tribe will be extinct."

Listening to him, ten muscular Giants quieted down.

"Little Yan, what do you think?" Na Xin pondered for a while. He couldn't help but turn to Shi Yan.

"If we aren't strong, we can only be patient. When we accumulate enough, it will not be too late to take revenge."

Shi Yan considered for a while and then continued to give his ideas. "We got a big harvest this time. When we can pick up twenty-three Thousand Fold Lotuses, we will bring a tremendous advancement to your Tribe. I think you guys will get stronger shortly. You still have the Evil Dragon's skull and the lumber from the Life Ancient Tree of the Wood Clan. They all can bring you immeasurable benefits. If you have time, you can take revenge after."

"Your Human Clan does have a good vision. Yeah, you... you are the clan that knows how to rest and accumulate power," Na Xin nodded, "I will decide to apply your ideas. I want to sell that lumber from the Life Ancient Tree of the Wood Clan. I think we will have enough divine crystals to pay the ransom for our fellows."

"It's true," Shi Yan smiled.

"I want to go to the Broken Star Field. Are you... interested?" asked Na Xin.

Shi Yan was bewildered.

"The Broken Star Field is the center of the Far West. It has cities and explorers from different races of the Agate Star Area. It's a kind of hustle and bustle type city. I think... After a trip to that place, you will have a better understanding of the Agate Star Area. With only my words, it's hard to understand the area," said Na Xin sincerely.

"It sounds nice. We don't have many things to do here." Shi Yan thought and then nodded with a smile. "Alright, I will go with you. Yeah, I need to arrange my people. I will bring some of them."

"Come here three days later. We will depart."

"Great!"

Shi Yan arrived at their temporary gathering point.

Shi Yan only told Fei Lan, Leona, Yang Tian Emperor, and Long Zhu about the discovery of the Thousand Fold Lotus and the mysterious ancient city. He asked them not to tell anyone else.

Whether it was the mysterious city or the Thousand Fold Lotus, they were critical matters that could drive people crazy with greed.

Many races from Grace Mainland weren't loyal to them. Some were their enemies previously.

If they knew about these things, it was unknown whether they would have different thoughts. They could sell Shi Yan's team out to gain more benefits.

For example, if they told the experts in the other areas of the Agate Star Area, people living in the Old Orchid Star would receive a disaster pouring on their heads.

Then, he told them he wanted to go to the Broken Star Field.

Fei Lan, Leona, Ka Tuo, Yang Tian Emperor, Zi Yao, and Feng Rao also wanted to go to open their eyes to the general situation of the Agate Star Area.

Three days later, Shi Yan brought around ten warriors to the grand mountain of the Giant Tribe. They sat neatly on the Giants' shoulder and departed from the Old Orchid Star to go to the Broken Star Field.

Chapter 917: Yang Tian Emperor is Well Prepared

Including Na Xin, there were four Giants who left the Old Orchid Star. Na Xin was at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm, and the other three were at Third Sky of Original God Realm.

Shi Yan brought nine warriors, including Fei Lan, Leona, Ka Tuo, Carthew, Zi Yao, Feng Rao, Yang Tian Emperor, Long Zhu, and Jester. Including Shi Yan, there were ten members of this team.

Due to the tremendous gravity of the Old Orchid Star, the warriors with low realms, Feng Rao, Yang Tian Emperor, and Long Zhu, couldn't use their powers to get rid of the gravity and jump into space.

However, as soon as they left the Old Orchid Star, the pressure they had to endure disappeared immediately. They calmed down and felt better.

Yang Tian Emperor and Long Zhu had the lowest realm here. They were at Third Sky of True God Realm. They hadn't reached King God Realm yet. It would be hard for them to move in outer space. However, with the coverage by Shi Yan and the others, they were going to be safe and sound.

After they departed the Old Orchid Star, Yang Tian Emperor lifted his head to observe the starry sky in the vast galaxy, sinking into his thoughts.

A desperate, mournful, and begrudging thought diffused from his aura. However, since his eyes brightened shortly afterward, it disappeared.

Brilliant light suddenly twirled around his body as his soul altar spun.

"Eh?" Na Xin glanced at him and then he got frightened. "This kind of power Upanishad is really profound... Look at this energy

fluctuation. I think he will break through soon."

Shi Yan's eyes brightened. He studied Yang Tian Emperor for a while and then frowned, speaking to Jester, "Do you have any suitable pellets to help the warrior break through to King God Realm?"

Jester felt a pain in his heart and he nodded. "Yeah. How many do you want?"

"Cough cough," Long Zhu caught everyone's attention, speaking embarrassedly, "I'm also about to break through. When I was in Grace Mainland, I was just one step away. If the energy there were enough, I would be at King God Realm by now."

Shi Yan was surprised.

When he knew Long Zhu, the old man had already been at the Peak of True God Realm. It was true that he was just one step away from the new realm.

After they had arrived in the Old Orchid Star, Long Zhu had prepared to break through. Seeing Shi Yan asking Jester for pellets, he became thick-skinned to ask for one too.

Jester was a Divine Grade alchemist, the famously talented individual in the Raging Flame Star Area. The pellets he refined were several levels higher than the alchemist of Grace Mainland.

"Give me all that you have!" Shi Yan pondered for a while and then grinned. "I'm just borrowing them. I will pay you back later."

"Of course. I believe you." Jester wasn't so content. However, he still sincerely took out the pellets from his Fantasy Sky Ring. "These bottles have the pellets to nurture the soul and refine the God Body. They should be more than enough for them."

Shi Yan's eyes brightened, smiling. "Alright. Don't show me that face. You will receive more in the future."

Jester became happy. "Remember that you said that. You have to

keep it in your mind!"

"Shi Yan, if you don't have enough pellets, I have some here... You can give them to your great-grandfather," Zi Yao said softly.

Feng Rao was bewildered for a while and then she hastened to say, "I have some too!"

"Ha ha!" Jester laughed happily. "They are going to break through to the King God Realm from the True God Realm. They won't need so many pellets like that. I've given them enough. You girls don't need to do so."

Hearing him, Zi Yao and Feng Rao gave up the thought of giving away their pellets. They glanced at each other and then turned around.

Shi Yan rubbed his nose, pretending to have not seen anything. He divided the pellets that Jester gave him into two proportions and threw them at Yang Tian Emperor and Long Zhu.

As Yang Tian Emperor and Long Zhu were prepared, they didn't hesitate. They opened up the bottle and swallowed the pellets.

After taking in the pellets, just like other warriors when they advanced into the King God Realm, Long Zhu started his process step by step. He began to condense his God Body first.

But Yang Tian Emperor was different.

His body suddenly emitted an immense Blood Qi which was abundant to the acme after he had swallowed the pellets. It seemed like he had absorbed the power from the pellets easily.

An immense energy surged, winding around him like bunches of light.

Yang Tian Emperor closed his eyes, his face solemn. The marvelous Desperate Intent Domain was released. Shortly after, it became the God Domain easily!

Inside his God Domain, Shi Yan, Zi Yao, Feng Rao, Fei Lan,

Leona, and even the members of the Giant Tribe were affected.

A haunting shadow appeared in their mind while thick clouds covered their Sea of Consciousness. A thought of despair arose in their hearts.

"This intent domain is extreme!" Fei Lan couldn't help but hiss. She looked at Yang Tian Emperor with respect. "I have never seen this kind of power Upanishad before!"

Na Xin frowned, observing Yang Tian Emperor for a while. All of a sudden, he shouted, "Despair power! It's the Despair power! My oh my!"

Shi Yan turned his head around, "Precursor, you...?"

"Our Agate Star Area has a legend of a man who had cultivated Despair power. Every time he fell into despair, he became stronger, his power rocketing endlessly. It seemed like he didn't have a limitation. He was the invincible legend of the Agate Star Area. Tens of thousands of years ago, he was the overlord of the star area. I heard that his power was intimidating. He could always challenge people who had higher realms than his. Although he'd disappeared for many years, we still talk about his legends!"

Na Xin took a deep breath, his face solemn as he looked at Yang Tian Emperor. "The Despair power is tough to perceive. No inheritance could generate this power Upanishad. Also, there are no books or scripture about it. Rumor says that only some extreme individuals who are very cruel to themselves can practice this."

The Giants were scared, looking at Yang Tian Emperor with deep fear.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo were also frightened, their faces unnatural.

Yang Tian Emperor was the undying legend in the Endless, the real overlord.

He was the sort of man that Na Xin had mentioned. He was cruel,

ruthless, and extreme to himself to break through a realm. Yang Tian Emperor wasn't afraid to initially intrude the Demon Area, letting Demon Kings Bo Xun and Chi Yan bind him to the great formation of the Demon Clan. He was tortured for many years. He had lived as a skeleton inside that magical formation for dozens of years.

He understood this kind of pain. He wanted to get in there to endure the torture that wasn't designed for humans. He was absolutely an extreme person.

After breaking through to the True God Realm, he had finally comprehended the meanings of despair. When Grace Mainland ran out of power, all people fell into depression.

And Yang Tian Emperor's realm in the most desperate situation was still increasing. Under the given circumstances of an exhausted continent, he had reached Third Sky of True God Realm in a few dozen years.

He was absolutely a genius, one of the most ruthless and extreme kinds of men.

Yang Tian Emperor could break through in a place like Grace Mainland and reach high realms. As soon as he arrived in the Agate Star Area, he burst out his outstanding features because he had accumulated for years for this moment.

Yang Tian Emperor had the Immortal Demon Blood and he understood the mysteries of the Immortal Rebirth Secret. He was terrifically wise, resilient, and persistent. After he had collected all the supplements, he seemed to have made the final step.

The tremendous Blood Qi moved like blood snakes swimming in his body. Shortly after, his body became red like a hot iron. Murky air oozed out from his body.

Yang Tian Emperor's process of refining the God Body was several times faster than that of Long Zhu!

After only one hour, Yang Tian Emperor had finished refining his God Body. He opened his cold eyes. His pupils seemed more capable of putting people into endless despair.

"Do you still have more pellets?" He looked at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan looked at Zi Yao and Feng Rao.

The two women understood. They immediately took out the suitable pellets in their Fantasy Sky Rings. They didn't hand them to Shi Yan but threw them directly at Yang Tian Emperor.

He snatched the pellets, not looking to see what they were, and just swallowed them as if the pellets were beans.

He closed his eyes, murmuring. "I will break through continually."

Everybody was frightened.

Alchemist Jester was confused. "Could he endure so many pellets like that? If the number of pellets he consumes is more than he can endure, he will explode!"

As soon as he finished, his words became true. Yang Tian Emperor immediately shot out blood. His bones cracked loudly.

Beams of blood shot out while his vessels exploded, his bones cracking and releasing marrow...

At this moment, Yang Tian Emperor looked mournful like a wailing ghost. He didn't have any deliberate gleam like in the past.

However, at this moment, he was still cold and ruthless like an ice rock. He didn't seem to feel the pain.

People could even see a crazy, insane smile on his mouth.

A madman!

A crazy devil!

A maniac!

Na Xin, Fei Lan, Leona, and Zi Yao looked at him bewilderedly.

They also had the same thought.

"From the True God Realm, he takes one step to enter the King God Realm, condensing the God Body and the creating the God Domain. He had them done in one vigorous effort and continued to enter the Second Sky of King God Realm. Have you ever seen or heard of anyone like...him?" Carthew felt that his throat was dry, licking his lips and looking at Leona with a forced smile.

Leona was called the crazy devil in Raging Flame Star Area. She furrowed her eyebrows. The scars on her face twitched, her eyes complicated. "No. Never before."

Fei Lan looked at Na Xin.

Na Xin shook his head, giving a forced smile. "It's not very likely. Basically, it's not easy to enter the King God Realm from the True God Realm. Without several years to steady the realm, the warrior can't grasp the needed requirements to open the next door. He's an unusual fellow."

Except for Shi Yan, everybody else was afraid, discussing Yang Tian Emperor's mysterious and magical progress.

"My Great Grandfather was always a hero for his whole life. He had walked the path that people didn't dare to take, thought of things that people didn't dare to think, endured the pain that nobody dared to endure. Of course, nobody could catch up with his attainment." Shi Yan just smiled deliberately.

Under people's attentive looks, Yang Tian Emperor's God Body had broken to a level where it looked like a bloody, shattered skeleton. He looked no different from a corpse. To ordinary people, getting hurt at that level meant that their God Body was completely damaged.

However, after his God Body was burst off, Yang Tian Emperor's heart was still beating vigorously, constantly releasing the immense Blood Qi!

A miracle happened quickly.

His broken vessels wiggled like small snakes, connecting each other. His bones produced new marrow and then they became transparent and shiny like jewels. On his bloody skeleton, new blood and flesh grew rapidly, reviving.

His God Body was closest to a cooperating machine, which was producing blood, flesh, marrow, and vessels.

This was the miraculous recovery power of the Immortal Rebirth Secret.

Apparently, Yang Tian Emperor had a much more profound level in practicing the Immortal Rebirth Secret than Shi Yan. Also, his attainment was much more significant.

Chapter 918: A Long, Lonely journey

In this galaxy, twinkling stars as gorgeous as pieces of broken diamonds shined beautifully in the dark universe.

A group of ten people was moving quickly like shuttles heading to the Far West of the Agate Star Area, the Broken Star Field, created by countless broken stars.

Long Zhu closed his eyes, still condensing his God Body. Just like most of the warriors, he didn't have anything strange happen to him.

Yang Tian Emperor was also breaking through the new realm, but he was very different. Right from the start, he had many unique things happen. The commotion he created was also more significant.

Shi Yan and Na Xin didn't pay much attention to Long Zhu as they were busy watching Yang Tian Emperor.

Time flew hurriedly. Five days passed.

The Despair Intent Domain Yang Tian that Emperor had released had never decreased. It became more refined and powerful. The energy of his power Upanishad was constantly increasing.

People inside his God Domain had their soul altar covered with a dim layer. It was like a ghost peeping on their souls, bringing them despair. They wanted to kill as their minds were all confused and hazy.

Warriors with a lower realm would have their soul shaken. They would carry that imprint of fear and confusion for the rest of their lives.

His God Body had recovered under the power of Immortal Rebirth Secret, which was genuinely terrifying, indeed...

His broken vessels reconnected. Flesh and blood grew on his

healed skeleton. From a bloody skeleton, after several days, he recovered. He didn't look too different from himself before the breakthrough.

Except for Shi Yan, everybody was chilled seeing this.

Undying Body!

This tremendous recovery ability was scarce in the Agate Star Area. No race could reach such level or recovery.

This made people dispirited and hopeless. They thought that Yang Tian Emperor had received favors from God but they didn't know what he had experienced or what he had paid to gain his today's attainment.

Yang Tian Emperor's body refining was finished, but his realm was still progressing.

He stood neatly, as his soul altar quietly spun. The energy of his power Upanishad rolled massively and became more intimidating.

Gradually, Na Xin and Fei Lan felt like they were witnessing something unbelievable. They thought that it was so unreal.

Usually, when the warrior broke through to the new realm, it was hard to grow. However, Yang Tian Emperor had broken this chain. While he was breaking through, it seemed like his realm was increasing unlimitedly. He still slowly and steadily walked forward.

After ten more days...

Yang Tian Emperor's soul altar gradually calmed down. His terrifying God Domain quietly dispersed. People finally felt relaxed a little bit.

Then, Yang Tian Emperor woke up. His visage was calm and natural, his eyes peaceful and quiet.

Although the desperate intent domain that frightened people had disappeared, the feeling that it brought to them was still winding

around their Sea of Consciousness. They always had an unknown pressure that they couldn't describe.

"Great Grandfather, how do you feel...now?" Shi Yan was smiling, asking seriously.

Yang Tian Emperor had something different in his eyes. He nodded, speaking coldly, "Not bad. The Second Sky of King God Realm. Yeah, I've lacked a little bit. Or else, I would have entered one level further."

Listening to him, people had their eyes sparkle strangely as they were perplexed.

"Shi Yan, I'm not going with you guys more," Yang Tian Emperor pondered for a while and then spoke all of a sudden.

Shi Yan was surprised, "Why?"

Yang Tian Emperor turned his head, looking at a place deep in the Agate Star Area, his eyebrows twitching. He spoke faintly, "I don't know why something in this star area has attracted me. While I was breaking through, a vibe came to my soul altar. I think I should go there alone and check it out. Also, I need time to stabilize my realm."

"... Something attracted you?" Na Xin's voice was dry as he had a strange thought. He shook his head to clean that thought away. "Can you tell me more details?"

Shi Yan, Fei Lan, and Leona looked at him in astonishment.

"I can't say," Yang Tian Emperor shook his head, "but I'm sure that this is important to me. It can help me and give me more benefits."

"Then Great Grandpa, you have to be careful. The Agate Star Area isn't similar to our Grace Mainland. There are as many experts as trees in the forest. There are many different races here. Although you've reached the Second Sky of King God Realm, you can't always act rashly. Be cautious," advised Shi Yan.

Of course, he didn't oppose that.

Yang Tian Emperor wasn't a man who acted without a clear target. If he wasn't sure, he would never speak about it. If he spoke about something strange, he definitely understood and confirmed it.

The Agate Star Area was a high-quality star area with endless mysteries. If Yang Tian Emperor could harvest something there, Shi Yan would feel happy for him. He wouldn't stand in his way.

"You should also be careful," Yang Tian Emperor smiled, speaking to him softly, "This star area has many strange things. You always cause trouble, but you're a person of discretion. I hope you will always be watchful and know your goals and direction."

Pausing for a while, he glanced at Long Zhu, not saying more. He nodded to other people and then diverged.

Breaking through to the Second Sky of King God Realm, he could walk into the void without worrying about the energy storm grinding him into powder. When he departed this time, people were all looking for the day he came back.

It was unknown why they all felt that when they saw him again, he would surprise people again.

Yang Tian Emperor's lonely body flashed, dashing into the void and disappeared. Gradually, he became a black spot that blended into the dark universe.

Shi Yan silently looked at him disappear until he couldn't see his Great Grandpa anymore. Then, he turned around, murmuring, "Let's go."

Na Xin and Fei Lan looked at that lonely but brave figure merging into outer space. They nodded, saying nothing more.

However, they had the same thought in their mind...

This extreme man would become another legend of the Agate

Star Area. He was destined to ascend to a high position. From that, he would tower over most of the experts, his light shrouding them.

This feeling had no cause. Thinking about it further, they found that it was almost unimaginable. Anyway, Yang Tian Emperor was just a small warrior at the Second Sky of King God Realm.

Still, both Fei Lan and Na Xin had the same thought. They thought that it was evident that he would reach such height.

The journey from the Old Orchid Star to the Broken Star Field was going to take several months at the speed of the Giants.

Shi Yan's team flew together with Na Xin toward the direction he had told them in the dark, gloomy outer space.

"Precursor, why don't you have a battleship? Isn't it faster to travel using the battleship?" One day, Ka Tuo couldn't help but ask. "In our Raging Flame Star Area, battleships are everywhere. Big and strong battleships could activate the power of the divine crystals to move at breakneck speed. It's more comfortable and the warriors can cultivate inside the battleship. They don't need to consume energy. It's much easier right?"

When Jester and Zi Yao heard Ka Tuo say that, they couldn't help but turn to Na Xin.

Na Xin beamed a forced smile, sighing, "The battleships are the main vehicles in the Agate Star Area. High-level battleships are very dangerous and famous. However... our race is special."

"Why do you said so?" Ka Tuo was curious.

"Most of the battleships in the Agate Star Area aren't suitable for our tribe," Na Xin was a little bit embarrassed. "Our physiques are too huge. There are no suitable battleships for us unless we got it customized. However, the cost would be very high. We don't have much you know."

Ka Tuo understood, "Oh, that's why."

The Giant Tribe were all Giants so they would need a particularly customized battleship. However, it would cost a lot of divine crystals. The Giant Tribe wasn't wealthy enough to afford a battleship like that.

That was why their Tribe had never had a battleship. They had to use their physical power to move in the void.

"How many divine crystals is equivalent to lumber of the Life Ancient Tree? Is it enough to redeem your fellows? And with whom do you do business? Is it safe?" Shi Yan thought and then asked seriously.

Na Xin smiled, "The lumber of the Life Ancient Tree of the Wood Clan is absolutely priceless. I can't assess how much we can exchange for it, but I'm sure it's not just seven hundred thousand divine crystals. And to who we would exchange with, you will know when we arrive at the Broken Star Field. That area has a large-scale exchange market, which is safe and fair."

As he said that, Shi Yan eased his mind and spoke, "Seems you do have a plan, precursor."

"Yes, I have a target," Na Xin didn't conceal anything, "He's called Ai Fu. He's at Second Sky of Original God Realm cultivation which is not really strong. However, he's the owner of the most modern and official exchange market. It's also the safest and fairest market in the Broken Star Field."

Shi Yan was surprised, "If he has only the Second Sky of Original God Realm cultivation base, how can he guard the Broken Star Field? What does he depend on?"

Everybody was curious, but they couldn't explain why.

The Broken Star Field was unique. It was formed by countless pieces of broken stars. It was incredibly vast, hiding magical and dangerous things. It even had some Original Incipient Grade

materials.

Explorers of other races who came to this place could even be at Ethereal God Realm. If Ai Fu had only Second Sky of Original God Realm, how could he stand firm and become the owner of the biggest exchange market?

"He depends on his grandfather who is at the Incipient God Realm," Na Xin said faintly.

People then fell into silence.

"Ai Fu's grandfather has First Sky of Incipient God Realm. He secludes and cultivates somewhere in the Far West region of the Agate Star Area. It has been so many years since he's shown himself. Anyway, in this Far West region, all know about him. As long as he's alive, no one dares to provoke Ai Fu," Na Xin said solemnly. "Moreover, even though Ai Fu's realm isn't high, his entourage isn't bad. They are his grandfather's subordinates. All of them have reached the Ethereal God Realm. One is even at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm."

"Oh," Shi Yan nodded, "He has a powerful background. That's why he isn't afraid of bandits. No wonder why he can still stand in the Broken Star Field."

"But I don't like this man. He is too cunning," Na Xin sighed. "If we do business with him, he will definitely skin us. I have a headache thinking about this. Sigh."

"How about you let me do business for you?" Shi Yan contemplated for a while and then said seriously, "You Giants are famous for your natural characteristics. It would be better if you let us do the business on behalf of you."

Na Xin's eyes brightened. He pondered and then nodded.

Chapter 919: Blood Halberd

A battleship made of some jade-like, transparent bones more than two thousand meters long and four hundred meters wide was moving silently in the void.

Lines of bone pillars stood along both sides of the battleship. A warrior was tied to each pole by some kind of beast's tendon. There were several thousand warriors and most of them were at True God Realm or King God Realm.

The battleship emerged from a dark area, flying towards the Broken Star Field.

Shi Yan and Na Xin's team came from another direction. They met each other here all of a sudden.

That battleship had a hexagonal flag, which drew a symbol of a trident made of three bloody swords. It seemed to represent some force.

"Troopers of 'Blood Halberd,' a force in the Far West region. This force is formed by many members of different races. It's a potent force in the Broken Star Field. They often send mine slaves to exploit ores." Na Xin glared at the battleship and slowly explained, "Troopers of Blood Halberd are tough. People in the Far West region don't like them since they are multiracial and they don't have a limit in their operations."

Along the journey, Na Xin had explained to Shi Yan about the outline of forces and components of this Far West region, giving him a better understanding of the area.

The Far West region had many races living together. It had Demon Clan, mighty Monster Clan, many Human Tribes, and the exclusive pagans of the Agate Star Area. The Demon Clan and Monster Clan here were the relatively intimidating branches with different organizations. Blood Halberd was one of them, a famous

one, anyway.

The Master of Blood Halberd was an expert at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm, a brutal character of the Far West.

This man recruited experts from different races. He didn't mind this. As long as his troopers dedicated their efforts, no matter what they've done, he would still use them.

That battleship belonged to the Master of Blood Halberd.

"The closer we get to the Broken Star Field, the more battleships we will encounter heading there. Blood Halberd is just one of them. We will see more," explained Na Xin.

Shi Yan smiled.

As they were heading to the same destination, Shi Yan's team was getting closer to that battleship. After a while, they could even see the warriors who were tied to the pillars.

"Ge Bu!" All of a sudden, Feng Rao changed her face, hissing.

She focused, taking a deep breath and watching the battleships and the warriors tied there. She grimaced. "Lu Xiu, Po Nan, Arthur..."

Feng Rao's soft body shivered, "They are Blue Demon's pirates!"

Hearing her, Shi Yan became grim, frowning. The light in his eyes looked so real as he focused on the battleship.

Those Blood Halberd's mine slaves were tied by beast tendon on the bone poles. There were thousands of them. However, they could spot some familiar faces: the pirates who had been with them.

Shi Yan darkened his face.

When they came here from God Perishing Land, Shi Yan's team and Fei Lan arrived in the same area while Feng Ke and Fan He didn't land on the Old Orchid Star.

They didn't expect to meet the others in this place. However, their friends' condition wasn't good...

"Do you know those people?" Na Xin lowered his voice and asked. Shi Yan nodded.

"They will be pathetic," Na Xin was serious. "The Blood Halberd troopers will bring them to the most dangerous area to exploit ores. One out of ten survives with the best luck. I think half of them will die and the other half who survive will be imprisoned and sent to the more dangerous area. Eventually, no one will be left alive."

Listening to him, Feng Rao paled. "My father... He might be there too!"

"Yeah. He's tied on the other side of the battleship. They are especially watching him. Their jailers are... Ao Gu Duo's team" said Fei Lan.

She was at Ethereal God Realm so she could observe the blind corner where Shi Yan and the others couldn't see using a unique method. "Almost all of the Pirates who survived God Perishing Land are confined on the battleship. But Ao Gu Duo and Fan He's teams aren't tied down. They must have followed the other."

Feng Rao's soft body shivered. Tears lingered in her eyes as she looked at Shi Yan.

"Precursor," Shi Yan pondered for a while and then asked Na Xin sincerely, "How powerful is Blood Halberd?"

"It's famous in the Far West region. Our Giants don't want to provoke them. What do you want?" Na Xin frowned.

"You guys sense the battleship to see which is the highest realm the warriors have there?" Shi Yan turned to Fei Lan.

Fei Lan closed her eyes to sense.

Na Xin pondered for a while and then started to sense.

Shortly after, Na Xin spoke up, "One warrior at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm."

"Yeah, that is also what I found," said Fei Lan.

"Please save my father. Shi Yan, please. I'm begging you!" Feng Rao begged him. Tears rolled down on her face.

"Precursor!" Shi Yan bent his body, asking seriously, "Please give us a hand!"

He looked at Fei Lan.

Fei Lan kept silent for a while and then nodded, "I have no problem with that. But if Oldie Na Xin doesn't help us, we can't endure it."

Everybody looked at Na Xin.

Na Xin furrowed his brows tightly. "This battleship has only one First Sky of Ethereal God Realm expert, but the Blood Halberd's competence isn't this simple. We don't want to provoke them. Sigh, give me more time to think."

The other side of the battleship.

Feng Ke was tied to a bone pole, his hair disheveled, his face dusty, and his eyes exhausted. Blood trickled down from the corner of his mouth. He seemed to have gotten badly hurt.

Not far from him were more pirates tied to the bone poles. They couldn't even wiggle. The beast tendon squeezed, sinking into their flesh. The more they struggled, the more blood shot out. It was utterly painful.

Ao Gu Duo clasped his fists, standing aside and sneering. "Feng Ke, think about it. If you follow Blood Halberd, at least you won't die. Your realm isn't low. Haha, if you don't want to, you won't avoid this perishing fate."

Monica, one of the Commanders of the Underworld League,

smiled seductively, "Feng Ke dage, you should think about it, really. As long as you can survive, why do you care about so many things? This place isn't the Raging Flame Star Area. You don't need to consider your reputation too much."

A gleam of brutal resentment sparkled in Feng Ke's tired eyes. "I will say the same. I will follow you if you free all of my brothers. I don't want them to be mine slaves!"

"We reported to our Master. He doesn't agree." Monica sighed. "Your brothers have low realms. They aren't worth his attention. At the same time, he's short on mine slaves. However, he guarantees that warriors at Second or Third Sky of King God Realm can be like you. They don't need to work as mine slaves. As long as you give us a nod."

"No!" Feng Ke shook his head persistently. "Unless all of my brothers are safe, I will never agree!"

"You dumb stubborn-headed idiot! I won't care about you anymore. You deserve it!" Monica snorted and then moved away swiftly and gently as if she was dancing. She put on an inviting smile when she came to talk to a lanky Dark Spirit Clan man.

That man was the one in charge of this battleship, the only First Sky of Ethereal God Realm warriors, Tu Feng.

"Little beauty, what did he say?" Tu Feng smiled until his eyes narrowed. He stretched out his hand, striking Monica's waist, which was as slim as a bee's waist. "You're looking delicious. When we get to the Broken Star Field, I will give you something good."

"Then I have to thank you in advance, dage." Monica smiled charmingly. However, she spoke to him begrudgingly, "He is the same. He wants us to let all of his brothers live well. That is how he will agree to follow us."

"This man fails to appreciate my kindness?!" Tu Feng sneered, "Our Master needs more mine slaves. What's good keeping his

trash brothers? Of course, they will become mine slaves! If I didn't consider his competence, I would have killed him already. Okay, when we arrived at the Broken Star Field, if he's still stubborn, he will become a mine slave too. I'll let him die in the most dangerous area."

"Dage, you have to love me. You have to say good things about me to our Master. I don't want to do laborious work." Monica said charmingly as she proactively stepped forward like a slithering water snake. Her milky breasts caressed Tu Feng's arm.

Tu Feng enjoyed it, his smile becoming lecherous. "Don't worry. How can I let you work hard? I don't even dare to use more force to protect you when you're in my arms."

Monica felt content. Her smile bloomed invitingly, her bearings seducing.

"If I help you, I will bear the flame of energy from the Master of Blood Halberd. It will bring disaster on the heads of our clansmen," Na Xin pondered for a while and then forced a smile, shaking his head continually.

"Who will know about this?" Shi Yan was surprised.

"Of course, they will know. After we rescued them, someone will leave and report to their superior," said a Giant uneasily.

"Haven't you suffered enough?" Shi Yan put on a cold and harsh visage, his eyes chilled. "Did I say I would let them leave alive? You Giants are nice and kind, but I'm not. If I want to attack, I won't spare anyone. I won't let the news spread."

Na Xin and the Giants changed their countenance.

"There are almost one hundred of them. Do you want to kill them all? You... how could you?" the Giant spoke again.

"Precursor, I only need your help with one thing," Shi Yan took a

deep breath, "You help us hold that First Sky of Ethereal God Realm warrior back. You confine him for a while. Just leave the rest to us."

Since Fei Lan was at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm, when the strongest expert of the opponent was held down, even if they had one hundred members, they wouldn't be able to resist Shi Yan's slaughter. Leona at Third Sky of Original God Realm also provided powerful support. She could damage them severely in just a blink.

As he knew each other's competence, Shi Yan was confident.

"If you just need me to... restrain that one for a while, oh okay. I can help you." Na Xin frowned, "But we won't help you massacre people. It's hard for us to kill weak people unless it's to defend ourselves."

"Okay then," Shi Yan's face became colder. Turning to Fei Lan, he said, "I hope you guys can clear them all."

"How about Ao Gu Duo and the others?" Carthew said softly, "He used to be a member of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation."

"Kill! I'll do it myself!" Shi Yan said without any hesitation. He grinned, "It's time to accomplish my pledge from that year."

Chapter 920: Today, I Come to Fulfill My Pledge!

More than ten years ago in Purgatory Star, he used to exaggerate that he would kill Ao Gu Duo in one hundred years.

That year, people thought he was crazy. They felt that he didn't care about logic and that his bragging would never be fulfilled.

Today, he'd reached Original God Realm. Although he was still one level behind Ao Gu Duo, he believed that he had the competence to hunt Ao Gu Duo down.

It was time to fulfill his pledge.

Tribal Oldie Na Xin asked his Giant fellows to leave this scene. They silently moved pretty far from the battleship so that people there wouldn't see them.

Then, Na Xin closed his eyes, spinning his soul altar. The Ethereal Extent flew out from his Sea of Consciousness, slowly shrouding the battleship.

On the battleship, Tu Feng was teasing Monica, thinking of finding a quiet place to have a better talk with this inviting woman.

All of a sudden, Tu Feng changed his countenance slightly, lifting his head to watch the sky. Flames of anger sparked in his eyes.

"Damn Giant! He dares to mess with me! You don't know how to live well, right!" Tu Feng snorted, pushing Monica aside and then sitting down cross-legged.

His Ethereal Extent was also released, flying up. It was a vast forest with thick Wood energy fluctuation. Huge trees grew fast. In just a blink, they filled the space on the battleship.

When Ethereal God Realm experts fought, they depended mostly on the Ethereal Extent. These two weren't an exception.

Tu Feng's Ethereal Extent pushed Na Xin's Ethereal Extent. Trees and vines in the forest wanted to entangle Na Xin's Ethereal Extent like countless tentacles.

Mountains appeared in Na Xin's Ethereal Extent from thin air. They heavily pressed down little by little.

Boom Boom Boom!

Giant trees exploded in Tu Feng's Ethereal Extent. The Ethereal Extent seemed to collapse simultaneously. The forest he had created was reduced instantly.

He put on a cold countenance and couldn't help but hiss. "You are the one and only Tribal Oldie of the Giant Tribe! Damn! You dare to attack me!"

The Ethereal Extent pressed down, subduing his soul altar. The mountain ranges fell with a grumble on his head. They acted like a magical formation subduing Tu Feng's God Body, preventing him from retaking action.

On the battleship, Feng Ke lifted his head, dully looking at the sky with a strange face.

Many pirates also had hope while being tied to the bones. They were waiting for something discreetly.

Once they entered the Broken Star Field, they would become mine slaves of Blood Halberd. They would never see hope for the rest of their lives as they were now little pawns in the most dangerous areas. They would die one by one.

No matter who the attacker was, that person had brought them a good chance to escape.

Ao Gu Duo was also startled. He shivered inwardly while looking at the sky above his head. "An Ethereal God Realm expert... who is that?"

As he was at Second Sky of Original God Realm, he knew that the

battle between Ethereal God Realm warriors had things to do with the Ethereal Extent. However, he couldn't resist the power of Nature to recognize Na Xin's existence.

He couldn't see Na Xin, but he saw a man he knew. Ao Gu Duo's face darkened, unable to hold down his fear, shouting. "Shi Yan!"

A shadow emerged from the dark place. He was moving at breakneck speed with a huge sword and torrential Blood Qi. He brought with him a vast sea of blood, slashing down on Ao Gu Duo directly and coldly.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Carthew also showed themselves. They all urged their power Upanishads.

Due to their low realms, Feng Rao and Long Zhu didn't join this battle. The other three Giants protected them, keeping them far away from the fight.

While Fei Lan was moving, thumb-sized flows of gray air, which was corrosive air, fell on the battleship. They moved, searching targets proactively as if they all had intellect.

The warriors who were attacked by the corrosive air became baffled. As their bodies were eroded from the inside, their soul altars slowed down. They couldn't escape.

Leona had ruthless, slaughtering eyes. When she came, her God Body engulfed all the light.

She waved her hand and a dark vortex descended like a massive black sun, covering some warriors. In the absolute darkness, the warriors became perplexed. Their soul altar and the Sea of Consciousness had fallen into the dark. They couldn't sense or recognize anything.

In the absolute darkness, Leona was like a fish swimming in water. She took lives as if she was a Dark Death.

Zi Yao, Carthew, and Ka Tuo also joined this attack. They were lucid, slaughtering some warriors at Second or Third Sky of King

God Realm. Their operation was resolute and heartless as they didn't have a bit of hesitation.

"Shi Yan! It's Shi Yan!"

The pirates shouted in thrill.

Feng Ke heard that, shouting as he was very excited. "I'm here!"

Holding the divine sword, Shi Yan moved like a blood light. He appeared next to Ao Gu Duo, speaking calmly. "You almost killed me in the Purgatory Star. I used to pledge that I would take the head on your neck in one hundred years. Today, I have come to fulfill my pledge."

Ao Gu Duo's face was savage, his body trembling. "You think it's enough to kill me when you've reached Original God Realm? Funny!"

"Haha. What I know best is to kill the one whose realm is a little higher than mine." Shi Yan grinned, his smile icy. The divine sword in his hand had its eyes opened. Radiant blood light moved, sending blood scent to the air.

"Space Imprisonment!"

His power Upanishad changed. The God Domain appeared.

Crack Crack Crack!

Pieces of space were confined, but the blood light released by the divine sword was still brilliant. Its red hue looked so intimidating.

Touching his forehead, another soul of Shi Yan urged its power. Ten bright flames shot out from his glabella and eyes. The strange, mighty flaming power wound around Ao Gu Duo.

Ao Gu Duo was frightened.

He couldn't activate his God Domain and his soul altar was also stagnant.

"ARGHHHHH!"

Ao Gu Duo roared. His bones cracked and exploded. Shortly, his body was covered in blood as he forcefully struggled to get rid of the space confinement.

However, at this moment, the blood sea stretching out from the divine sword swarmed over with wild, savage negative power, shrouding Ao Gu Duo's body.

The blood eyes on the broadsword seemed to have a negative effect on people's souls. Ao Gu Duo had just glanced at them and his spirit was broken. His Sea of Consciousness seemed to become a blood sea. The negative energy affected each of his wisps of Soul Consciousness. He couldn't activate his powers.

Swish Swish!

A massive, bloody hand seal descended from the sky like a grumbling blood mountain pressing on Ao Gu Duo.

Boom Boom!

Ao Gu Duo's skeleton cracked and echoed more explosions. His body was covered in blood, as he looked helter-skelter.

"Slash!"

As he swung the divine sword, a blood lightning strike that stretched one thousand meters away crossed the blood sea, drawing a beautiful, deadly curve in the air.

Ao Gu Duo faced the sky, roaring, and hissing. He continually released his power Upanishad to resume his soul altar's rotational movement.

However, under the gazes of the blood eyes on the sword, his soul altar was pressed tightly by an evil force. It couldn't even move.

Ao Gu Duo's God Body stayed put, letting the blood light ribbon of the divine sword cut through it.

Crack Crack!

His God Body exploded!

Shi Yan's eyes were calm. He looked like a numb onlooker, floating in the blood sea and continually swinging the sword in his hand.

Boom Boom Boom!

The cracks and explosions of the bones resounded faster. Ao Gu Duo, a Second Sky of Original God Realm expert, had his God Body like a vulnerable chunk of tofu under the divine sword.

Shortly after, his God Body became cubes of meat that fell on the floor.

Touching his forehead, the black hole in Shi Yan's soul altar emerged. It snatched down like a massive dark bowl, covering a piece of Ao Gu Duo's God Body.

A powerful suction force dragged Ao Gu Duo's soul altar that was emerging from that block of meat immediately. It didn't have a second to resist. It was sucked into the center of the black hole, vanishing.

His soul and body were both extinguished!

Although Ao Gu Duo was at Second Sky of Original God Realm when he faced Shi Yan, he didn't even have the chance to use his power Upanishad. Shi Yan killed him simply.

Feng Ke stood by them, watching the scene. He felt numb as a chill-to-bone air blew his soul.

He was also at Second Sky of Original God Realm, but he wasn't... as strong as Ao Gu Duo. If Shi Yan could kill Ao Gu Duo easily, it wouldn't be a hard task for him to kill him too.

He remembered the first time he met Shi Yan. How long has it passed? When did he become so powerful?

Feng Ke took a deep breath to press down the mess in his head, asking hastily. "Where's Feng Rao?"

"She's fine. Don't worry." Shi Yan chuckled, "Let me free you from

your bind."

"It's dragon tendon! Can you?" Feng Ke screamed in surprise.

Shi Yan didn't answer. He acted to show him. His wrist flickered, controlling the divine sword to cut the tendon easily.

Feng Ke was startled. "What a sharp sword!"

"Haha. If you are free, would you mind killing all the ones who have jailed you and your brothers here?" smiled Shi Yan.

"Alright!" Feng Ke stretched his body. Thunderbolts flashed around his body. He joined the battle immediately.

Shi Yan chuckled, cocked his head to see the divine sword. "You... should be at Original Incipient Grade, right..."

"Shi Yan! Shi Yan!" A female shrilled, calling for him from afar. She sounded pathetic and hasty.

Shi Yan turned around, finding Bi Rou. She was shivering, looking at Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo. They didn't show mercy to anyone. Their attacks were all lethal. Many warriors she knew were killed in front of her.

Frowning, Shi Yan exhaled. "Spare Bi Tian's people."

That year, Bi Tian had given him face and spared Ka Tuo and his brothers. When they were in Heaven Punishment City, Bi Tian had treated him well. From the beginning to the last moment, he just wanted to recruit Shi Yan. He even wanted to use his beloved daughter to create a relationship with him.

Shi Yan had a good feeling about this man. Thus, he said that to save his people.

He had actually saved Bi Tian and his people from this kalpa.

Fei Lan and Leona didn't kill Bi Tian's warriors. They then became the survivors of this great disaster.

Chapter 921: You're Dead...

The battle happened faster than Shi Yan thought.

On this battleship, the strongest warrior was the person at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm. Na Xin had subdued him right from the start. As he couldn't wiggle, he had no free time to care about others.

Fei Lan was also at Ethereal God Realm. She could kill almost all the warriors in this battle except for that guy.

The battle favored one side.

Only Fei Lan herself could trouble the Blood Halberd on this battle, making it seem as if the sky was falling on their heads. She had killed half of them.

Leona was at Third Sky of Original God Realm with an extraordinary power Upanishad. She was infamous for raising blood showers wherever she passed. She had massacred many times in the dark.

Shi Yan killed Ao Gu Duo and then ran around the battleship to absorb Essence Qi of the dead. He released the black hole to swallow the soul altar from the dead too.

After he had reached Original God Realm, seven hundred twenty acupuncture points in his body had upgraded. Now, he could absorb more Essence Qi.

On his way, Essence Qi flowed into him like currents of a flood. His acupuncture points took all of them.

It felt so good! He had never had such a feeling before.

The black hole swallowed the soul altars and refined them, releasing pure energy and giving a tonic to his soul altar. It made his soul altar comfortable and refreshed.

He guided a part of that kind of energy to the Blood Vein Ring. He

knew that the ring needed it. When the Ring Spirit woke up, it could give him further direction for his development.

A graceful figure ran away from the back deck of the battleship, trying to sneak towards the Broken Star Field's direction.

Shi Yan was startled. He hissed and then dashed after her.

Swinging the divine sword, the blood sea emerged again. It looked like countless clusters of blood clouds blocking that figure.

Shi Yan flashed and then disappeared like a beam of blood light. He reappeared in that blood sea.

"Where are you going?" Holding the huge sword, he stared at that woman, asking coldly.

"Little brother, why do you need to kill us all? I don't have any grudge against you guys... You... please show me mercy?" Monica's charming face shivered, trying to look vulnerable. "I'm also a pitiful warrior. Everybody comes from the Raging Flame Star Area right? Just consider that we used to be on the same side."

"Sorry, I have my reasons to kill you. This time... I can't make mistakes." Shi Yan shook his head, his eyes cold.

Strange light sparkled in Monica's beautiful eyes. She suddenly danced at her spot, her thin silky dress floaty. She looked stunningly charming, licking her succulent red lips and trying to be cute, "Let me serve you..."

She cocked her head, beaming a beautiful smile. She was like a flame attempting to enter masculine bodies and give men the best sensual pleasure.

On the other side of the battleship, Fei Lan threw a glance, frowning. "That slut knows Mind power Upanishad and seducing technique. That kid is indeed vigorous. Can he stand it?"

She was asking Leona.

"He'll be alright," Leona's eyes were gloomy and cold. "As he has

inherited the strongest power Upanishad, his mind should be firm enough. If he sinks in that seducing technique, it means that our precursor was wrong about him."

Fei Lan nodded. "Yeah, that's true. When he killed Ao Gu Duo, he made it clear and clean. He didn't look like a fool. Okay then. We won't care about him. We should start chewing the toughest bone."

Leona nodded.

Immediately, they looked at Tu Feng, the First Sky Ethereal God Realm expert who was sitting cross-legged.

Tu Feng was bound by Na Xin's Ethereal Extent. At this moment, he was enduring with pain. Sweat beaded his forehead. It looked like he was trying his best to resist.

Fei Lan and Leona exchanged looks and then moved like ghosts towards Tu Feng. Their Corrosive power Upanishad and Dark power Upanishad were released almost at the same time, looming over Tu Feng.

Tu Feng's body shook. He opened his eyes wide as a cruel smile appeared on the corner of his mouth.

Boom!

The mountains floating above his God Body pressed down with the weight of billions of jin. (1 jin = 0.5 kg = 1,1 lbs) Boom!

Tu Feng's God Body exploded. He became exhausted immediately, thundering at the void. "Na Xin! You court death! The Giant Tribe will come to an end because of your actions today!"

Na Xin's eyes became cold while he was floating in a dark place in the void. He was struggling inwardly.

"If he dies, your Giant Tribe can avoid a disaster. If he's alive, you guys will have a lot of trouble!" Feng Rao was calm, giving a suggestion. "You're on it. Why do you have to tie your hands? For

the future of the Giant Tribe, I think... he must die!"

Na Xin was struck. He finally got it and nodded, "Alright. I'm going to break the rules that the Giant Tribe has kept for tens of thousands of years. I will kill him!"

He finally used his power.

Transparent sharp sabers with the power of Five Elements were formed in his Ethereal Extent.

Abruptly, countless sabers darted from the sky like a sprinkle, thrusting Tu Feng's God Body.

Fei Lan looked solemn as the erosive energy was shot out from her ten fingers. It looked like she had released ten eccentric snakes winding around Tu Feng.

Leona squinted, slapping the air. A Dark Sky descended, hanging above Tu Feng's head.

Tu Feng's Sea of Consciousness had no light remaining. His soul and the soul altar seemed to have separated. They lost the rotary connection.

This meant that Tu Feng was officially over. He had no hope of surviving.

On the other side of the battleship, Monica was so inviting as she gently got undressed, showing her snow-white, flawless body that looked like a piece of dazzling, exquisite porcelain art.

She was dancing swiftly. Layers of soul energy rippled and surged. Beautiful sceneries appeared in her God Domain. Many maidens in different bearings emerged. They were trying to show their best attractive features as if they wanted to drag any man into their warm, soft, and fragranced body and never leave.

Her Mind power Upanishad could put the warrior's mind in disarray and sink his soul and Sea of Consciousness.

"Is this fun?" Shi Yan asked calmly. The divine sword in his hand

shot out a beam of blood light, which then shattered the beautiful sceneries with the charming maidens.

"Soul Bind!"

Shi Yan's eyes were garnet with a devil light. Negative energy gushed out like a raging flood as he attacked Monica.

Only with the first look at his eyes, Monica felt like she had fallen into an endless blood sea. She wiggled in the dense blood plasma hopelessly.

Although she used Mind power Upanishad, she was affected by Shi Yan's negative moods. She couldn't keep her mind clear and sound anymore.

She didn't know that Shi Yan had absorbed a lot of Essence Qi from the dead in this battle. His seven hundred and twenty acupuncture points had generated abundant and dense negative moods like a vast sea. He was about to crack.

Her appearance drained Shi Yan. As they were gazing at each other, the multiplied negative moods were sent directly to Monica.

Ordinary people couldn't endure so many negative moods at the same time. Monica understood Mind power Upanishad, so her sensibility was much more powerful. It meant that she had to bear multiplied energy of the negative moods.

Monica couldn't stabilize her soul, sinking in the illusion of the blood sea. She couldn't use her own energy to get rid of it.

"You're dead," Shi Yan lowered his voice, muttering. His voice brought negative moods, overflowing Monica's Sea of Consciousness.

Monica's eyes became gloomy. Her vitality drifted away rapidly. Her smooth, soft body gradually paled, losing its blush that showed good health.

Her vitality seemed to be drained away. She didn't feel anything

and she looked as if she was happy to die.

Shortly after, her charming body was as pale as a sheet of white paper. The last beam of light in her eyes vanished.

Her soul altar was struggling in the sea of blood, unable to fly away. Shi Yan released his black hole to engulf her soul altar.

She was at the same realm with Ao Gu Duo and Shi Yan could also take her life away easily. He had used the negative energy to intrude her soul altar and the Sea of Consciousness. Slowly, he snatched her vitality. Monica turned into a cold corpse.

Floating in front of Monica, Shi Yan squinted while taking in Essence Qi that gushed out from her dead body. He left immediately without a bit of hesitation, returning to the battleship.

On the battleship, Tu Feng was covered by darkness. He was corroded and subdued by the Ethereal Extent. Being killed was just a matter of time.

Holding the divine sword in his hand, he walked between piles of corpses. His wrist flickered as he freed the pirates from their binds.

He suddenly paused.

Standing ahead of him were Bi Tian, Allard, and Bi Rao. They were looking at him bewilderedly.

Staying by Bi Tian, alchemist Jester frowned as he got absorbed into his thoughts.

"Why did you follow them?" Shi Yan sighed.

Bi Tian turned around to look at Allard and Bi Rao, speaking calmly, "I wanted to seize a chance for them to survive. If I followed them, they don't need to work. Of course without them, perhaps I would have still followed them. I'm a weak warrior and weak warriors have to depend on the strong ones to survive. I had no choice."

Shi Yan kept silent.

"I will remember your favor today." Bi Tian looked at him, speaking seriously, "If I can survive, I will pay you back for your favor. I believe that if I have time, even if I'm in the Agate Star Area, I can still thrive."

"If you don't mind, you can go to the Old Orchid Star. My fellows are all there," invited Shi Yan.

"Okay, I have no place to go anyway," Bi Tian smiled begrudgingly.

Pausing for a while, he looked at Jester and then spoke all of a sudden, "Jester had contacted me when I was in Heaven Punishment City. He used to receive favors from the Hegemon of the Underworld League. Of course, it's not important today, but I still wanted to tell you that."

Shi Yan was surprised.

Jester woke up from his thoughts, smiling embarrassedly. "I followed the Hegemon for a while. I departed with you guys as he had asked me. However, I can't return to the Raging Flame Star Area now. I hope you won't mind things in the past."

He was an insider of the Underworld League among the Pirates. They had plotted something. However, man proposes and God disposes of. Nothing would matter now.

"It's okay. You should follow me from now on," Shi Yan chuckled.

Chapter 922: Energy Divergence

Crack Crack Crack!

Tu Feng's God Body exploded.

A powerful tearing force expanded from Tu Feng's body. The shockwave crushed some pirates into pieces.

Shi Yan discolored and he couldn't help but shout, "All retreat from this battleship!"

Carthew, Zi Yao, Feng Rao, and the others were frightened. They immediately jumped off the battleship. Feng Ke and the pirates ran helter-skelter. Shortly after, most of the people on the battleship had run away.

Only Shi Yan, Fei Lan, Ka Tuo, and Leona stayed.

Boom!

Tu Feng's body was like glass falling on the ground. Fine cracks appeared first. Then, the entire body shattered like the ground jade. His bones were still glowing.

Endless Essence Qi gushed out like water, discreetly congregating in Shi Yan's acupuncture points.

His seven hundred and twenty acupuncture points dissolved Essence Qi like massive seas. The vortex in each acupuncture point was revolving madly.

Under Shi Yan, Na Xin, and Fei Lan's cooperation, Tu Feng, a First Sky of Ethereal God Realm expert, couldn't resist any longer. His God Body collapsed first.

The Ethereal God Realm warriors had tremendous energy in their bodies. Shi Yan with his wide-open acupuncture points was almost overloaded. He had to concentrate to keep his mind lucid.

Although his God Body had exploded, his Ethereal Extent and the soul altar weren't killed yet. They struggled to get through Na Xin's

barrier.

Fei Lan's corrosive energy turned into many gray lines like thousands of ropes tying down Tu Feng's soul altar.

Leona released Dark power Upanishad, which ghostly covered all the light. Tu Feng's Sea of Consciousness was now a pitch black place, preventing him from connecting with his soul.

Na Xin's Ethereal Extent snatched down from the sky, affecting the entire space. Tu Feng couldn't sneak away.

At this moment, Shi Yan opened his eyes wider as he was apparently reluctant.

He had never devoured the soul altar at Ethereal God Realm before. He understood that once he swallowed Tu Feng's soul altar and refined it, it would be a great help to him.

However, he wasn't so sure if he could endure it or not. If it was greater than his endurance, the effect would perhaps be reversed.

He was hesitant, struggling in his mind.

"We can't let his soul altar flee. Or else, all of us wouldn't be able to escape Blood Halberd's pursuit." Leona shouted with a cold, brutal face. "Crush his soul altar!"

Fei Lan and Na Xin had tried their best to break Tu Feng's soul altar. However, Tu Feng's realm was profound at Ethereal God Realm. After his soul altar had left his God Body, it could temporarily get rid of rules of Nature. If he tried his best to flee, Na Xin wouldn't be able to blockade him completely.

Seeing that Tu Feng's soul altar was about to get rid of Na Xin's confinement, Shi Yan finally made up his mind begrudgingly.

Touching his glabella, his three-tiered soul altar flew out. An evil aura emitted from the black hole in his soul altar while it was enlarging. It looked like a dark mouth, forcefully swallowing Tu Feng's soul altar.

Under that evil aura, Tu Feng's spinning soul altar halted.

Tu Feng's Ethereal Soul was so frightened as if it could sense some danger. It hissed inaudibly, activating all kinds power.

However, no matter how compelling his power Upanishad was, it couldn't help him flee away. The entire four-tiered soul altar was pulled into the black hole that was created by Shi Yan.

The Original Soul on Shi Yan's soul altar suddenly projected a malicious blood light from the blood mark on its forehead. The evil energy that could affect people's mind rippled, engulfing Tu Feng's four-tiered soul altar.

Tu Feng's aura disappeared completely right at the moment that the black hole devoured his soul altar.

Fei Lan and Leona were also frightened because of the evil power Shi Yan had just performed.

Tu Feng was dead. His soul altar and God Body were gone. Shi Yan had taken in the Essence Qi from his God Body and the soul energy from his soul altar.

A disorderly energy emitted from Shi Yan's God Body. Each of his acupuncture points was shivering. Negative energy diffused thickly. His skeleton resounded cracking sounds unceasingly as if he had firecrackers installed in his body.

Boom!

The headband on Ka Tuo's forehead suddenly exploded, revealing a blood mark.

Boom!

The same blood mark appeared on Leona's forehead.

Fei Lan emerged right after her.

The wrinkles on her forehead stretched as the identical blood mark emerged visibly...

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

Beams of blood light shot out from Shi Yan's seven hundred and twenty acupuncture points. They turned into pure energy, flowing to the blood mark on the forehead of Ka Tuo, Leona, and Fei Lan.

At the same time, bright light dots filled Shi Yan's soul altar. They were vigorous vitality. The crystal clear soul altar also entered the blood marks on their forehead like fireflies.

The three of them were worried as they didn't know what was happening.

However, when the blood light and soul energy light dogs entered their blood mark, their eyes brightened up instantly. They were thrilled.

From Shi Yan as the fountain, blood light from his acupuncture points and the soul energy from the black hole in his soul altar diverged into four beams: one flooded Shi Yan's body, and the other three poured into the other three's blood marks respectively.

Fei Lan took most of the mysterious energy, and then Leona. Ka Tuo and Shi Yan had received almost the same proportion.

The four of them all had the same blood mark. However, the other three had their marks on their forehead while Shi Yan had it on his Original Soul.

Apparently, Shi Yan was the giver. He kept and gave away energy. Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo had received the excess energy that Shi Yan couldn't absorb.

There were around one hundred warriors on the Blood Halberd battleship and many of them were at King God Realm. They had around ten Original God Realm experts and one Ethereal God Realm expert, which was Tu Feng. After they had been killed, Shi Yan had discreetly harvested their Essence Qi and soul altars.

It seemed like he couldn't take in such an enormous amount of surging energy.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo shared something in common with him. All of them had the identical blood mark and this blood mark was able to receive Shi Yan's energy directly. At the moment his energy was emitted, they connected to him proactively.

The battleship had many damages, floating silently in the galaxy.

Shi Yan, Leona, Fei Lan, and Ka Tuo stood in different corners of the battleship where Shi Yan was the core, releasing this mysterious energy. Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo used the blood mark to share his energy.

Time seemed to stop moving.

Shi Yan's God Body and the black hole in his soul altar were still refining and filtering energy, releasing energy to the other three.

A giant figure emerged from a gloomy area. It was Na Xin.

Frowning, Na Xin looked at the four people on the battleship, his face complicated. It was unknown what he was thinking, but his eyes were filled with fear.

He told everybody to leave and to not come near the battleship. He asked them to wait in an area where they couldn't see the battleship.

However, Na Xin had approached and watched in silence.

And his observation lasted three days.

Three days later, Shi Yan, the fountain of energy, had stopped releasing the two mysterious kinds of energy. Fei Lan, Ka Tuo, and Leona didn't say anything, closing their eyes and meditating on the battleship.

After the three of them had quieted down, Shi Yan also sat down cross-legged. The energy around his body gradually ceased, but it still surged from time to time inside his God Body.

Na Xin came, standing by the battleship and watching them. He stared at the blood marks on their forehead.

Several days later.

Shi Yan woke up first, but he didn't move. He just observed the other three as if he was considering something.

He finally knew why the owner of the Blood Vein Ring would become the Master of the Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight.

It wasn't simply because it was the great realm and power. Instead, it was because this person could help his eight escorts increase their realm and power endlessly!

Through the blood marks, that person could diverge the refined energy from Essence Qi and soul altars he has taken in. He could distribute the energy to each of them separately!

The blood mark was the only thing that they used to receive the magical energy from this person. As long as the eight escorts of Bloodthirsty followed him in the same way, they would receive benefits from him after each bloody battle. Just like him, their realms would be enhanced tremendously.

The Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight had supernatural power Upanishad, and they could receive energy and pure soul energy from the Master to refine their soul altar. How could they not become even more powerful?

He understood now.

Also, Shi Yan could now confirm that Fei Lan, Ka Tuo, and Leona, the three warriors with the inheritance and the blood mark, would never leave him!

Even if they didn't call him Master, they would always act as his most loyal servants. They would honestly and dedicatedly serve him and protect him. They would even sell their lives to him.

Because he could bestow them everything!

In any star area, power and realm were the most irresistible gifts, the best things that people had ever yearned for.

After several days later, Leona, Fei Lan, and Ka Tuo gradually woke up.

Ka Tuo opened his eyes and spoke, "I'm about to break through to Second Sky of Original God Realm." He looked at Shi Yan, his eyes showing his sincere gratitude.

Leona chuckled, glancing at Fei Lan. "Auntie, I think... you don't want to leave Shi Yan anymore, right?"

Fei Lan nodded, squinting as she was smiling. "Even if someone beats me up."

Only the three of them could know what benefits this harvest had given them after this experience.

"Hey guys, I've seen... the mark on your forehead..." Na Xin contemplated and then lowered his voice. "It was around one thousand years ago when I saw a man with the same mark. He was an intimidating expert!"

Shi Yan, Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo all looked at him.

Chapter 923: Taboo Power

Na Xin's words shocked Shi Yan's team.

There was about an 80% or 90% chance that a person with a blood mark belonged to one of the eight lineages of the Bloodthirsty's Cortege. Fei Lan and Leona came here also to find those people.

Leona's father and Fei Lan's man, the strongest of the Dark Sky, had followed the star map's direction to the Agate Star Area. Fei Lan and Leona wanted to know whether they were alive or not.

Na Xin gave them hope.

"Can you give us more details?" Leona's voice trembled uneasily. She longed for it, but she was also afraid.

She hoped that the person Na Xin mentioned was her father or her big uncle. However, she was afraid that it could be a negative answer.

Fei Lan's eyes were dark and gloomy. The wrinkles on her face were like the bark of a ten-thousand-year-old ancient tree. They were dried, reflecting no light. At this moment, she felt tense.

Na Xin pondered for a while and then looked at Shi Yan and the other three with a little fear. "Are you... related to him?"

"Something like that" Shi Yan smiled. "I hope you can solve our doubts."

"It happened around one thousand five hundred or six hundred years ago. It has been a long time so I can't give you the exact number of years. But the scene that year is like a nightmare that haunts me deep in my soul. It feels like it happened just yesterday. I can remember it clearly."

"I had only First Sky of Original God Realm that year. I went with the soldiers of my tribe to Broken Star Field to try to find the rare

cultivating materials for our tribe.

"We heard some news that they had found the Original Incipient Grade material in Broken Star Field. We knew our capacity. We would never get it. But since we were curious, we went there to see.

"Many warriors gathered in a deep place inside the Broken Star Field. It was the most dangerous area. They were trying to take that Original Incipient Grade material.

"The battle was inevitable. It was very harsh and fiery. Forces of the Far West joined this battle, killing each other for that rare material. That battle was one of the most unique events that I've witnessed in my life. It gave me a deep impression that I have never forgotten.

"While the battle continued very furiously, a withered old man wearing a straw coat appeared. He had a blood mark like yours on his forehead. As soon as he appeared, he headed to the area where the Original Incipient Grade material lay. He just kept walking and the warriors in his way stopped fighting. Their eyes became empty. Their vitality was gone. They died like that, standing at their spots. No one could move while the old man walked. After he got to the center, several thousand warriors who joined the battle all fell. All of them...

"It looked like he just took a walk in his backyard. He didn't care about the dangers, deliberately taking the material and leaving to a deep place inside Broken Star Field. He disappeared shortly after.

"At that time, many weaker warriors were observing that battle. We were some of them. Because we stayed far from them, we weren't affected.

"We waited for some days after he left to send people there and check. We found that thousands of warriors who had joined that battle had their soul altars vanished. There was no one alive. They looked like dried mummies without a single beam of vitality."

Reaching this part, Na Xin stopped, giving a forced smile. "Many warriors joined that battle had the Ethereal God Realm. One of them was at the First Sky of Incipient God Realm. They all died."

Shi Yan, Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo had strange faces as they were stern inwardly.

"It's him! He used to appear in Raging Flame Star Area. The one that cultivates Dead power Upanishad!" After a long time, Leona said weakly, "Seems like he wasn't killed in God Perishing Land. Ge Lu left the Chaos power Upanishad and then died. But he's still alive! He's such an imposing existence."

When that man appeared in Raging Flame Star Area, he brought them a great disaster. He had taken lives on dozens of life stars, killing many experts of the Raging Flame Star Area.

The Head of the Dark Sky family was the Imperial Master of the divine nation. After the short encounter with this man, he got the Corrosion power Upanishad and a little explanation of the blood mark. He said that he wanted to go to God Perishing Land to rescue one of his brothers, Ge Lu who cultivated Chaos Upanishad.

Ge Lu was dead. His soul altar shattered, leaving only the inheritance to Ka Tuo.

His rescuer cultivated Death power Upanishad and that man was still alive under besiege of the God Clan. He drifted to the Agate and showed himself once.

"You guys... are related to him, right? The mark on your head is identical to his!" Na Xin hesitated for a while and then said, "When we get to the Broken Star Field, you'd better not show that mark. Otherwise, we will fall into big trouble."

Na Xin smiled begrudgingly and continued his talk. "Many forces in the Far West and the precursors of the experts here had buried themselves in that battle. If they know you guys are related to that man, they will not spare you."

Shi Yan and the others exchanged looks, falling into silence.

"Don't worry. We know how to behave. We won't expose the mark. If we aren't so begrudging, we won't show our weakness." After a long moment, Shi Yan curled his lips, "It will be like today. We will kill all the ones who may cause trouble."

Na Xin felt chilled, his face more bitter.

He had a little regret that that man was related to Shi Yan now. This man was technically a thug with harsh and cold deeds. Since this young man was related to that man, Na Xin wondered if he would bring disaster to the Giant Tribe or not.

"Alright, I'll leave you guys here. Excuse me." Na Xin sighed and then turned around and left. He headed to where the Giants, Zi Yao, and Feng Rao gathered.

"Did you... harvest something?" After the giant left, Shi Yan smiled, relaxing. "I have diverged the energy that I got this time and sent more than half of it to you guys, especially to precursor Fei Lan. How do you feel now?"

"Good, so good. I feel so good!" Fei Lan nodded. "We can do it more. Yeah, it is better to do it more. I'm not afraid to share your pressure." Pausing for a while, she smiled honestly. "Such extreme energy fluctuation has exceeded your endurance. It's also the help that we gave you by sharing the excess energy, right?"

Leona and Ka Tuo brightened their eyes.

Shi Yan smiled, "Yeah, it is. I can't take too much energy like that. Absorbing it all is impossible. I felt better sharing it with you guys."

They exchanged looks. Shortly after, they burst out laughing, their countenance relaxed and cheered.

Today, Fei Lan, Ka Tuo, and Leona had finally found Shi Yan's secret. They knew how special he was and how tremendous the support they could gain from him.

The energy from Essence Qi and soul altars of the dead expert would be refined and converted to the energy in the warrior's body to nurture the soul altar, making his understanding of power more profound. This deed of benefiting oneself by harming the others was utterly a taboo. Once the others knew about this, that warrior would be eliminated at any cost.

This was the Taboo power! The power that shouldn't exist!

However, to the ones who received benefits from it, they all knew how marvelous it was to them.

"I think I don't need to say much. You guys all know how magical it is," Shi Yan smiled and nodded, "We should arrange our people and continue our journey."

Feng Ke and the pirates couldn't go the same way with Bi Tian to Broken Star Field, indeed. Shi Yan let Jester, Long Zhu, and Feng Rao took them back to the Old Orchid Star. They knew that they should avoid the spear of Blood Halberd.

Shortly after, they arranged everything. Jester, Long Zhu, and Feng Rao took the others, returning to the Old Orchid Star. Shi Yan, Fei Lan, Leona, Ka Tuo, Carthew, and Zi Yao continued to go with the Giants to Broken Star Field.

Broken Star Field.

Deep under a sapphire lake lay a crystal palace.

It was the headquarter of Blood Halberd.

Inside a purple crystal, hall were several gloomy lamps. The flames of those lamps had magical energy fluctuations. It rippled like water waves with life auras.

All of a sudden, the flame of one of those lamps flickered and then extinguished.

Clink Clank Clink Clank!

A series of strange noises arose in the purple crystal hall. It sounded like some kind of sharp weapons had just broken.

Swish Swish Swish!

Silhouettes appeared from different corners. They stood in the hall, looking at that extinguished lamp, their eyes dark and gloomy.

"Tu Feng is dead!" One of them shouted, "He was in charge of transporting the mine slaves. He didn't have any combat engagement mission. Why did he get killed?"

"Report to the Master immediately! Inform him about this!" Another man yelled ear-piercingly. "Whoever that was, if he dares to trouble Blood Halberd and kill our brother, we must find him and skin him little by little!"

"Where's Tu Feng's dage?"

"He's in the center of Broken Star Field."

"Inform him immediately. Let him investigate this. Tu Fei will do his best to take revenge for his brother."

"Okay."

Warriors of Blood Halberd continued to spread the news everywhere from the crystal purple hall.

Deep in a mine of Broken Star Field.

An earth-shaking explosion suddenly sounded in a massive hole. Many mine slaves were slaughtered at their spots. Blood and flesh splashed everywhere.

Boom Boom! Rumble Rumble!

The cave suddenly collapsed, burying many mine slaves. A ferocious man dashed out, facing the sky and shouting crazily. "Brother! I swear I will make that one suffer from all of the torture

in this world!"

While roaring, he left the place hastily, rising a tornado when he rocketed into the sky, heading to where the warriors gathering outside the Broken Star Field.

Wherever his figure crossed by, explosions resounded from the place underneath. Many warriors shouted, yelling and cursing.

"Oh f*ck! What has enraged that lunatic Tu Fei?"

"I wonder who has enraged that madman. He will receive big bad luck."

"Well, if you tease him, you won't have a decent ending."

"Nah, let's not discuss this. If that lunatic hears you, you're in big trouble."

Everybody lowered their voices and discussed. However, they were scared and they shivered. It was as if they were afraid that the one flying above their heads would notice them.

Chapter 924: A Reward of One Million

Shi Yan's team saw more battleships when they got closer to Broken Star Field. There were various battleships with strange and yet surprising structures.

Some were made of wood, bones, or a particular stone while some looked like they were made of metal. It could perhaps be some kind of rare metal materials.

Notably, their shapes were fascinating. They saw lozenge, diamond battleships. They even saw a monster-like and a tree-like battleship. They all had many mine slaves who were watched over by experts.

They could see countless King God Realm, Original God Realm warriors, and Ethereal God Realm experts. The owners of those battleships were mostly in this realm.

In general, the average realm of warriors in the Agate Star Area was one level higher than in Raging Flame Star Area. In Raging Flame Star Area, an expert at Peak of Original God Realm was already a legend. They were pretty rare. However, in this area, that realm was typical.

Many warriors from the battleships they met had observed them and some even asked for information about the murder of Tu Feng.

In Broken Star Field, Tu Fei, Tu Feng's big brother, had posted a reward of one million top-quality divine crystals for anyone who could provide the information related to that murder case. As soon as they could give precise information, they would receive this fortune of divine crystals.

One million top-quality divine crystals was a colossal fortune in everybody's eyes. Even though the Giant Tribe had lived in the Old Orchid Star for many years, their assets couldn't be that much.

No one doubted Shi Yan's group.

Going with the Giants had given them a perfect cover that the others could never relate them to that murder case.

In the Far West region, the Giants was famous for peaceful and kind characteristics. If the other didn't offend them to the point they couldn't endure, they would never attack first. And it was impossible to imagine that the Giant would eradicate any battleship.

Since they were going with Na Xin, many experts of different forces just asked if they had seen anyone suspicious on the way. No one had ever thought that the murderers were actually standing in front of them.

"Your good tribe is famous indeed. You have never attacked anyone first, so you will never be suspicious. Haha, we're lucky that we went with you," said Shi Yan smilingly.

Na Xin had a bitter countenance, speaking begrudgingly. "I've broken the rules. If I didn't go with you, I would never have done anything like that. It goes against our integrity."

"Everything has an exception. I think you guys should renovate your thoughts a little bit. If you get yourself bullied that easy, your tribe will come to an end one day." Shi Yan frowned, "Your tribe has good innate endowments and powerful physique that the same level warriors couldn't resist. You have the gifted talent of strength like the most excellent soldiers. Why do you have to bind yourself painfully like that? If you can be like other clans that seize any chances to strengthen their clans, I think you guys would be soon one of the strongest clans in the Agate Star Area."

"It's easier said than done. Our precursors have taught us to live in harmony and minimize grudges. They didn't give us any wicked thought. It has been tens of thousands of years. We can't change instantly," sighed Na Xin.

These days, staying together with Shi Yan and the others, he understood that the Giant Tribe must change. If they were conservative and stubborn, their tribe would never be stable and prosperous.

"You guys must get used to it gradually," Shi Yan smiled, "Going with me, I will let you see that sometimes, you have to be cruel to the others or to yourself, and what you will receive will be beyond your imagination."

Along the way, Shi Yan continually spread his cunning and wicked thoughts to the Giants. He was trying to guide this naive clan in going a better way to change their mindset.

When Shi Yan's group met the battleships of many forces, the others asked them about Tu Feng, but none of them had doubted this group of warriors.

After several months, Shi Yan and his friends finally stepped on the land outside the Broken Star Field.

It was a gridiron-planned city in a broken continent of a star at the peripheral area of the Broken Star Field. It was about the size of Land of God Punishment where many auction houses, restaurants, mine slave markets, and shops were held. This place was a hustle and bustle, indeed.

This city was called Broken Star City. It didn't have a governance body or rules. Any warrior could enter the city, do transactions, or harvesting whatever they wanted freely.

The backyard of the Broken Star City was Broken Star Field where there was the beautiful name of Natural Resources Field. It had countless occupied and unoccupied mines, and many perilous areas. Battles often happened. Every day, it attracted hundreds of explorers. People died there in every minute.

After Shi Yan had arrived in the Broken Star City, he noticed that many warriors were observing them and the ones who had just

come haad strange eyes. They wanted to see the familiar faces in his group and in the batch of new mine slaves.

The portraits of Feng Ke's group had been printed in some special crystals. Those people were holding those kinds of crystals to search among the new mine slaves who had just arrived. They were investigating the murder case of Tu Feng, indeed.

Of course, they didn't dare to search all the ones who had just arrived in the city.

They just stopped and watched a few of the battleships of powerful forces. After the battleships anchored, they could only observe from a distance. None of them dared to come forward and ask to check the ships.

It seemed that Blood Halberd didn't dare to create grudges against someone.

"It's lucky that we've sent Feng Ke's team back. Otherwise, he would be in big trouble right when we have arrived in Broken Star Field," Ka Tuo said, lowering his voice.

Fei Lan scolded him with a cold face. "From now on, say nothing about what had happened. Warriors in this area have high and profound realms. They can eavesdrop even from ten thousand meters away. Don't discuss. When they notice the anomaly, it will be hard to control the situation."

Ka Tuo shivered inwardly. He nodded, asking himself to forget what had happened.

Na Xin's group of Giants was prominent in Broken Star City. Their physiques were so massive, and they couldn't transform like the Monster Clan clansmen. Standing in the city, they looked like = small mountains.

It looked strange that Shi Yan's team stayed close to the Giants. It was because the Old Orchid Star was a remote area that didn't have many visitors. It was also because the Giants weren't good at

communicating with other people.

"Precursor, we should diverge. You just need to tell me the location of Ai Fu's shop," Shi Yan lowered his voice as he had noticed the strange eyes of the others.

"Over there," Na Xin pointed to a direction. "Just go there. It's the biggest store. Ai Fu's famous in Broken Star City. He got a big place here. When doing business with him, we just need to pay attention to his bargaining. We don't need to worry about having trouble in his place. Once he seals the deal with you, he is easy-going and frank."

"Okay, after we're done, we will meet again," Shi Yan smiled, walking with Fei Lan, Ka Tuo, Carthew, Leona, and Zi Yao to the place that the Giant had shown them.

From a bird's view, Broken Star City was planned with street grids. It seemed that this kind of layout hid something.

Of course, Shi Yan and his team didn't care about this thing. They gingerly walked on the streets and watched out for strangers, heading to Ai Fu's auction house.

Soon, an ancient, luxury building appeared in their vision. It looked like the building was built from some kind of precious stone. The several-hundred-meter-tall building was glowing in a silvery halo as it was made of strange silver rocks.

Compared to it, the surrounding buildings and houses around looked much smaller.

Shi Yan chuckled as he knew that it was their target. He took Fei Lan and the others to that place quickly.

At the stone gate of the ancient building, a lanky teenage at Second Sky of King God Realm was screaming hastily. "Let me in! Let me in! I want to see Master Ai Fu! I have a good thing to offer!"

Standing in the front door was a warrior who looked like an iron electricity pole. He was around three meters tall with the aura of

the Monster Clan. He got the Second Sky of Original God Realm cultivation base. This beefy warrior guarded the door, squinting and shouting at the teenage, "Get lost!"

"I'm here to offer something good. Master Ai Fu will find it interesting. I'm sure!" The teenage said affirmatively. "Master Ai Fu will get angry if you make this mistake. Let me in."

"Move!" the Monster Clan muscular warrior snorted, waving his hand.

The teenager was kicked out like a rubber ball. He rolled until he was stopped by Shi Yan's legs. Blood trickled down his mouth.

He got up, frowning, throwing a glance at Shi Yan and then begging the guard again. "I'm begging you. My father needs divine crystals. I'm sure Master Ai Fu will be interested in what I offer this time."

"Our Master doesn't have time for you. Brat. Every time you come here, you all bring bullshit news and trash things. Don't disturb my Master." The Monster Clan warrior had a cold countenance. "I'm warning you. If you dare to intrude, don't blame me."

The teenage shivered as if he knew that the other actually dared to kill him. He stooped in distress, muttering, his face sorrowful. "It's really a strange place there. All things are dead. No beam of vitality. That man must have stopped there that year. I think it must have his will or intent domain there."

Fei Lan's eyes brightened.

Her figure flashed and then she reappeared by the boy. She contemplated and then asked. "What do you know? Can you tell us?"

The teenager was struck, jabbering, "Last time I went to a deep place in the Broken Star Field, I found a strange place. That place has no sign of living things. The earth and heaven energy there

seems to be restrained. Something like power Upanishad also surged there. I didn't dare to enter. I felt so weak just standing by the edge of that place, so I hastened to leave..."

Fei Lan got something. She couldn't help but turn around to look at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan nodded.

"You stay put. Don't go. Wait for us. When we get out, we want your news," Fei Lan lowered his voice.

The teenager had his face brightly happy. He nodded continually. "Yes! Yes! I will wait for you guys!"

Shi Yan, Leona, and Ka Tuo exchanged looks. They didn't say anything but walked to the ancient building.

"Are you here to buy or sell?" The Monster Clan brawny guard asked lazily.

"Sell. We want to meet your Master, Ai Fu," Shi Yan smiled, "It's a big business, you know. Around several hundreds of top quality divine crystals. I'm sure Ai Fu will find it interesting."

"Follow me." The Monster Clan man studied them for a while. After they found that Fei Lan had the Ethereal God Realm, he nodded, walking into the building.

Shi Yan's team immediately followed him.

Chapter 925: Big Business

In any star area, the divine crystal was a basic currency. The divine crystals stored earth and heaven energy that warriors could absorb directly.

This feature ensured the constant value of the divine crystal.

The Agate Star Area had many life stars with abundant earth and heaven energy. If the warriors cultivated there and accumulated energy, their powers would increase gradually.

However, the warriors wouldn't always stay in one life star. They needed to go to different areas to gain experience and practice.

In many isolated areas, earth and heaven energy was cut off. Once the warriors got hurt or consumed a lot of energy, they had to use divine crystals to recover.

The Agate Star Area had top-quality divine crystals. Each crystal could store an enormous amount of energy, which could restore one-tenth of the power of a warrior at Original God Realm.

The divine crystal was also the source of energy for battleships, formations, treasures, and the refining process. It was inevitable to a warrior's cultivation. Thus, divine crystals were never going to be outdated. They were going to always be the standard and popular currency.

The reward of one million divine crystals posted by Tu Fei of Blood Halberd made many people drool. Many information brokers were stirred up because of this reward.

The entire Broken Star City was looking for the murderer who had killed Tu Feng. Ai Fu also had some kinds of news like this.

Ai Fu was famous in Broken Star City, indeed. Not only did he trade cultivation materials, but he also sold battleships and slaves. Ai Fu also had a force of information brokers who captured the strange news from the Far West. He could use that information to

gain more benefit.

In the center of the ancient building, Ai Fu was sitting in a magnificently luxury hall. He was holding a glass, swirling the red liquid in it.

His glass contained some kind of wine that was as red as human blood. However, it had a pleasant aroma. As his wrist swirled the glass, the wine shimmered beautifully.

Ai Fu took a sip and it seemed like he passionately enjoyed it, but his indifferent eyes were looking at the man in front of him. "I've done a lot of businesses with your Blood Halberd. Of course, I will pay more attention to you. I'd met your brother several times. I will keep an eye on his case."

Tu Fei had a lot of cuts on his face, his bearings ferocious. A small, green snake wound around the elbow of the arm he used to hold the glass. It was tucking its tongue in and out. Its triangular eyes were full of savage light.

"Thank you. As long as you find the murderer, I will offer one million divine crystals personally." Tu Fei stood up and bent his body slightly. "Your information gathering system is the best in Broken Star City. I am counting on you."

Ai Fu held the glass of wine in one hand, his other hand waving relaxingly. He smiled. "Don't worry. If someone gets the news first, it will be my men."

"Yeah, I believe so. Thus, I came to see you," Tu Fei looked stern. "If you need to use force, please spare his life. I want to kill him myself."

"Of course, I can feel your brotherhood. Don't worry. I'll keep it in mind," Ai Fu said frankly.

"Master. Some strangers came to see you. They say that they have a big business they want to deal with you." At this moment, the voice of the Monster clan guard arose from outside the hall.

Ai Fu suddenly felt funny, pouring himself a full glass of wine. "My luck is good today. I got two businesses come to my door. Haha, let them in, let them in."

"You guys can come in now," said the Monster Clan guard.

Shi Yan, Leona, Fei Lan, and Ka Tuo walked into the great hall. They saw Tu Fei.

Tu Fei's eyes were like the malignant eyes of a viper as they were raking through Shi Yan's team. Under his eyes, they felt chilled as if a snake was using its sticky tongue to draw something on their skin. They all felt uncomfortable, their soul altars trembling uneasily.

Fei Lan's wrinkles twitched as she frowned discreetly.

Tu Fei's line of sight was focused on Fei Lan, the warrior who had the highest realm in this group at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm.

Shi Yan's team and Tu Fei passed each other. Afterward, Tu Fei still turned around to look at them. After a while, he snorted and left with a worried face.

"Ha. Don't touch him. He's about to go crazy. Someone killed his brother. He's like a mad dog now. He hates that he can't bite people to vent out his anger." After Tu Fei left, Ai Fu didn't try to be polite and he mocked Tu Fei. "Come here, come here, what do you have to offer? Let me see. As long as you have good stuff, you don't need to worry about the price."

"Is he Tu Fei?"

Shi Yan shivered inwardly, but his face was calm. "His brother was at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm. Who could kill him?"

Fei Lan, Leona, Zi Yao, and Ka Tuo bent their heads slightly, their faces strange. They didn't dare to intervene. However, they were very anxious as they were afraid that Shi Yan would reveal something.

Ai Fu was surprised. He studied Shi Yan and then smiled, "Come have a seat. If he could kill Tu Feng, he should be at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. That lunatic didn't trouble you but he left because he thought that you guys weren't strong enough. Ha, you were lucky then."

He previously wanted to talk to Fei Lan because she had the highest realm in this group. He thought that she was the leader.

However, when Shi Yan talked, the rest of the team kept silent. He immediately understood that the young man at First Sky of Original God Realm was the real leader. He was startled and couldn't help but think why that was the case.

... As he has an Ethereal God Realm member in his entourage, what was this kid's identity? I never saw him before. Maybe he came from another area of Agate Star Area?

Typically, there was only one possibility when low-realm warriors were escorted by high-realm warriors: he has a powerful background like Ai Fu himself.

Ai Fu's realm wasn't high, but he had Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm members in his cortege. It was because of his great background as his grandfather was at Incipient God Realm grandfather.

He thought that Shi Yan was this sort of man.

"What realm does Tu Fei have?" Shi Yan sat down nonchalantly, facing Ai Fu. He deliberately lifted a crystal glass and poured himself a glass full of wine, asking calmly, "So Tu Fei's very dangerous in the Far West region?"

The calmer and more natural he was, the higher the possibility that Ai Fu thought he had an influential background. He studied Shi Yan, speaking with a smile, "Tu Fei's at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. He's famous in the Far West region, indeed. He's the commander of Blood Halberd. Is he dangerous or not... Hmm, he's

number one, I guess. Haha."

Apparently, Tu Fei wasn't really dangerous in Ai Fu's eyes. Otherwise, he wouldn't mock him after he had left.

"Are you interested in Tu Fei?" Ai Fu had a strange light flare in his eyes while he gazed at Shi Yan, contemplating.

"It's a reward of one million. Haha, when I heard that he posted a big reward, of course, I got interested." Shi Yan made an excuse, but his face stiffened right after that. "We should talk."

A shiny light flashed on his palm. The small lumber of the Life Ancient Tree from the Wood Clan emerged. He chuckled, pushing it to the table in front of Ai Fu. "Give me a price."

Ai Fu's eyes brightened immediately. He carefully picked up the lumber, while sensing and checking. Sometimes, he released a wisp of Soul Consciousness. He was stunned. "Rare! This is extremely rare and precious. Yes! This is big business!"

He paused for a while, looking at Shi Yan with a smile. "Bro, give me a price." "Yeah, you go first," Shi Yan smiled, "You're professional. You should know its value. I won't shame myself."

Ai Fu caressed the lumber. Hesitating for a while, he said slowly, "This lumber of the Life Ancient Tree from the Wood Clan has a natural wooden texture. It carries the most subtle feature of the Wood power Upanishad. It should... be extremely precious. However, it's very small. And the other race can't benefit much from it. If I want to sell it, I have to find the members of the Wood Clan. Moreover, he should be a powerful and generous one. But we don't have many members of the Wood Clan in the Far West region. It's a bit troublesome."

Before the businessman gives a price, he naturally tries to give bad comments to degrade the item and lower its price. Ai Fu had reminded Shi Yan's team though.

Shi Yan swirled his glass of wine. From time to time, he took a sip

as he wasn't in a hurry to chat. He just looked at Ai Fu and smiled.

"Although it's precious, I don't have many potential customers. It'll be complicated to sell this item." Ai Fu tried to lower the value of the lumber and then took a deep breath, frowning at Shi Yan. "Bro, do you want to take materials or divine crystals?"

"Only divine crystals," said Shi Yan deliberately.

"... Well, if you only need divine crystals, it will be easier." Ai Fu rubbed his chin and considered for a while before smiling. "Three million top-quality divine crystals. What do you think? It's not a bad price."

"Three million?" Shi Yan felt funny, putting down the glass of wine lazily. He then stretched out his body. "So you don't want to buy it. Okay, we won't disturb you anymore."

He got up and sauntered out of the hall, not pausing for even a moment. Fei Lan and the others got up and followed him.

"Wait a minute," before Shi Yan was about to walk out of the hall, Ai Fu hissed and spoke seriously, "Four million!"

"Five million! I won't sell the lumber less than that amount!" Shi Yan turned his head, speaking earnestly.

Ai Fu hesitated for a while and then nodded all of a sudden. "Deal."

Shi Yan grinned, getting back to the table. He took his seat and continued drinking. "I'm waiting for your divine crystals."

"Oh ah. I can't collect enough by today. Give me some time," Ai Fu's smile became reluctant. "Lately, I've bought too many materials. I've paid a lot of divine crystals. Now I have around three million only. Hey... are you interested in cultivating materials? War chariots or battleships? Pellets, ancient books, armor or weapons? Except for Original Incipient Grade items, I have most of those things. Let me show them to you, can I?"

Shi Yan, Fei Lan, and Leona were stunned as they were petrified by what Ai Fu had introduced.

"Your realms are... common here. I have many things suitable for you guys. Just take a look first and then we will decide later, okay?" Ai Fu continued to encourage them.

"What do you think?" Shi Yan rubbed his chin, glancing at Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo.

They nodded. All looked excited.

Shi Yan smiled, talking, "Alright. Let's check what you got."

"Please come in," Ai Fu smiled cheerfully, leading them.

Chapter 926: Treasury

Ai Fu walked to a rainbow colored, meandering path behind the great hall. This passage looked like a space channel full of light and magical energy fluctuations.

Shi Yan's team followed Ai Fu through the passage, emerging on a shadowy mineral star.

This mineral star was shrouded by some peculiar barrier. Because of it, they couldn't see the sun, moon, stars, or immense earth and heaven energy. The horizon was still a vast, gray area. This star was bigger than Broken Star City.

"Holy sh*t!" Ka Tuo couldn't help but acclaim.

Fei Lan, Leona, Zi Yao, and Carthew were also dumbstruck. They were shocked, watching the scenery.

Many battleships with different styles and shapes were parked on this planet. They looked like the antiquity beasts lying on the ground. They were more than one thousand meters long. Some were wooden while others were made of stone or metal. There were dozens of them, each built to be luxurious and magical.

The battleships had labels which read their manufacture date, usage manual, and type of energy used. Also, it clearly stated how to drive and control the battleship accurately.

Dozens of battleships parking here were imposing, intimidating people with their visibility.

Many stone platforms stood in another corner where piles of materials, precious armor, and exotic weapons were left. They could also see a lot of different colored pellets in countless bottles. It looked like this place had everything they wanted.

Cultivating materials, battleships, armor, spiritual medicines and pellets, scriptures, and rare refining tool materials were displayed on those massive stone platforms. They could easily find what they

needed.

There were around one thousand stone platforms scattered on an area of several mu of land. They were filled with properties that could make anyone drool.

"Young Master."

Two old men wearing shabby garments emerged from nowhere, greeting Ai Fu respectfully.

Fei Lan glanced at the two old men, changing her countenance a little bit, hissing, "Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm!"

Those two old men didn't look at the guests but guarded on Ai Fu's sides. From their appearances, they knew those two considered Ai Fu as their master.

Ai Fu smiled, pointing around, "You guys take a look. Everything here is for sale. You can buy them for two million divine crystals. I will tell you the exact price of the items you choose."

Shi Yan's team was attracted.

Shi Yan had a sharp eye. At first glance, he knew that those bottles and jars there were outstanding. Most of them were Divine Grade pellets from level 1 to level 7. Even the Heavenly Mending Pellets Jester had refined looked very normal here. There were five or six bottles on the stone platform.

Pellets that were more valuable than the Heavenly Mending Pellets were put on a stone platform. There were ten bottles, but they seemed to not be treated in a special way.

Another section of the stone platform area was used to display precious armor. Light sparkled continually from there. Each of the armor pieces had supernatural energy fluctuate. They could feel the distinctive auras of lightning, flame, and ice. Apparently, they were made for warriors who cultivated different power Upanishads. All of them made people drool.

Ai Fu was genuinely a wealthy man sitting on a mountain of treasures!

"This star used to be an abandoned mineral star. We've renovated it and made it our storage area. Choose what you want. I will use the divine crystals to give you the prices." Ai Fu was satisfied seeing them astounded. He smiled and continued, "You have two million divine crystals. Choose whatever you want. We can use divine crystals to pay for everything here."

Carthew, Zi Yao, Ka Tuo, and even Leona were looking at Shi Yan with desire in their eyes.

Shi Yan couldn't be calm anymore. Hesitating for a while, he gave a forced smile. "You guys can check if you want anything."

As soon as he said that, Leona, Carthew, Zi Yao, and Ka Tuo immediately dashed away. They were thrilled to observe each stone platform as if they were in the best dream ever that they didn't want to wake up from.

"I have something suitable for you too," Ai Fu shrugged contentedly, speaking to Fei Lan, who was still calm. "Your Ethereal Extent hasn't been formed yet. I have something specialized for warriors at your realm. It can help you condense the Ethereal Extent faster. I also have some special pellets to mend the damaged Ethereal Soul. If you don't mind, take a look."

Fei Lan couldn't stay calm anymore.

Swish!

She disappeared shortly in the direction Ai Fu had shown her. It seemed as if she didn't get things that satisfied her, she would never come out.

"How is my place?" Ai Fu smiled, looking at Shi Yan. "I'm curious. You have only First Sky of Original God Realm. Why are you so placid? Haha. Is it true that you've seen something even bigger and seen more treasures than what I have here?"

He instinctively deemed Shi Yan as a member of a prominent force in Agate Star Area who came here for a simple trip. Seeing Shi Yan keep calm, he evidently thought that Shi Yan had seen something better.

He didn't know that Shi Yan was also stunned.

It was just that Shi Yan was different from Leona and Fei Lan. He himself was already the most mysterious and magical treasure with endless mysteries. His Mysterious power Upanishad's characteristics helped him be independent of pellets. He knew the essence of his power Upanishad, so he didn't need to use external support. He didn't have a special need for the tonic pellets in this place.

As for weapons and armor, Shi Yan thought that he didn't need to care about any other treasures since he had the Divine Sword and the Blood Shield.

He had the most suitable items for him in his hands already so he didn't need to be greedy for treasures here. He was placid enough not to run around and try to find suitable cultivating materials.

"I will just take a look then," Shi Yan answered deliberately and then walked around the stone platforms. Sometimes, he threw a glance on the battleships afar from them.

"Expensive battleships are from hundred thousand divine crystals to millions of them. Of course, there are more expensive battleships, which can be compared to the value of a life star. Anyway, I'm not capable of selling them." Ai Fu smiled, following him to give him more information. "If you don't have a battleship or your battleship is broken, you should consider buying one here. Just tell me what kind of features you want. I will give you more information. Speed, defense, attack, I have everything. I'm sure you will like them."

Ai Fu was promoting his products, trying to fill the hole of two million divine crystals. He hated that he couldn't make Shi Yan

buy more.

Shi Yan listened to him and didn't intervene. He just smiled, watching each stone platform. His silky Soul Consciousness was searching around discreetly.

He halted by a stone platform, frowning.

This ten-mu platform was supported by two shabby formations with the cut Empty Fantasy Crystal as the foundation. The magical, exquisite lines were carved thickly on the crystal, weaving with each other to make patterns and drawings of the broken formations.

"Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation. They are said to be created by a warrior who specialized in Space power. Within one star area, we can use this formation to connect. Anyway, this formation is broken. Otherwise, it would be priceless. But it's cheap now. Are you interested in it?" smiled Ai Fu.

"This pair of formations can connect the space within one star area?" Shi Yan's eyes brightened.

"Before it was broken, this formation was able to do that. However, its range was just within one star area. It's not as magical as the hollow channel, which can connect the two star areas." Ai Fu smiled. "But it can't do anything now. It's broken. Both the Mother formation and the Child formation are broken at different levels. We can't fix them, so we keep them here. Warriors who cultivate Space Upanishad can choose them. But I'm afraid the others won't find them interesting."

"How much?" Shi Yan was silent for a while, chuckling, "I'm interested in Space power. I want to use them for my study."

"Two hundred thousand divine crystals," Ai Fu didn't care about this item very much. "If it wasn't shattered, this Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation would be worth at least ten million divine crystals. But it's broken now. Sigh. Just consider that I'm selling

the Empty Fantasy Crystal to you. Two hundred thousand divine crystals."

"Okay, I'll take it," Shi Yan grinned. "Good!" Ai Fu was a little content. "Come here, come here. This way, this way. Perhaps you will find something else you like."

But Shi Yan didn't buy anything else.

However, Fei Lan, Leona, Carthew, Ka Tuo, and Zi Yao all found things they liked. All looked so excited.

Zi Yao liked a set of armor, which looked like it had brilliant and gorgeous rainbow light twirling around. It was stunning, indeed. And it seemed to have some Light intent domain, which could boost up Zi Yao's realm and competence significantly.

That set of armor was at level 5 Divine Grade. It was priced at one hundred thousand divine crystals.

Carthew found a narrow sword of two fingers size. It was small but pretty sharp. It also suited his power Upanishad. He looked delighted.

Ai Fu said it cost one hundred and fifty thousand top quality divine crystals.

Leona and Ka Tuo didn't find any armor or treasure, but they took some pellets. They were all level 5 and level 6 Divine Grade pellets. They were useful for steadying and strengthening their realms.

Ai Fu set the price of five hundred thousand divine crystals for those bottles.

Fei Lan had found the most precious item. She had a sticky, ivory substance called Etherealizing Fluid. According to Ai Fu, it provided the best help in condensing Ethereal Extents. Naturally, it was precious.

It was just a tiny chunk of Etherealizing Fluid, but Ai Fu said it

cost one million divine crystals and he couldn't give them any discount!

Fei Lan made it her precious treasure. She picked it up and never wanted to let it go. She had sensed the substance and realized how it could help her. She nodded at Shi Yan, implying that she wanted it.

With their two million divine crystals, Shi Yan bought the Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation for two hundred thousand divine crystals. Zi Yao took a set of armor that cost one hundred thousand crystals. Carthew got a sword priced one hundred and fifty thousand divine crystals. Leona and Ka Tuo bought bottles of pellets that cost five hundred thousand divine crystals. Fei Lan took the Etherealizing Fluid for a price of one million divine crystals. Thus, they had almost used up their two million divine crystals.

They had only fifty thousand left.

"You still have fifty thousand divine crystals that you can use," Ai Fu felt satisfied now. "Just look around and find more items. It would free me from trouble then. Okay?"

"Do you know how to take the Thousand Fold Lotus? Any special container or idea about how to forge the container and materials?" Shi Yan pondered for a while. He had a thought, so he asked.

Ai Fu was dumbstruck. The two Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm stood by him had their eyes brighten and their backs straighten up.

"You... do you have the Thousand Fold Lotus? The Thousand Fold Lotus?" Ai Fu took a deep breath, his voice trembling. "If you have it, everything will be easier. My grandfather needs it... a lot!"

The two Peak of Ethereal God Realm eyed Shi Yan. Their bright eyes looked like diamonds that could hurt people's eyes looking at them.

Chapter 927: Blue Ice Jar

Thousand Fold Lotus was the Original Incipient Grade material, which gave a tonic to the growth of the soul altar. It could enlarge the Sea of Consciousness and condense the Soul Consciousness. It was the most marvelous material for the soul altar.

Even the Incipient God Realm warriors had to be greedy for the Thousand Fold Lotus. They could use the Thousand Fold Lotus to strengthen their soul altars and their spirits or their souls.

Ai Fu's grandfather was an expert at Incipient God Realm.

"I'm sorry for my manners. Haha. The Thousand Fold Lotus is very rare. I've been waiting in Broken Star City for many years, but I never saw any Thousand Fold Lotus. How is it that you have that? Haha." Ai Fu smiled, "But I'm curious. If you are asking for the materials to harvest the Thousand Fold Lotus, it means that you know where it is?"

The two Peak of Incipient God Realm experts standing by him also looked at Shi Yan with hope, their faces serious.

"I got some news, but I'm not certain yet," Shi Yan smiled. "Anyway, it's good to be prepared, right? If I can find the Thousand Fold Lotus, I won't miss the treasure if I have the special container. Do you... have that kind of container?"

Ai Fu's eyes were very bright. "Yes!"

He extended his hand, touching the void. A bunch of light fell on a stone platform from a distance. That platform then cracked. Around ten blue ice potteries flew out.

Those potteries looked like jars with blue ice patterns covered the surface. Each of them had natural patterns of ice wrapping around.

Deep blue light rippled from the potteries like great water waves.

More than ten blue ice potteries flew out and floated in front of

Ai Fu.

They looked like the most exquisite pieces of art with immense ripples of blue light waves, catching everybody's eyes.

"This Blue Ice Jar is made of rare blue ice and more than ten auxiliary materials. It's the customized container for Thousand Fold Lotus." Ai Fu chuckled. "It's easy to use the jar though. Before you pick the flower, you must let the blue light on the Blue Ice Jar fly out and entangle the petals of the Thousand Fold Lotus. After all of the petals are tied, you can pick it up and put it in the jaw."

"This looks a little small," Shi Yan was surprised, frowning. "This Blue Ice Jar is as big as a water bottle. But I heard that the Thousand Fold Lotus isn't that small. Could that jar store the flower?"

Ai Fu burst out laughing. "The space inside the Blue Ice Jar is shrunken. It's the feature of the blue ice. It can actually store up to five flowers at the same time. If you want, you can use your Soul Consciousness to sense it."

A Blue Ice Jar appeared, falling into Shi Yan's hands.

It felt icy and heavy. The surface of this pottery was strangely smooth. Shi Yan sent a beam of his Soul Consciousness into the jar. His eyes sparkled, smiling. "Not bad."

The Blue Ice Jar didn't look big, indeed. However, there was a whole world inside. Shi Yan could feel the immense blue water inside the jar, filling up a much bigger space than what he saw.

Ai Fu was telling the truth. The volume of each Blue Ice Jar could store five or six Thousand Fold Lotuses.

"A Blue Ice Jar is priced at twenty thousand top-quality divine crystals. You could take only two jars with your amount of divine crystals. However, I'm in a good mood today so you can take five." Ai Fu rubbed his chin, contemplating for a while. Light flashed on his finger and four more Blue Ice Jars spun, flying towards Shi

Yan.

Pausing for a while, Ai Fu said earnestly, "Bro, if you can find the Thousand Fold Lotus and get it, please sell it to me. We can always negotiate the price. I'm sure that I won't fail you."

Shi Yan smiled, taking the Blue Ice Jars. He turned around to look at the bright, colorful materials on the stone platform near there and he spoke. "Okay. If my luck comes and I can get the Thousand Fold Lotus, I will definitely sell it to you."

"Awesome!" Ai Fu laughed. Then, to close this deal, he solemnly handed Shi Yan a Fantasy Sky Ring. "This ring stores three million divine crystals. You can take the pellets or materials you've chosen. Our business is over here."

"Alright." Shi Yan took the Fantasy Sky Ring and signaled Fei Lan, Leona, and the others to put away their items. Then, they walked to the Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation.

Ai Fu and the two old men looked at him with astonishment.

The Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation was a space class formation carved on the Empty Fantasy Crystal as the foundation. The Fantasy Crystal was marvelous and it couldn't be stored in the Fantasy Sky Ring. Thus, seeing Shi Yan halt there, they were curious and surprised.

"Bro, where do you live? I'll have my men deliver the Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation to you. Will that be okay?" Ai Fu thought and then offered kindly.

"No need, I can bring it with me." Shi Yan smiled, caressing the Fantasy Sky Ring he had refined one more time.

Countless fine space cracks appeared from the ring. They shot out from the ring surface and then congregated, creating a bunch of intense light that shrouded the Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation.

In the next moment, the intense light disappeared together with

the formation.

The ring flashed and the strange space energy fluctuation around it gradually ceased.

"You're cunning!" Ai Fu couldn't help but yell. "If you don't know Space Upanishad, how can you take the Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation with the Empty Fantasy Crystal as the foundation? I lost a lot of money this time! A great loss!"

The two Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm warriors standing next to him were also shocked, looking at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan chuckled. "Our transaction is done. You shouldn't regret it. Okay, we gotta go now. See you later when we have a chance."

Ai Fu wore a bitter visage, but he couldn't do anything. "This way, please."

He took Shi Yan's team through the brilliant passage to return to the great hall. Then, he asked his guards to send Shi Yan's group off to the main gate.

Then, Ai Fu got back to the mineral star, his face complex.

"Young Master, this man bought Blue Ice Jar to get the Thousand Fold Lotus. The Blue Ice Jar is used to store the Thousand Fold Lotus only!" hissed an old man.

"Young Master, our Master has advised us to try to buy the Thousand Fold Lotus. We've produced those jars for so many years, but we haven't had a chance to use them yet. Do you think that kid is going to take the flower?" asked the other.

"My Grandfather has had the bottleneck. He needs the Thousand Fold Lotus to break through. I know you're rushed." Ai Fu knitted his brows tightly. "I've kept an eye on the Thousand Fold Lotus for years. But that thing is strange, indeed. No one knows where it grows or how to grow it. I've checked all the areas that they said they found the Thousand Fold Lotus. But I found nothing. Where does that man come from? It's strange. How could he get the news

of the Thousand Fold Lotus? I wonder if he lied to us..."

Pausing for a while, Ai Fu touched something in the void. A light ring expanded from his finger. The dark sky slowly revealed. A shadow like a ghost flew out.

"Young Master, what do you want me to do?"

"Do you know that group of people? Lately, have they operated in any area in the Far West region?"

"There's no record of them. The first time we found them was when they went with Na Xin of the Giant Tribe. After they had entered Broken Star City, they diverged. Oh yeah, Mi Ge and Mi Lou brothers have captured seven Giants. They asked the Giants to pay a ransom of seven hundred thousand divine crystals. Na Xin came here from Old Orchid Star. I guess it was because of this."

"The Giant Tribe? Old Orchid Star?"

Ai Fu's eyes sparkled with a faint light. After a while, he was shaken. "Oh right! According to the rumors, the Old Orchid Star also has Thousand Fold Lotus!"

The two old experts cheered up, talking happily, "Seems that the kid has found something!"

Ai Fu smiled quietly and nodded, "Yeah. Perhaps that kid found the Thousand Fold Lotus. Good, good. Seems like my grandfather's bottleneck will be broken soon."

"The Old Orchid Star is the Giant Tribe's territory. This clan is weak, actually. Young Master, do you want us to...?"

"No no no," Ai Fu shook his head, "I'm a businessman. I'm not a thug. I won't do that. Our Auction House and shop have thrived after so many years because people trust us. It's because of our credit! Credit! Do you understand? It's because of the credit that I've spent hundreds of years gaining. We must not tarnish our reputation."

Ai Fu rubbed his chin, smiling until his eyes narrowed. "If he gets the Thousand Fold Lotus and shows a good sense by selling it to me, everything will be smooth. Everyone will be happy."

"What if he doesn't sell it to you? Or what if he asks for a lot?" asked an old man begrudgingly.

"Do you need me to teach you how to act in that situation? It's true that we can't do something, but won't you find someone to do it for you?" Ai Fu frowned, sneering.

The old man nodded slowly.

"Of course, friendly disposition leads to wealth. It's the most important thing. We don't need to kill anybody." Ai Fu grinned again, "If he can find the Thousand Fold Lotus, he can help my grandfather. He would be our benefactor. We should appreciate our benefactors, right?"

"Yeah, right." The old man with the bitter face nodded again. However, he was cursing inwardly, "That hypocritical brat likes to act. He's addicted to acting now."

Ai Fu lifted his head, looking at the shadow in the sky. "Have you received any news of the murder case of Tu Feng?"

"Not yet," the shadow replied with respect. "Our men didn't find any survivors. We found no trace of Tu Feng's battle, either."

"Oh, they cleaned up well," Ai Fu rubbed his chin, "Yeah, just like my style. That should be a competent man. Investigate. Continue your work! Tu Feng's stuff is priced at one million divine crystals. We're in short of divine crystals. Work on it. Oh, and, keep an eye on those people for me. I want to know their every move in Broken Star City."

"Yes, sir!" The shadow retreated slowly until it disappeared from their vision.

Ai Fu looked at one of the two old men, chuckling. "Send a message to my grandfather. Tell him that we found some clues of

the Thousand Fold Lotus that he's always yearning for."

"I got it, Young Master," the old man replied with respect.

Chapter 928: Open the Heart

After Shi Yan got out of Ai Fu's ancient building, he saw the teenager still waiting for them there. Seeing them, the boy's eyes brightened and he hastened to come to them.

Fei Lan frowned, speaking deliberately, "We should talk somewhere else."

The boy nodded continually, his eyes filled with joy.

After fifteen minutes, Shi Yan found a quiet place in the South of the Broken Star Field. Not many people walked through this street and none of them noticed this group.

Fei Lan waved her hand at the boy.

"Where did you find it? Tell us more details," Fei Lan lowered her voice, asking.

"One hundred thousand top quality divine crystals," the boy took a deep breath, "Give me one hundred thousand divine crystals and I'll take you there. I'll tell you the details."

"One hundred thousand divine crystals? And of top quality? Kid, are you're so poor that you've gone crazy?" Ka Tuo rolled his eyes, smiling coldly. "Do you think you can deceive us?"

Most of the divine crystals circulated in the Raging Flame Star Area were of good quality. Top quality divine crystals were scarce. Ka Tuo had been a pirate in the Land of God Punishing for so many years, but he couldn't save one hundred thousand top-quality divine crystals. This amount of divine crystals was an incredible fortune to Ka Tuo, indeed.

This kid asking for one hundred thousand top-quality divine crystals had enraged Ka Tuo. His eyes sparkled with a savage light.

The boy paled as he was a little scared. However, he was still persistent. "You must give me one hundred thousand divine

crystals! You can't miss even one! And I don't need even one extra piece! I need divine crystals to save my father!"

Fei Lan looked at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan nodded slowly.

"Okay, we'll give them to you," Fei Lan frowned, taking a brand new Fantasy Sky Ring in Shi Yan's hand and handing it to the teenager. "You can check it."

"I'm Ji You. Thank you." The boy smiled honestly and then checked the Fantasy Sky Ring. His smile became brighter. "Yeah, it isn't missing a piece. Ji You will remember your benevolence."

"Get straight to our business," Fei Lan said impatiently.

Ji You nodded. "It's deep inside Broken Star Field. I went there with some other people. They were all dead. Only I survived. I entered deeper and I found..."

"No living being's aura. No earth and heaven energy. The Dead Qi filled that place. I felt a heavy pressure. I felt dizzy after a short moment. I thought I would die. I got out of that deadly place where the Dead Qi hovering. I thought it should be related to the man in that legend!" said Ji You.

"How do we get there?" asked Fei Lan.

"It's hard to tell. I can guide you guys there," Ji You paused then added, "if you want to go."

Fei Lan looked at Shi Yan again.

"Okay. When we want to go to Broken Star Field, we will find you," Shi Yan smiled. "You can go now. As long as you don't leave the Broken Star Field, I can always find you."

"You believe me? Aren't you afraid that I'm going to run away?" Ji You was surprised.

"You can't escape," Shi Yan said deliberately, "Alright. I think you have something urgent to do."

Ji You nodded continually and carefully put away the Fantasy Sky Ring. He immediately departed as he had to rescue his father as fast as possible.

"We sold that lumber of the Life Ancient Tree for five million divine crystal. We used two million, and now we gave Ji You one hundred thousand more. How can we talk to Na Xin?" Ka Tuo was a little bit ashamed, laughing. "They don't know it yet. How about telling them that we sold that lumber for two million?"

Shi Yan snorted. "We won't be greedy for just a little profit. Na Xin trusts us. We will absolutely not fail them. It's not easy to establish a friendship with the Giant Tribe. We shouldn't lose it. Our fellow people will live in Old Orchid Star for a long time then."

Ka Tuo was busted. He knew he was being unreasonable so he beamed a smile. "I thought it was hard to explain to him though."

"Just tell him the truth. It's like we borrowed divine crystals from them. After we get the Thousand Fold Lotus, we will pay them back," said Shi Yan.

"Ai Fu seems to have a big interest in the Thousand Fold Lotus. Since you bought the Blue Ice Jars to store the Thousand Fold Lotus, perhaps he is related to it somehow. Should it be something unexpected?" Zi Yao said softly, "That man's cunning and sly. We don't have powerful competencies. He will seize things from us by force."

Fei Lan, Leona, and Carthew were also worried about this.

"We had no choice. We didn't know how to harvest the Thousand Fold Lotus, so I could only ask him." Shi Yan was reluctant. "Before the Thousand Fold Lotus appears, I think Ai Fu won't take action. He isn't so sure, anyway. When we harvest the Thousand Fold Lotus, we should be more cautious. We must only take it step by step."

The Agate Star Area wasn't similar to the other star area. There

were as many warriors were as there were clusters of cloud in the sky. There were many Ethereal God Realm experts. Generally, they were stronger than the warriors in the Raging Flame Star Area.

If Fei Lan and Leona were in the Raging Flame Star Area, they could swagger and do anything they wanted. They didn't need to be afraid of anybody. However, in the Agate Star Area, they had to be cautious with every move to avoid fatal consequences.

After Shi Yan discussed with his team, he left to find Na Xin. The Giants were waiting for them in the West of the Broken Star Field. They were very bored.

"Tribal Oldie, how many divine crystals do you think he could exchange?" a muscular Giant concealed his voice, using mind communication.

This race had a loud voice. Even if they relaxed and talked to each other, everybody else around them could listen to their conversation.

Original God Realm experts could use their souls to talk to each other. However, the Giant Tribe didn't use this way of communication often. If they really needed to conceal things, they would use soul communication.

"At least one million divine crystals," Na Xin was stern. "If we can find the hotshots of the Wood Clan, they would buy it for several million or even ten million top-quality divine crystals. Of course, it's not practical in the Broken Star Field. This area doesn't have many strong Wood Clan warriors. Although Ai Fu's evil, he knows things. I think he won't give a low price."

"Will they deceive us? Human Clan clansmen are always cunning and sly. They are good at plotting people and planning wild schemes."

"I think they will not. Little Yan's honest. I believe that he won't do that."

"Tribal Oldie, how could you know that?"

"I don't know. I just feel that he's close to our tribe. He helped us discover the ancient city underground. He contributed the merit half what we got, but he didn't want to compete against us for profits. I think he's worth our close friendship."

"Yeah, it's true. He just picked an unknown ancient book. It doesn't look valuable though."

"Since they've arrived in the Old Orchid Star, we've been luckier. First, we had a chance to get back to our ancestral and we found the inheritance. And then, we discovered the Thousand Fold Lotus and the mysterious ancient city. He's our lucky charm."

"Tribal Oldie, you've got a big harvest in our ancestral land. Have you seen the dawn of your breakthrough yet?"

"Almost. I will break through to Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm soon. If we can get enough materials and pellets, I can do it faster. We've found the lost inheritance. It's destiny that our tribe will thrive!"

The Giants' eyes brightened listening to the Oldie. They were all excited.

The precursors of the Giant Clan came to Agate Star Area to pursue the God Clan. After so many battles, this kind and brave race had volunteered a lot. Many of their precursors were dead in the battlefield, which led to the loss of half of the secret techniques and inheritance of the Giant Clan.

They quenched their God Body, using the powerful body to generate the distinctive features of the unique Ethereal Extent of the Giant Clan. It was also the foundation of the Giant's strength.

However, since their ancestors had died, those secret techniques were lost. This time, when they visited Grace Mainland, Na Xin had completed the inheritance in the ancestral land of the Giant Clan. As long as they had time to rest and recover, they were going

to be stronger soon.

This was the reason why Na Xin wanted to endure this humiliation using seven hundred thousand divine crystals to exchange for their fellow giants. They needed time and they couldn't afford to lose any member.

While Na Xin's team was talking, Shi Yan approached from afar, smiling.

Na Xin's eyes brighten, lowering his voice. "How was it?"

"How much do you think?" Shi Yan smiled, asking.

"At least two million top-quality divine crystals. We can exchange with this value. Perhaps it could be a little bit higher, but not exceeding three million." Na Xin pondered then whispered.

"Five million!" Shi Yan gave a low shout.

The Giants couldn't help but brighten their eyes. They almost laughed happily.

Five million divine crystals were a fortune the Giants had never seen before. With this money, they could buy many cultivating materials for their fellow giants, which would advance the children and youth of the Giant Tribe on the martial path. It would boost their tribe's competence to a whole new level.

"But I can only give you two million and nine hundred thousand," Shi Yan was a little bit embarrassed. "Ai Fu couldn't collect enough five million divine crystals. He needed two million more, so we took some items. Yeah, we must borrow this money from your tribe. After we harvest the Thousand Fold Lotus, we will repay."

"I'm glad that you told us the truth," Na Xin smiled honestly. "About that amount, haha, manage it yourself. If we want to calculate trades, my tribe owes you more."

"This ring stores two million and nine hundred thousand divine crystals. You should pay the ransom for your fellows." Shi Yan

gave him the rings, speaking seriously. "I will repay our debt. I bought the Blue Ice Jars from Ai Fu. As soon as we return to Old Orchid Star, we can harvest the Thousand Fold Lotus immediately."

"Then it's all good," Na Xin smiled again.

Different from Zi Yao and the others, the Giant didn't think about the possibility that Ai Fu could figure out something from the Blue Ice Jars they had bought from him and that he may snatch the item from them. The Giants were still naive.

Na Xin and his Giants took the ring with two million and nine hundred thousand divine crystals and went to find the Mi Ge and Mi Lou brothers to exchange with his fellow Giants.

Shi Yan didn't follow him. He and the others walked around Broken Star Field, waiting for Na Xin's good news.

However, they couldn't wait for any good news as they heard Na Xin's angry roar. His voice thundered Broken Star Field like thunderclaps as if it could burst off the entire area. His voice came from the North region.

Shi Yan frowned, contemplating for a while and then said, "We should go there and see what just happened."

"Okay," Fei Lan's team nodded immediately. They hurried to the North.

Chapter 929: Outsmart

North of Broken Star City.

In a street corner, Na Xin and his giant fellows were enraged. Their energy surged vehemently.

Mi Ge and Mi Lou brothers, and ten King God Realm and Ethereal God Realm warriors were standing and laughing deliberately. Although they were much smaller than the Giants, their auras weren't weaker.

"One of your fellas shouldn't try to find death so easily. He resisted. We just sent him off to heaven." Mi Ge was a member with green-brown skin who was part of the Dark Spirit Clan. He was even shorter than humans. With a cruel and cunning visage, he said, "To kill him, we lost two men. So you have to compensate for our loss. Oh right. One million top-quality divine crystals. No discount."

Mi Lou was his brother who was also a Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm warrior. He stood by the six Giants who were tied by iron chains. He squinted his small eyes coldly.

The six members of the Giant Tribe had wounds all over their bodies. Some wounds already had pus. They looked very pathetic. All were exhausted.

The chains that tied them even had barbs lodged deep into their flesh. Those chains were interlinked with Mi Lou as if he just needed to think to make those tiny hooks pierce through the Giants' bodies.

"Tribal Oldie! Avenger Tucker!"

"Tribal Oldie! Don't mind us! Avenge him!"

"Tribal Oldie!"

"Tribal Oldie!"

The six wounded Giants begged with blood and tears rolling down their faces while they screamed heartrendingly.

Na Xin and the other Giants looked at them with red eyes, trying to press down their anger to confront Mi Ge.

Many experts from different clans in Broken Star City gathered to watch the commotion from other corners of the city. They all looked relaxed as if they didn't care about things that weren't related to them. Evidently, they didn't want to interfere.

Broken Star Field didn't have any rule that banned fighting. As long as they didn't affect other people, a battle to the death was allowed to happen at any moment. No one would give a f*ck. Quite the contrary, it would become an event that would entertain them. Some even made a bet to kill their free time.

Na Xin clenched his jaw, glaring at the brothers. He panted, trying to calm down. He couldn't let his anger and grudge confuse him.

The old Giant hated that he couldn't slaughter them all and crush Mi Ge and Mi Lou into a pulp. What a pity. Na Xin was also at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm, the same realm as the other two. And they were two.

If he risked his life and battled them, he wouldn't gain anything good but drag his other fellow giants into a deadly situation.

Thus, although he was enraged, he was actually trying painfully to not lose his mind.

"Give me one million top-quality divine crystals. I will let them go immediately. It's simple." Mi Ge sneered, speaking unconcernedly. "Don't blame me for not reminding you. We've shown mercy. If we didn't need slaves lately, we would have killed them all. Pay the ransom quickly. Don't wait until I change my mind."

Na Xin's huge body shook. His trembling fingers fumbled for a

ring and started to move the divine crystals inside.

Mi Ge and Mi Lou exchanged looks. Their eyes brightened as they were surprised.

The Giant Tribe was always a poor clan. They thought that asking for one million divine crystals should be the upper limit that the Giants could bear. As Na Xin was moving the divine crystals, it meant that he had more than one million in his ring.

Mi Ge laughed fiendishly, speaking all of a sudden. "Hold on."

Na Xin grimaced, clenching his teeth. "What else do you want?"

"These six Giants and our loss cost one million divine crystals. However...", Mi Ge laughed evilly, "Zhen Gu of your tribe had destroyed our ores in that mine. We must count this too! Okay. Let's say one million divine crystals more. You have to pay two million in total!"

"Da f*q! Mi Ge's too malicious!"

"This is pure blackmailing! Ruthless butcher!"

"The Giant Tribe's so poor that they don't even have enough food on their plates. How could they have so many divine crystals like that to give him?"

"Mi Ge brothers are always like that. They only bully the weak. To the stronger forces, they act as if they are truly the superior's grandchildren."

"The Giants are too unlucky since they bumped into those thugs."

This pair of brothers doesn't have a limit."

". . ."

The onlookers couldn't help but clamor. But since it wasn't related to them, no matter how much they were talking and discussing, none of them stood out to protect and bring justice.

Hearing Mi Ge saying so, Na Xin's face convulsed. It felt like he

had an erupting volcano in his body that he couldn't hold in any longer.

Mi Ge and Mi Lou exchanged looks, sneering continually as if they were waiting for the Giants to attack them first. Then, they would subdue all the Giants and take all of their properties.

This pair of brothers was confident that they could subdue Na Xin and the other Giants if they joined hands. After all, they could take everything.

Na Xin was indignant. His pain had almost overwhelmed his mind. He was on edge. In the next moment, he was going to burst out.

"What do we do?" Carthew frowned, "They can't start the battle. Once they do, Na Xin will lose for sure. However, I can tell that Na Xin is pushed to the edge. I think he won't be able to resist any longer."

"Yeah, the Giants aren't very forbearing. Na Xin is trying hard to press it down." Shi Yan sighed, his eyes flashing. "We must find a way to help them."

"They have two Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. I'm not an equal match against any of them. If we fight, we will lose for sure!" Fei Lan said frankly.

"Well, if we can't find, we have only one solution..." Shi Yan knitted his brows tightly. Electric light flashed in his head while he tried to think of a solution.

The Agate Star Area was different from others. There were as many warriors here as there were trees in the forest. The average realm of their group couldn't be considered powerful. They couldn't use force to solve this problem. In this situation, they had to use their brains rather than their muscles. They couldn't act rashly.

Shi Yan pondered for a while, thoughts crossing his head. Then,

his eyes brightened up when he hissed. "I got it!"

Fei Lan and Leona looked at him skeptically.

"Tu... after that guy died, I have driven pieces of his blood and flesh together with the battleship and many bodies into the chaotic space basin. I'll try to see if I can pull out his flesh or blood. I'll put something on those brothers. As he was at Ethereal God Realm, his blood should have his aura. I think his brother will recognize it shortly." Shi Yan arranged his thoughts, grinning. "You guys go there and find a chance to calm Na Xin down. I'm going to hide until I find a chance to pour the dirty water on those brothers."

"Treacherous!" Ka Tuo smiled.

"Mean!" Carthew grinned.

"Smart!" Zi Yao's beautiful eyes sparkled with bright light.

Then, Fei Lan, Leona, and the others followed his words, walking to Na Xin and the brothers.

Shi Yan's eyes moved swiftly. He was like a gloomy ghost looking for a quiet corner, closing his eyes and urging space powers.

His Soul Consciousness moved like a shuttle, tearing the sky and entering a secret space slit. Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness moved like electronic beams running through the chaotic space currents continually as if it knew where its target was.

A weak beam of energy reflected his Sea of Consciousness. His soul altar shivered slightly.

A pure beam of Soul Consciousness suddenly found its target. In the brilliantly colorful space basin, a battleship hovered with disposable bodies scattered around. They slowly decayed, becoming the most primitive parts in the universe.

As Tu Feng had Ethereal God Realm, blocks of his flesh were also decomposing, but at a much slower speed.

Shi Yan's wisp of Soul Consciousness moved like a hook, flying

towards a dab of blood. It then shrouded a drop of sticky blood and returned to his soul from the chaotic space current.

Mi Ge and Mi Lou were standing, crossing their arms in front of their chest. They were sneering, waiting for Na Xin to burst out. Then, they would have an excuse to capture the Giants and seize their properties.

This pair of brothers wasn't hurrying.

Mi Lou stood between the six wounded Giants. The massive body of the Giants covered him so people couldn't see him wholly.

A tiny space slit flashed and disappeared behind his left shoulder. A drop of blood fell on his left shoulder.

Mi Lou suddenly felt something. He frowned, glancing at his left shoulder and then the wounded Giant lying next to him. He cursed under his breath, his face disdainful.

He thought that the drop of blood on his shoulder came from that Giant soldier. Thus, he didn't mind it much.

From a quiet place far from that area, Shi Yan opened his eyes, grinning cunningly. He headed to someplace far ahead of him discreetly.

In a deep place above his head, a shadow that both his eyes and Soul Consciousness couldn't spot suddenly flashed and then disappeared, drifting towards Shi Yan's direction.

"Are you the Blood Halberd?" Shi Yan walked to the center of Broken Star Field, speaking to an impatient warrior.

"Kid, what are you asking that for?" the man couldn't keep his manners, shouting.

"I'm looking for Tu Fei. I got the news of his brother!" Shi Yan said with a stern face.

Tu Fei had forced this man too much. He wanted to bang his head

on the wall. Listening to Shi Yan, his eyes brightened and he shouted curtly, "Follow me!"

Shortly after, Shi Yan was brought to the Blood Halberd's base in Broken Star Field. Tu Fei looked ferocious, staring at Shi Yan and speaking brutally like a caged wild beast. "Kid, I've met you before."

"Yeah, I've just visited Ai Fu. From Ai Fu, I knew that your brother was murdered." Shi Yan nodded, talking seriously. "On our way to Broken Star Field, we saw a fight where a First Sky of Ethereal God Realm expert was killed. I didn't know him. However, when I saw you recently, I remembered it. I think you look very similar to him!"

Tu Fei stood up, his murderous aura shooting up to the sky. "Who? You know who did that to my brother?"

"I... I don't dare to say. I'm afraid that he will take revenge. They are so dangerous," Shi Yan said weakly.

"I'll protect you. Who dares to touch you? Spit it. Who?" Tu Fei was outraged, his bloodthirsty feeling arising.

"Right inside Broken Star Field. He's confronting the Giants. He's watching the Giants. He got Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm cultivation base. He should have your brother's blood on his body. When you get there, you can sense. Then you will know whether or not I'm telling the truth." Shi Yan smiled inwardly, but his face was solemn. "Please... don't disclose my identity. I'm afraid... I'm scared of them."

"Don't worry. If they did that, I'm sure that they wouldn't stay alive to trouble you!" Tu Fei didn't mind Shi Yan anymore. He flew like a roaring tornado towards the brothers' location.

Chapter 930: Well Played!

North of Broken Star City.

Na Xin gritted his teeth. His eyes looked like he wanted to spray fire. He was trying to hold himself. However, the flame of rage in his heart was burning harder and harder.

Na Xin's spirit had almost collapsed.

Fei Lan came. She frowned and then used her soul to send a message to Na Xin. "Hold on for a little while!"

Na Xin's bloodshot eyes raked through the crowd. He found Fei Lan and the others. He had a gleam of confusion but soon after, he calmed down.

More and more people came to watch this battle. The experts of different races were waiting for something fun: a battle to be taken place soon.

At the moment the atmosphere was the most tense, a tornado roared above the crowd, descending right next to Mi Lou.

Tu Fei!

The crazy, savage Tu Fei!

His brutal line of sight of a venomous snake was focused on Mi Lou. He took a deep breath, using his soul to sense.

Shortly after, his eyes became bloodshot, gazing at Mi Lou's left shoulder. He hissed and roared like a mad ghost. "Mi Lou! Mi Ge! You dare to kill my brother! I will crush your bones!"

Then, he attacked them directly.

The soul altar had a violent surge. Many tornadoes rocketed into the sky instantaneously. They looked like gray smoke columns used to warn people. They attacked Mi Ge and Mi Lou. Each of the tornadoes had sharp icicles in the core. In the middle of the tornadoes, the icicles howled as if they could crush everything into

ashes.

Seeing Tu Fei get mad, many onlookers were startled, staying away as fast as possible.

Na Xin was bewildered seeing Tu Fei become even crazier. He felt very confused.

Tu Feng... Didn't Fei Lan, Leona, and I break his God Body and then Shi Yan swallow his soul altar? Why did Tu Fei come here to attack Mi Lou?

Na Xin had many questions in his mind.

"Tu Fei! What are you getting mad at? We brothers are always in Broken Star Field. We didn't go out. How could we kill your brother Tu Feng?" Mi Ge shouted. His arrogant manner disappeared. "Your Blood Halberd and we have never violated each other. How could we attack your brother? You motherf*cker, you're so wrong!"

"Your mama's wrong!" Tu Fei was enraged, using his soul altar to manipulate the tornadoes. "There's my brother's blood on your brother's body. I'm his brother. How would I not recognize that?"

Shouting and screaming crazily, Tu Fei faced the sky and hollered. He jumped directly into a tornado, moving like a mad ghost toward Mi Lou.

At the same time, Tu Fei shouted deafeningly, "Blood Halberd brothers, kill them for me!"

Two shadows zoomed in from a far distance. Their auras were very intimidating. They responded to Tu Fei's shout. As soon as they arrived, they joined the battle immediately.

"Mi Ge, you want to f*cking die? Do you dare to touch our Blood Halberd's members? I know you are in short of mine slaves, but I didn't expect that you would plot against Blood Halberd. If we don't kill you, how can we Blood Halberd have a foothold in Broken Star Field?"

"Kill them! Brother Tu Feng used to drink with me. You motherf*cker. You dare to touch my brother. You must die!"

There came another two Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm experts.

"Let me help you!" Na Xin had pressed his anger down for a long time. He suddenly cried grumblingly, releasing his Ethereal Extent. Light shot out around his body as he aimed at Mi Ge. "Today is the day you die!"

Tu Fei, Na Xin and two Blood Halberd's warriors who had just arrived were all at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. This force would absolutely gain the upper hand when dealing with the Mi Ge brothers who were at the same level.

Especially Na Xin. No one knew what he had encountered in Grace Mainland. However, at this moment, they saw his realm and power leap. While he was shouting and roaring, brilliant light twirled around him like a cotton ribbon. Then, it entangled Mi Ge, cooperating perfectly with Na Xin's Ethereal Extent.

However, only Na Xin was strong enough to subdue Mi Ge.

"Kill Mi Lou first!" Seeing Na Xin holding Mi Ge, Tu Fei said maliciously, "Daddy wants to show you the consequence of offending Blood Halberd!"

The three experts of Blood Halberd all released their Ethereal Extent. It looked like three new, different worlds had just been formed above Broken Star City. They were marvelous places with palaces, rivers and mountains, stars in the sky, and shooting meteors.

Three Ethereal Extents pressed down from the sky. This heavy and ferocious pressure made Mi Lou's body generate explosions. He wasn't free to watch the wounded soldiers of the Giant Tribe anymore. He cried, suffering from injustice. "I didn't do that. We didn't kill Tu Feng. You're wrong!"

Too bad for him, Tu Fei had only rage in his mind. Also, he thought that he had evidence now, so he didn't listen to Mi Lou's explanation. Tu Fei urged the full power of his Upanishad. Tornadoes rose, pressing towards Mi Lou.

"Don't ruin Broken Star City. You guys, choose another place for your battle!"

"Get the f*ck out of here!"

"If you break my house, you motherf*cker, I won't give you peace!"

Many annoyed voices arose in the crowd. They were from extremely high realm warriors who had a strong background.

Hearing their urge, Tu Fei and the two experts from Blood Halberd, Na Xin, and Mi Ge brothers became worried.

Since they didn't have a chance to explain, Mi Ge and Mi Lou didn't want to linger. Hearing the others shouting, they hurried to flee, flying to the meteorite sea outside Broken Star City. Tu Fei, two experts from Blood Halberd, and Na Xin also flew after them. They seemed to want to eradicate Mi Ge and Mi Lou.

Many onlookers saw them flying away from Broken Star City. It made them feel more comfortable. Then, they also followed them to see the fun.

Including Fei Lan's group.

When Shi Yan arrived, he didn't see Tu Fei messing around. He only saw the two Giants rescuing their six wounded fellows.

"Are they alright?" Shi Yan smiled, asking.

"They're okay. Mi Lou has tied them. We're going to untie them," answered one of the two Giants.

"Let me help you," Shi Yan squinted. A flame slowly emerged, moving magically on the chains that held the Giants. Wherever the flame passed by, the chain was frozen and then they broke easily.

The six wounded Giants looked at Shi Yan with gratitude, asking, "Who... Who is he?"

"During the time you weren't in Old Orchid Star, many things have happened. When the Tribal Oldie comes back, he will explain to you guys," said a Giant.

"Alright."

"I'm going there to check. You guys stay here," Shi Yan didn't linger. He nodded and smiled at them before flying away.

Ai Fu's ancient building.

A ghostly shadow slowly emerged, but people couldn't see his real appearance. "Young Master, Tu Fei and Blood Halberd's warriors are pursuing Mi Ge and Mi Lou."

"What happened?" Ai Fu's interest was aroused, asking curiously. "Is it true that the murder case of Tu Feng... is related to Mi Ge and Mi Lou? It's impossible. How could Mi Ge and Mi Lou dare to provoke Blood Halberd's people? They care about their lives, don't they?"

"They aren't involved in Tu Fei's murder, indeed." The shadow explained in a soft tone. "The murderer is the one who has just come here, the kid who uses space power."

"Why do you say so?" Ai Fu's eyes brightened.

"Mi Ge and Mi Lou wanted to get on the Giants' nerves to take all of their divine crystals. Oh, right. After that kid left this place, he handed the divine crystals to Na Xin. It seems like he had sold the item on behalf of Na Xin..."

"Continue, please."

"When Na Xin was about to crack, that kid used his Space power to drip a drop of blood on Mi Lou. And that drop of blood belonged to... Tu Feng. He told Tu Fei that Mi Ge and Mi Lou had killed Tu

Feng using that drop of blood as evidence. Right after that, Tu Fei flew out. He sensed and certified that the blood belonged to his brother. The battle occurred right after that..."

Ai Fu listened to him. After the shadow finished, his eyes became brighter.

After a while, he couldn't hold his compliments. "Well played! He shifted sh*t on Mi Ge and Mi Lou to solve the Giant Tribe's difficulty. It also saved them from Tu Fei's pursuit. They even had the chance to take the reward of one million from Tu Fei. Holy sh*t! This kid really played it well. He got all he wanted and he didn't even need to labor for that. Excellent! Genius!"

"Young Master, do you want to expose him?" asked the shadow.

"No need. No need!" Ai Fu waved his hand continually. "It's an excellent drama. Hey, I should go there to watch. It has been so long since I've last seen someone at such a level of cunning and deceptive. No. We shouldn't expose him. Absolutely not. If Tu Fei and Mi Ge kill him, who will find the Thousand Fold Lotus for me? Interesting. This kid is interesting! Yeah, you should continue to keep an eye on him for me. I'm going there to see how this funny drama will end. Haha. I feel good. Touché!"

The wild land in the North of Broken Star City.

Six figures rose the storm in the place, crushing all things including light. The earth cracked wherever they passed by. Earth-shaking explosions reverberated in the void.

Na Xin of the Giant looked like the crystal God of War. Brilliant light twirled around him. Beams of crystal light shot out from his God Body, attacking in all directions. His Ethereal Extent continually released the aura, which boosted up his power.

Tornadoes howled, screaming like giant gray dragons that roamed in the air to find some delicious snacks.

They didn't see Mi Ge and Mi Lou as these two people were kept inside the gray tornadoes. They were shouting indignantly, cursing at Tu Fei.

They felt so aggrieved that they wanted to die.

Many warriors of Broken Star City followed them but stayed afar, watching this fierce fight. Sometimes, they gave comments and discussed boisterously.

"Doomed. Mi Ge and his brother are doomed. I wonder if they were totally killed. Oh, I think their soul altars could escape... right?"

"Who knows? Anyway, Na Xin of the Giant Tribe seems to be much stronger today. Mi Ge can't be his opponent. Haha. He has underestimated the Giants."

"Nonsense! The Giant Tribe used to be mighty. Do you know that? It's because they are frank and nice. They were always the vanguard. That was why many of them died. At the same time, they didn't have the fair shares afterward. That was how they were weakened."

"Yeah, the Giant Tribe used to be powerful. What a pity that their ancestors are all gone and their supernatural powers have been lost. From Na Xin's performance, I think he had some good encounter. Interesting."

While they were clamoring, Shi Yan appeared silently by Fei Lan's group, smiling. "If one of them dies, we will receive good things."

Chapter 931: Occupy All Advantages

"Ah! You guys, we meet again!"

Ai Fu was like a ghost, standing quietly by Shi Yan and the others. He lifted his head to look at the wild area in North of the Broken Star City, asking as if he was their friend. "How's it going? Are Mi Ge and his brother hurt yet?"

He stood alone as he didn't bring any guards. However, as soon as he arrived, the other warriors proactively gave him room, which also gave Shi Yan's little space.

The battle between Na Xin, Tu Fei, Mi Ge, and Mi Lou was furious with surging momentum. That area looked like it had to bear a terrifying earthquake. Energies impacted upon each other, creating tremendous shockwaves. People at low realms didn't dare come near.

Mi Ge and Mi Lou were always in the lower hand situation. Na Xin and Blood Halberd besieged, attacking them continually. They became helter-skelter.

However, Mi Ge and Mi Lou didn't hasten to leave as they were trying to explain. They screamed and shouted to convince Tu Fei that they weren't related to Tu Feng's death.

They both knew that if they couldn't explain this time but fled away, it would be no different from escaping because they would be guilty. Blood Halberd would become even more confident that they were the real murderers.

Blood Halberd in Broken Star Field was much stronger than the two brothers. If they brought a grudge against Blood Halberd, even if they could escape, Blood Halberd would chase after them unceasingly.

Too bad for them, Tu Fei thought that he had found evidence and he had rage flood his mind. His attacks weren't reduced and

instead became more formidable.

Amongst this group of six, Na Xin was the only one who knew the truth. If the others knew what had happened back there, Mi Ge, Mi Lou, Tu Fei and Blood Halberd would never spare his life and his tribe.

Therefore, Na Xin also tried his best to not give Mi Ge time to speak.

His Ethereal Extent had many layers like a fantasy world, pressing down from the sky and shrouding Mi Ge entirely.

Light swirled around Na Xin's body, sending sharp air currents to attack Mi Ge. This kind of sharp light could even pierce through Mi Ge's Ethereal Extent.

Mi Ge was trying to strengthen his Ethereal Extent and keep it complete. He had to concentrate, not having time to talk.

Mi Lou's situation was even worse. Tu Fei and two Blood Halberd's experts were attacking him. He could still scream at first. Afterward, he couldn't even roar to vent out his anger as he had to move continually in his Ethereal Extent to dodge Tu Fei's world of tornadoes.

"Mi Ge brothers are destined to be defeated. However, perhaps they won't be killed. It depends on Tu Fei and Blood Halberd. Let's see if they're willing to pay or not." Shi Yan explained in a low voice.

Mi Lou was about to collapse. If he wanted to escape at any cost, he could still have a chance.

Of course, if Tu Fei was afraid that Mi Lou would risk his life and lose their chance to stop him, it was possible that Mi Lou would survive.

Ai Fu smiled until his eyes narrowed, looking at Shi Yan. He nodded inwardly. "Bro, you have sharp eyes then. Haha, seems like everything is going accordingly to your plan. Excellent!" Ai Fu

complimented sincerely.

Shifting blame on Mi Ge and Mi Lou made Blood Halberd attack them which could decrease the danger for the Giants and stop Tu Fei from pursuing the murder case of Tu Feng. He had done only one deed to get all the advantages.

Ai Fu asked himself and he knew that he couldn't make a flawless plan like that.

He thought that Shi Yan was indeed extraordinarily cunning and deceptive. He wanted to befriend this man.

"Don't let him escape!" Tu Fei suddenly shouted, his face ferocious. "Hold him down!"

The two savage experts of the Blood Halberd nodded and they relentlessly attacked again.

Mi Lou was injured already. Seeing that he had no chance to explain, he decided to retreat. They had to dodge this kalpa first though. Afterward, they could find opportunities to clarify this misunderstanding.

A warrior at Second Sky Ethereal God Realm could make their Ethereal Extent and the real world coordinate magically to travel hundreds of thousands of miles in the void.

Unless the same realm warrior had locked his Ethereal Soul by the Ethereal Extent beforehand and used the same passage to pursue, it would be hard to find him, let alone to kill him.

As Mi Lou could see that the situation was getting worse, the light waves started to ripple from his brilliant Ethereal Extent, trying to form a magical, subtle connection with the real world.

As Tu Fei and Blood Halberd's experts realized his intention from this little move, they became more malignant, releasing their soul altars. The three soul altar appeared like three magnificent towers above the mountain range of Broken Star Field.

The Ethereal Extent realm in the four-tiered soul altar sent out a complicated energy fluctuation as if it was the most mysterious and magical power of the entire world. That kind of energy seeped toward the space next to Mi Lou, twisting that space with their thoughts, which blocked Mi Lou's attempt to connect spaces.

Mi Lou was like a savage beast backed into the corner. His face darkened ferociously, shouting. "Do you really want to kill us?"

"If I can't kill you today, how can I talk to my brother!" Tu Fei faced the sky, laughing mournfully and crazily. "I have only one little brother. We'd grown up together. I'd seen him thrive every day. You killed him. I will make your soul perish completely!"

Tu Fei's soul altar in the middle of the Ethereal Extent started to surge and make more tornadoes crying and howling, covering the entire place.

The magical energy fluctuation that Mi Lou was trying to urge became stagnant under the mighty tornadoes.

At the same time, the two Blood Halberd's experts grinned fiendishly, releasing their subtle powers. Countless wild thunderbolt dragons stormed out. Countless icicles showered, covering Mi Lou and stopping him from connecting his Ethereal Extent to the real world.

"I'll risk my life to beat you!" Mi Lou was pushed into the corner. He knew he couldn't use the Ethereal Extent to run away. His face became savage as his soul altar started to enlarge like a blown up balloon. A flow of extremely formidable energy rocketed unceasingly. It became fiercer shortly.

"Brother! No!" Mi Ge shouted, his eyes reddened as the energy surged around him more tremendously.

"Dage, you should leave! I will stop them!" Mi Lou shouted crazily. Both his soul altar and his God Body were ballooning. His destructive energy flooded out rapidly.

"Holy sh*t!"

"Suicide bombing!"

"Flee!"

Many onlookers were scared as they watched the scene. They turned into electric beams, fleeing from this site.

One of them was at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm.

"Move! Hurry! Do not watch it anymore!" Ai Fu shouted. His body flashed and then disappeared.

Shi Yan became tense, shouting, "Go!"

He extended his hand, making a cut. A narrow space slit appeared. He got in immediately, shouting at Fei Lan and the others, "Move!"

Fei Lan, Leona, Carthew, Zi Yao, and Ka Tuo hastened to jump into the space slit, which then sparkled and disappeared.

In the next moment, they appeared in South of Broken Star City.

A series of earth-shaking explosions arose from the wild area in North of Broken Star Field. The noise didn't fade out for a long time. An aggrieved will hovered for a while before slowly dispersing.

Shi Yan's face was dark and solemn. He sensed for seconds and then grinned. He swayed through the space slit again.

It wasn't a hard task for him at his realm to move between the short distances in this area of Broken Star Field. He could cross tens of thousands of miles in just a blink. He could even bring people with him.

When he reappeared on the wildland in North of the Broken Star Field, he didn't see Mi Ge. However, Mi Lou was everywhere...

Pieces of the God Body, bones, tendons, vessels, were hovering under the effect of an unknown power. They appeared in every

corner of the wild land. His soul had turned into countless wisps, but they couldn't gather again, slowly disposing into earth and heaven.

Shi Yan halted between those pieces of blood and flesh, hovering quietly as if he was watching something. Actually, he was trying to absorb the energy.

Mi Lou's soul altar was also broken. His soul energy scattered around like threads of a spider web. However, Shi Yan didn't dare to use the black hole in his soul altar to swallow it, which could catch people's attention. He had just silently taken in the energy from Mi Lou's God Body with his acupuncture points.

Since Mi Lou was at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm, only the energy in his body was too abundant. It shook Shi Yan's acupuncture points, making each of his cells cheerful.

Pieces of Mi Lou's cracked bones and meat floated in the void. Before the energy dispersed, they still hovered for a while. After Shi Yan had taken in their energy, they would fall immediately.

He stood quietly in between Mi Lou's pieces of blood and flesh. He didn't talk but was looking for something.

From a distance, Na Xin appeared with magnificent light around his body. He had a trickle of blood on the corner of his mouth. However, his eyes were still bright.

On the other side, Tu Fei and the two Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm of the Blood Halberd were pale. They looked exhausted. The three of them sat down cross-legged to adjust their aura and stabilize their energy.

Tu Fei frowned, looking at Shi Yan. He snorted and then thundered. "Kid, you're hurried enough. Aren't you afraid that I won't pay you?"

While talking, Tu Fei slipped off a ring on his finger, flickering it toward Shi Yan.

Shi Yan was so happy, receiving the ring. He used his Soul Consciousness to sense then laughed. "Thank you, Sir Tu Fei. You do respect your credit! Such a real man!"

Tu Fei thought that he came to ask for payment. He didn't know that Shi Yan came here to try to take the energy from Mi Lou's body before it was lost when his energy dispersed into earth and heaven.

Giant Na Xin was shocked. He gazed at Shi Yan, his eyes darkening.

The secret that had disturbed him was exposed now. He finally knew why Tu Fei took his Blood Halberd's experts to kill Mi Ge and Mi Lou.

Because of him...

Na Xin felt a chill in his heart. Shi Yan hadn't spent a bit of effort, but he was able to get the Mi brothers killed while he took everything. This gave Na Xin, the Giant with a kind heart, goosebumps.

Too cunning! Too wicked!

Shi Yan glanced at Na Xin, smiling. He then bent his body towards Tu Fei and left to a blind place, tearing the sky and returning to where Leona and Fei Lan was.

"Find a quiet place immediately. You guys have good fortune then," hissed Shi Yan.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo were surprised, smiling simultaneously.

Chapter 932: Blood Replacement!

Shi Yan used ten thousand divine crystals to hire a training court.

This court had ten cultivating rooms and a secret room hidden deep underground. It also had a preset barrier, which could block all sensing activity. This place was indeed suitable for them.

In the secret chamber, Shi Yan, Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo sat down crossed-legged. Shi Yan sat on the opposite sides to the other three.

Pure energy was released from each of Shi Yan's acupuncture points. They divided into three flows that poured to the blood mark on the forehead of Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo respectively.

This time, Shi Yan was capable of precisely controlling the amount of energy released.

At Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm, Mi Lou was one level higher than Tu Feng. The intensity of Essence Qi when his God Body exploded was several times thicker than Tu Feng's.

Without Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo taking the excess, Shi Yan couldn't digest all of it alone. Perhaps he would explode to death.

Through the blood mark, Fei Lan and the other two helped him share the excess of energy, especially Fei Lan. She had reached First Sky of Ethereal God Realm so she could absorb a lot of energy.

Shi Yan sat neatly, letting his exquisite Soul Consciousness guide the surging energy in his vessels that flooded the Essence Qi Ancient Tree to refine his God Body.

After many times of quenching, Shi Yan's God Body had reached an incredible toughness. This time, when carrying out the quenching, he stressed the power of the Immortal Rebirth Secret to condense the Immortal Demon Blood. As the energy rolled in his vessels, magical changes started to occur.

Above the hidden chamber.

Carthew and Zi Yao were waiting in a one-thousand-square-meter stone room. Zi Yao's charming face looked obviously dejected.

Carthew knew she wasn't comfortable. He advised her reluctantly. "You shouldn't mind it much. That kid must have some secrets, which are related to Leona, Fei Lan, and Ka Tuo. That's why he doesn't want us to watch them."

"I understand," Zi Yao beautiful eyes sparkled a gleamed of sorrow. "I found that I couldn't enter his heart. Moreover, after we left Raging Flame Star Area, I felt helpless, so helpless..."

After they had left Raging Flame Star Area, Shi Yan with his power and knowledge had naturally become their leader.

Even Fei Lan and Leona had followed his orders, which was unimaginable in Carthew and Zi Yao's points of view.

However, since they had arrived in Old Orchid Star, Shi Yan had proven his competence many times. He met the requirements of a leader who could give them many benefits.

Jester who used to have a different opinion was now subdued, following him honestly. From some aspect, he did have charisma.

However, this had weakened Zi Yao and Carthew's confidence...

Especially Zi Yao.

When they were in Raging Flame Star Area, she was the noble princess of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation with an honorable position. Her realm wasn't bad. She was also a smart princess, the top warrior amongst the top warriors.

However, in this Agate Star Area, she was just a small, ordinary Original God Realm warrior who didn't have a compelling background. Her cultivation progress was also paused. The longer

she stayed with Shi Yan, the greater the pressure she had to bear.

Gradually, she found that she couldn't catch up with Shi Yan...

"Apparently, he has some purpose. He has many secrets. As you can't get into his heart, you can't know his secrets. Also, you can't actually merge with him." Carthew sighed, "This kid is a miracle. I've known this when we were still in Raging Flame Star Area. However, I had underestimated him. I think that if you do have feelings for him, you shouldn't be shy and should be more active. With your intelligence and glamor, I think he won't be able to resist. Especially... since that little girl Feng Rao isn't here."

"Should we seize the chance like that?" Zi Yao muttered, blushing beautifully. She was shy so she couldn't hold it.

"Haha, if Feng Rao wasn't lucky enough to go with him that year, things wouldn't be like this today. At that time, you weren't with Shi Yan." Carthew chuckled.

"At that moment, I didn't think that he was the one I wanted with all my heart. It's not because Feng Rao had taken that chance. It was her destiny." Zi Yao forced a smile, "Moreover, he treats Feng Rao well. If I interfere with them now, wouldn't I be... a little despicable?"

"I don't know what Your Highness think, but I think that if you love someone, you won't think about anything else but winning his heart. Frankly speaking, talking about love, it matters to only two people, you and your loved one." Carthew guided the girl.

Zi Yao was astounded for a while. Then she thinned her lips. "I... I will try."

Carthew smiled happily.

In the secret room.

No more light of pure energy emitted from Shi Yan's body at this

moment. Fei Lan, Ka Tuo, and Leona were sitting neatly, carefully digesting the energy, and merging it with their own energy in their body.

Ka Tuo suddenly shuddered. His soul altar started to spin continuously, releasing a flow of chaotic energy.

That twisted energy covered him tightly, creating a chunk of some substance, which was floating and transforming according to the change of his chaotic energy.

He got the complete inheritance from Shi Yan. As he had ascetically cultivated for many years, his realm wasn't low. However, due to his incomplete inheritance, he couldn't break through fast.

After the complete inheritance had been integrated into his soul, he had soon increased his realm on a larger scale. In God Perishing Land, Ka Tuo received the subtle chaotic energy left by Ge Lu, which boosted his realm evidently. Receiving soul energy from Shi Yan twice, he became the first expert having a breakthrough in this group.

He was breaking to Second Sky Original God Realm from First Sky of Original God Realm. As seen from his momentum, it would come shortly.

Staying in the center of the twisted, chaotic energy, Ka Tuo's face was deformed, which looked pretty funny.

His body continued to distort. He suddenly recalled something. A ring on his finger flashed.

Some round pellets emerged from the ring. He swallowed them all. The fragrance of the pellets seeped into his internal organs. The medicinal efficacy dissolved and circulated in his body, Sea of Consciousness, and soul altar.

They were the pellets he found in Ai Fu's treasury, which were at level 6 Divine Grade, pretty suitable for his breakthrough.

Not long after he had swallowed the pellets, Ka Tuo's spirit, Qi, and soul became abnormal. His soul altar spun, diffusing a faint aroma. His Original Soul gradually calmed down, becoming clear and empty. Suddenly, Chaos power Upanishad in his head became easier to perceive.

He was increasing his realm step by step.

After Fei Lan and Leona had refined the energy, they felt something. They couldn't help but look at Ka Tuo with astonishment in their eyes.

Excellent innate endowment!

Fei Lan and Leona exhaled and then shifted to look at Shi Yan, who still had his eyes closed, his aura ancient and long with a faint smell of blood.

They didn't know that Shi Yan was using the Immortal Rebirth Secret to refine the pure energy and his body to create the Immortal Demon Blood.

Scarlet drops of Immortal Demon Blood that looked like ruby rolled into his vessels in circulation.

He was carrying out the blood replacement.

The number of Immortal Blood Demon drops he had generated this time was significant. Together with the previous accumulation, Shi Yan thought he could attempt to replace the blood in his body. He immediately carried out his plan.

Drops of scarlet Immortal Demon Blood slowly moved inside his vessels. They looked like blood pearls on a pearl chain, drop by drop. His original blood evaporated into Blood Qi, diffusing through his skin and giving people the distinctive smell of blood.

While replacing his blood, his body became scarily garnet. At this moment, he looked like a bloody man.

After Fei Lan and Leona had finished refining the abundant

energy that Shi Yan just gave them, they frowned as they were a little bit anxious. They didn't know whether Shi Yan's current situation was good or bad.

They didn't even know that Shi Yan could replace his blood or what was good about replacing blood, which made them worried.

Today, even if Shi Yan wanted to get rid of them, they wouldn't leave him.

With the previous and the current experiences, they knew what kind of benefits they could receive if they stayed with Shi Yan. Also, the encounters they had would make people jealous.

To a warrior, his realm was the foundation of everything while a mighty competence was all he could have.

Shi Yan could give them all of these.

"Will he be alright?" Leona frowned, "Should we help him?"

"Help him?" Fei Lan forced a smile. "Do you know how to help him? If I knew, I wouldn't just sit here and watch. Anyway, I think... you don't even know what's happening to him, right?"

Leona nodded.

"If we don't know the causes, we shouldn't act rashly. I think he isn't similar to ordinary humans. If he receives a mighty inheritance, he should have something unique. I think we can only watch him then," said Fei Lan.

Leona hesitated for a while and then said reluctantly. "We could only wait in vain then."

"It'd be better than acting rashly," said Fei Lan indifferently.

Thus, they just looked at Shi Yan, waiting in silence.

Under their gaze, it looked like Shi Yan's entire body was congested. Suddenly, a blood halo expanded from him, which looked more like a real, magnificent crystal.

His God Body was covered by the blood light, which then created a giant blood cocoon. From the transparent state, it became opaque. It looked like some strange creature was undergoing its last transformation. Breaking this chrysalis, it would become a butterfly.

Fei Lan and Leona gawked. They could see a gleam of fear in each other's eyes.

Shi Yan's transformation at this moment wasn't similar to any normal creature. It looked eccentric, yet beautiful, and it made them confused.

"Is he a human after all?" Leona contemplated for a while and then muttered.

Fei Lan had a bitter gleam on her face. "I was certain that he was. But now... I don't know. But I believe he knows what he's doing. Otherwise, he would have moved to resist and not stand idly like this."

Listening to her, Leona could feel that. She nodded. "Yeah, he isn't resisting. I can tell that he's happily accepting everything. It means that he knows what he's doing. So, what's he doing after all?"

"Only God knows," Fei Lan shook her head.

Chapter 933: Blood is Boiling! Perfect Form?

Shi Yan's God Body was hiding inside the blood chrysalis so Fei Lan and Leona couldn't see him. However, beams of blood light moved on the blood chrysalis like a bunch of snakes with intellect.

An immense Blood Qi gushed out terrifyingly from the blood chrysalis. Fei Lan and Leona were frightened.

Thump Thump Thump!

His heartbeat was powerful like a rumbling thunder. It felt like a massive hammer continuously pounding Shi Yan.

However, Fei Lan and Leona clearly understood that the noise was Shi Yan's heartbeat.

Gradually, more clear and exquisite cracking noises came from the blood chrysalis like the breaking or exploding of bones, which rose the hair on their napes.

At Fei Lan's and Leona's realms, they could see inside the blood cocoon. However, they couldn't know what was happening inside even when they used their Soul Consciousness.

They only knew that Shi Yan was transforming!

They still didn't know whether his transformation was good or bad. They didn't dare to tear the blood chrysalis. They could only watch until the moment he broke this chrysalis.

Time flew hurriedly.

Three days had passed as quickly as a blink of an eye.

After three days, Shi Yan was still inside the blood cocoon while Blood Qi surged more vehemently. More blood light wound around the blood cocoon. Blood electric spears shot out like lightning strikes.

Leona and Fei Lan wore a darker face.

Ka Tuo wasn't far from them. He had reached the critical moment. His soul altar started to slow down as if he had to consume a lot of energy for each round.

His soul altar becoming sluggish meant that it was undergoing a transformation. Each round it spun now was one time of quenching.

Fei Lan and Leona had been through this step. They knew when the madly spinning soul altar slowed down and how heavy it was to make it revolve one time. The warrior needed a tenacious mind and spirit to capture the power Upanishad to break through.

When Ka Tuo's knowledge of Chaos power Upanishad had something new, he had to stimulate the energy in his body with more effort to move the soul altar to go through one round. Ka Tuo's God Body and soul altar slowly revolved. Brilliant light emitted from his body, making him a significant source of light.

He didn't use divine crystals. Earth and heaven energy in this area was also diluted, which couldn't support him much.

But he had the energy Shi Yan had given him!

That amount of dense energy was enough to supplement the amount he had consumed to finish his breakthrough. Thus, Ka Tuo didn't need to worry about energy. He just needed to understand his Chaos Upanishad.

Gradually, Ka Tuo found it harder to move his soul altar. It felt very heavy.

However, the chaotic energy surging around him and the coverage of his God Domain was still expanding. Each inch he covered meant progress towards his breakthrough.

Eventually, when Ka Tuo's understanding of chaotic energy had reached another level using the secret inheritance Ge Lu gave him, his soul altar forcefully spun one round.

Boom!

An explosion echoed from both Ka Tuo's soul altar and God Body. However, it was like the whisper of an Angel to him as it carried the magical essence of the world.

The light around his body retreated. His aura stabilized. The God Domain created from the chaotic power was also retrieved.

Ka Tuo sat still. However, he gave people a strange feeling as he seemed to combine into one with earth and heaven, matching perfectly and becoming part of Broken Star City and Broken Star Field.

He had successfully broken through to Second Sky of Original God Realm. At this moment, he just needed to steady his energy, calm down his soul altar and wait for the moment to wake up.

"His innate endowment isn't ordinary. No wonder why he received the inheritance. I've been observing him throughout past few years. He does have qualifications to receive the inheritance." Fei Lan said softly, "It seems that the Chaos Upanishad Inheritance isn't open to anyone. Perhaps, before him, many had received it and perished because they couldn't bear the inheritance."

"I think so. Ka Tuo is also a madman. He didn't always follow the rules in Heaven Punishment City. If you didn't protect him discreetly, he would have died already," smiled Leona.

"We still have someone extraordinary here," Fei Lan looked at Shi Yan. "This man is much more formidable than Ka Tuo. The inheritance he received is also the wickedest one. Anyway, his transformation is slower than Ka Tuo's. I wonder what's going on in there."

Leona beamed a forced smile as she didn't know what to say.

Under their gazes, the blood lights slowly retreated into the blood chrysalis as if they were going to wind around Shi Yan's God Body.

Slowly, the beam of blood light from the blood cocoon

disappeared. It looked a bit shriveled as if it had lost all of the blood.

Another seven days had passed.

The blood chrysalis quieted down. There was no beam of aura diffused to the atmosphere. They didn't even hear Shi Yan's heartbeat anymore.

It seemed like he was dead.

However, Fei Lan and Leona knew that Shi Yan hadn't died yet because they could still feel his soul aura and the life magnetic field from that blood chrysalis.

Ka Tuo woke up, laughing excitedly. "I have broken through! I've reached the Second Sky of Original God Realm!"

"Shut up!" Fei Lan and Leona hissed in unison.

Ka Tuo retracted his neck, shutting his mouth. Now he saw the blood chrysalis, asking in astonishment. "What happened?" He tried to press his voice.

"He's in there," Leona pointed at the blood chrysalis, "When you were breaking through, he was carrying out some kind of mysterious transformation. I think... he's about to finish."

"Transformation? What transformation? What's going on?" Ka Tuo was frightened, "Will he be alright?"

"Well, we would believe you if you said that something would happen to you. But him, I don't think so!" Leona pouted, talking coldly, "I think he's breaking through because he had a big harvest this time. However, I don't think he's carrying out a breakthrough of his realm. It seems like something more magical. We don't know what's happening to him. We could only wait and see."

Listening to her, Ka Tuo jolted up, frowning at the blood chrysalis, speaking emotionally. "I think my senior's breakthrough will be more marvelous than mine. He would have something

magical that we can hardly imagine."

"Of course," Fei Lan said resolutely, "he received the most powerful inheritance, which ours can't be compared to. No matter what magical things he makes, I don't think they are strange."

The three of them lowered their voice and discussed. They still kept an eye on Shi Yan, not wanting to miss any small detail.

After ten more days.

Today, more crispy sounds echoed from the blood chrysalis. At the moment the sound arose, an immense, fierce Blood Qi erupted like a volcano.

Swish!

The blood chrysalis was torn, turning into dust and vanishing.

Shi Yan's God Body was exposed immediately.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo's eyes brightened, gazing at him with great astonishment.

At this moment, Shi Yan was still himself, but he was undergoing a significant transformation.

He was naked. Each of his muscles was transparent like ruby. They were crystal clear with fulgent red light.

The human body has several hundred muscles. Each of Shi Yan's muscles seemed to have reached perfect condition. It wasn't too rough, but it was refined to the acme. For example, if it were a little bit bigger, it would affect his speed. If it were a bit smaller, it would affect his bursting power. They were connected perfectly with each other to promote his God Body's powers flawlessly!

In Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo's points of view, the perfect form of a warrior was this one, the body and arrangement of muscles that they were observing!

They felt inexplicable. However, in their eyes, Shi Yan's muscles' arrangement was like a heavenly masterpiece of art. Not only did it

look extraordinarily splendid and exquisite, it could also release the power to the acme.

This was the most perfect form of the warrior.

Fine spikes jutted out from his shoulders, elbows, and knees. They looked red and sharp like sharp horns. With different lengths, they wouldn't affect him when he moved his God Body. They wouldn't hurt him, but they would create the highest level of damage against his opponent.

His eyes were garnet like the most splendid ruby. His long hair was red as if he had soaked them in blood. The bizarre, evil red that shook people's heart would give them anxiety as if it had a devilish power.

Shi Yan was around two meters tall. He looked like a sculpture carved with dedication. Each of his muscles was transparent and pure like ruby. Even when he had spikes, Blood Qi in his body rolled and surged tremendously. His Blood Qi was even more abundant than a one-thousand-meter-long beast.

It was a miracle!

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo couldn't take their eyes off him. They gawked, dropping their jaws with astounded faces.

"What? Don't you recognize me?"

Shi Yan grinned.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo woke up. They were shaking and shouting. "What happened?"

Immortal Demon Blood seethed and boiled in his body. To maintain this form, he had to use Immortal Demon Blood at every minute. However, the feeling he got in this form was awesome! It gave him thoughts of engaging in a furious battle. The desire to fighting gushed out uncontrollably.

In this form, his desire to slaughter and his thirst for a bloody

battle swelled harder as if they didn't want him to stay idle for even a moment!

The Immortal Demon Blood was burning in his vessel every second. It gave him an evil and wild energy that could even tear the sky. This was the fighting form of the Immortal Demon Clan after they had their blood replaced!

"It's hard to explain. My blood is a little strange. This time, I finally urged all the power of my blood. Oh right. There's a race called the Immortal Demon Race. This shape of mine is the fighting form of that race. I have to burn my blood to use this form." Shi Yan frowned, trying to explain.

"You look a bit similar to that God Clan man. However, it's not quite the same. He wasn't red and he didn't have the same aura as you," said Ka Tuo all of a sudden.

Hearing him, Fei Lan and Leona eyed Shi Yan. They also became aghast.

The God Clan man they encountered in God Perishing Land also had spikes on his body and armor that lingered on his skin. At this moment, Shi Yan looked somehow similar to him. If his refined muscles turned into scaled armor, he would look more like that God Clan man.

"I'm definitely not one of them," Shi Yan grinned, "If I were one of them, I would never have received the inheritance. But you say that I look somehow similar to him. I think perhaps we share something back in our origin."

Chapter 934: Proper Arrangement

Meeting Hall, Ai Fu's ancient building.

A gloomy shadow floated in the hall, speaking spookily. "They hired a training court. That kid and the other three are staying in the hidden chamber. I am guessing that they are cultivating"

Ai Fu lay on his side on a soft sofa, eating fruits and drinking good wine. He asked casually, "Why didn't you get in there and check it better?"

"The hidden chamber has seven layers of barriers. I could go in there, but I was not sure if I would disturb them. As you've advised, I considered that it was important to not disclose myself. Thus, I didn't tear the barriers," explained the shadow.

"Before you've fallen, you were at Peak of Ethereal God Realm. You had almost reached Incipient God Realm. Although you have only the Ethereal Soul now, you can't even tear the barrier discreetly?" Ai Fu frowned.

The shadow sighed begrudgingly. "My soul altar exploded. My Sea of Consciousness perished. The tier of power Upanishads and Ethereal Extent vanished. I have only the Ethereal Soul now. The abilities that I can use are limited. If I still had my soul altar, I could have done it easily. But now... I don't have a choice."

"Then forget it. You watch them for me. Don't let them leave Broken Star City without me knowing about that," said Ai Fu impatiently.

"Young Master, don't worry. Once they reappear, I will know it immediately. And please remember to rebuild my soul altar," said the shadow solemnly.

"I know," Ai Fu waved his hand, signaling the ominous shadow to leave. After there was no shadow above his head, he snorted disdainfully.

"Young Master," one of the Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm experts craned his neck out of the five-colored light passage behind the hall. "The Blood Halberd's Master sent a message. They want us to find Mi Ge. After that battle, Mi Ge has escaped to Broken Star Field. He's hiding."

"Mi Ge?" Ai Fu smiled, "Such bad luck. He doesn't know that people have plotted against him. Now, Blood Halberd is after him. Haha."

That old man didn't say a thing. He just waited silently.

"How much has he offered?" Ai Fu looked interested in this business. "Mi Ge's at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. His life should be worth a lot."

"One million," said the old man.

"Oh, too little! Too little!" Ai Fu shook his head continually. "You tell him. If it's less than two million, I don't give a f*ck about this business. The Blood Halberd has had big harvests around Broken Star Field recently. If they want to use my service, I require a generous pay."

"Understood," the old man retreated.

Hidden chamber.

Shi Yan's eyes weren't garnet anymore. The terrifying blood halo around his body slowly was absorbed into his body. His form gradually resumed.

"To maintain this condition, I have to use blood in my body. If I don't have to fight, I won't use it often." Shi Yan smiled, explaining to Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo, "Condensing the blood isn't an easy task."

The other three nodded silently, but they actually didn't understand.

Everyone has blood in their body, right? Why did he need to condense it? If he had to burn his blood, how could he endure that?

"Hey! Ka Tuo, you've broken through!" Shi Yan screamed in surprise, smiling. "Not bad. Not bad. Seems like you got good things. Right. At this speed, I think everybody could strengthen their realms fast."

"All thanks to you, senior!" Ka Tuo said honestly, "Without your help, I wouldn't be the Ka Tuo I am today. I will memorize your grace forever."

Waving his hand, Shi Yan didn't want to talk about that. "We're the locusts on the same string. We will advance together and retreat together. Of course, we have to try our best together."

"Senior, why wouldn't you break through? At your cultivation speed, it's time... right?"

Ka Tuo and Leona also looked at him, paying attention to this matter.

Since he had entered Raging Flame Star Area, Shi Yan was like a miracle as he continually broke through to the new realms. His progress was fast as if he didn't have a bottleneck or the need of energy accumulation. This kind of breakthrough happened until now.

"... My power is enough, but my realm is still a little bit short." Giving a forced smile, he said slowly, "Breaking into the new realm requires the comprehension of power Upanishad. I still need a little more. Yeah, I'm trying my best in this aspect."

Then, he waved his hand. The Fantasy Sky Ring sparkled.

The Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation he received from Ai Fu appeared in the hidden chamber, falling to the ground. This pair of formations had Empty Fantasy Crystals as the foundation. The lines on the formation carved in the crystals were exquisite

and it carried the power and mysteries of Space power.

Using this Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation, he could connect the Broken Star Field with the Old Orchid Star. If he succeeded, they wouldn't need to spend several months to return.

"I want to use this Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation to advance further in Space power Upanishad." Shi Yan smiled, speaking to the other three, "We'll stay in Broken Star City for a while. I will try to fix them. Even if I can't fix them, I'm sure I will still make some progress in Space power. It was not a bad deal buying this toy."

"Na Xin's waiting for you outside," said Fei Lan.

Shi Yan was surprised. He nodded, "Then I'll go meet him first. Yeah, I should explain to him though."

Getting out of the secret chamber, Fei Lan, Leona, Ka Tuo, and Shi Yan walked to the training yard.

Carthew and Zi Yao were happy seeing them leaving the hidden chamber.

"Oh wow!" Carthew was shocked, looking at Ka Tuo. "You... you've broken through?"

"Ha ha!" Ka Tuo laughed loudly. "Yeah, I did! Carthew! Carthew! You'd roamed around Land of God Punishment and killed a lot of our Pirates. You captured anyone in your way. Now what? Do you dare to touch me now?"

Carthew was still at First Sky of Original God Realm.

He beamed a forced smile. "What's the meaning of reminding me of such things in Agate Star Area?"

Leona snorted, glaring at Ka Tuo who was swaggering, speaking faintly. "I used to work in Land of God Punishment for a while. Do you think breaking through one level will allow you to do anything you want? There is no need to mention that we're in Agate Star

Area. Even if we're in Raging Flame Star Area, the Second Sky of Original God Realm isn't the peak. If Du Tian Ji wanted to kill you, you wouldn't be able to escape!"

Ka Tuo got told off. He became embarrassed, scratching his head. "I was just kidding because I was too happy. You don't need to react that much."

Leona snorted. "I just don't want to see you swaggering."

Ka Tuo immediately behaved.

"Na Xin is waiting outside," Zi Yao smiled, looking at Shi Yan and murmuring. "He and his Giant fellows have been waiting for you for a long time. He wants to see you."

"I'm going to see them," Shi Yan smiled and nodded.

The training court that they rented also had a garden, cultivating rooms, and rooms to stay. However, those rooms were designed for regular races. They weren't suitable for the Giants. With Na Xin's figure, he would break this place. They couldn't get into the place, so they had to wait outside.

Na Xin and the Giants stood on the street outside the training yard. Seeing Shi Yan, they immediately showed their gratitude.

This was especially the case for Na Xin. His eyes brightened as he wanted to use the etiquette of the Giants to greet him.

Na Xin's eyes were filled with gratitude. He knew what happened to Mi Ge and Mi Lou, but he couldn't explain it to his fellows. Seeing Shi Yan, he said immediately, "On behalf of my fellows, I thank you. You don't need to repay the amount of divine crystals you said that you wanted to borrow from us."

Some Giants looked at Na Xin as they felt weird inwardly.

Shi Yan had helped them sell the lumber of the Life Ancient Tree of the Wood Clan. They appreciated his deed. But they didn't understand why Na Xin said that Shi Yan didn't need to pay them

back the amount he borrowed.

Na Xin didn't answer and just looked at Shi Yan deep in his eyes.

Shi Yan smiled as he knew that Na Xin had figured out why Tu Fei had attacked Mi Ge and Mi Lou. "Precursor, please don't mind it much. We all live in Old Orchid Star. Of course, we have to help each other. And also, you're already here but please wait for me for a little while. I have something I'm going to bring back and I need you to help me bring it back to Old Orchid Star."

Na Xin was confused. "What's that?"

"Give me some time. After I've fixed it, you will help me bring it back to Old Orchid Star." Shi Yan didn't explain. He just said something and asked Na Xin to stay in Broken Star Field for a while.

Na Xin had a lot of divine crystals, so he didn't want to go home immediately. He wanted to use the divine crystals to exchange for some materials. He would bring some materials to Old Orchid Star so his fellow giants could have the better cultivating materials. Also, the children and soldiers of his tribe would then be able to break through faster.

He wanted to stay here for a while, indeed. Listening to Shi Yan's request, he agreed frankly. After Shi Yan finished his business, they would leave together.

The Giants went away to work on their business. Shi Yan also hastened to repair the Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation. He didn't talk more, wanting to get into the hidden chamber immediately.

"Shi Yan, I... I want to talk to you." Seeing him want to leave, Zi Yao couldn't help but stop him. Her beautiful eyes were sparkling strangely as she was also blushing uneasily.

Shi Yan was surprised, turning his head to look at her. "Anything important?"

"No, no... It's... It's not urgent..." Zi Yao was a little bit anxious as she couldn't make herself clear. She made people skeptical.

"Not urgent? Oh okay. Wait for me for several days then," Shi Yan pondered for a while and then said seriously. "I need to fix a formation. That formation is very important to us. I need to fix them and Na Xin will bring it to Old Orchid Star."

Hearing him, Zi Yao said hastily, "So you should work first. Yeah, you need to work on it first. I'm not impatient." She exhaled in relief inwardly. However, she felt uneasy, nervous, and restless.

Shi Yan didn't know what she was thinking. He didn't ask more, nodding to greet her and then going into the secret chambers. After he sealed the door, he paid attention to the Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation.

If he could fix the formation, he would let Na Xin bring the Mother formation back to Old Orchid Star. He would keep the Child formation. No matter where they were, they would be able to return to Old Orchid Star instantly. This formation also worked in the life star. If it worked, he wouldn't need to worry about unexpected events in Old Orchid Star.

Besides that, during the time he repaired the formation, he would know how the expert who used Space power had fabricated this formation that year. He would gain understanding about how he had used Space power and applied it.

This meant so much to his advancement of Space power Upanishad. This benefit would be immeasurable. As Shi Yan was hurried, he didn't notice Zi Yao's restless eyes.

In the secret chamber, Shi Yan released his Soul Consciousness, gathering space power to study the Mother and Child Sky Linking formation, his face stern and lucid.

Chapter 935: Opportunity

Space was something marvelous. Non-material structures could be deemed space. However, someone who didn't understand space power couldn't comprehend an area with outer space power.

The Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation was on the ground. This formation used the Empty Fantasy Crystal and dozens of rare materials that Shi Yan didn't know about as the foundation. The edge of the two formations had several thousand concave, fist-sized spots where divine crystals were installed to power up the formations.

The first step Shi Yan had to do was install the divine crystals into those concave spots.

Around thirty thousand divine crystals were put into the spots in the Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation. Those divine crystals had enormous energy. They looked like stars twinkling in the velvet night, giving it a mysterious beauty.

After inlaying all the divine crystals, Shi Yan walked to the Mother formation. He frowned, releasing the Soul Consciousness with space power to seep into the formation.

A magnificently complex space formation, which looked like a giant spider web, slowly formed in his Sea of Consciousness. Exquisite space threads interweaved like silky spider fibers, creating sparkling, wonderful space nodes that were like diamonds.

Pouring Soul Consciousness into the space nodes, Shi Yan found a strange space door in each node.

Shi Yan was scared.

The Mother formation had several hundred thousand space threads, creating millions of space nodes. Each space node was a door connecting two spaces, which could create a space passage.

Amongst millions of space nodes, many of them weren't stable. Space energy inside those space nodes was so dangerous that it could crush anything.

Those unstable nodes hid disorderly doors, which held broken details of this marvelous formation.

If he wanted to fix the Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation, the main thing he had to do was fix those nodes and stabilize the space doors, which would then allow matter to get through them.

Taking a deep breath, Shi Yan's eyes darkened as he was very reluctant.

There were around fifty or sixty thousand broken doors. And it was just for the Mother formation! He hadn't checked the Child formation to see how many nodes needed to be repaired.

Fixing dozens of space doors wasn't a task that he could accomplish in a short time.

He suddenly felt a headache. Instinctively, he wanted to give up. He didn't want to repair the marvelous formation that some warrior with supernatural powers had created.

Sitting neatly by the Mother formation, Shi Yan knitted his brows. His thoughts changed like shooting stars. Ideas appeared that Shi Yan objected and this cycle continued.

After an unknown time, Shi Yan finally calmed down. He took a deep breath, muttering to himself. "Perhaps I should fix one of them first. I should stabilize one door first and then I'll see if I want to continue or not."

His soul altar spun one round. Space energy fluctuated from the power Upanishad tier. It rippled through his God Body, creating the God Domain.

Sizzle Sizzle Sizzle!

The fine space slits slowly emerged like thousands of sabers

floating in his God Domain.

Crack Crack Crack!

His bones sounded as if space energy was cutting him. Shortly after, billions of light dots bloomed from his body. They moved like fireflies, entering the space slits and triggering some space transformation.

The magnificent but unpredictable space currents swirled around him like meteors. They made many splendid curves, giving him a feeling of being immersed in a world of light where he became the real master of space who controlled space as he pleased.

Space sabers moved like an electric light as he mind-controlled them to seep into the space node that his Original Soul had locked, flooding through an unstable space door.

Boom!

His Sea of Consciousness was shaken. Then, it projected a mysterious, complex space formation above his Sea of Consciousness. An intersection in that formation suddenly shone dazzlingly like the brightest star in the sky.

Space threads made by his Soul Consciousness with space power instantaneously flooded into that fulgent space node. His Soul Consciousness seemed to get through a real space door while a vibe was spreading out.

That door looked real and his Soul Consciousness hand could even touch it and feel the fantastic space mysteries inside...

This door was made of space energy. However, it was broken and its pieces were scattered around the magical areas. What Shi Yan wanted to do was use space energy with the same frequency to refine, match, and connect the broken pieces to fix that door.

And he did it that way.

His Soul Consciousness became the mighty, skillful hand that

guided and connected pieces of the door with his energy.

After an unknown time, the shattered space door was complete under the power of Shi Yan's energy, spirit, Soul Consciousness, and his soul. It was combined and refined little by little until it was complete.

At the moment the small dots gathered, the disorderly space node and the door inside became stable and strengthened with space energy. It allowed energy and real matter to get through it.

Shi Yan relaxed his nerves.

Sensing for the second time, Shi Yan found that the space node and the door inside were now back to order. Its energy fluctuation was stable.

He didn't know how long it took.

Sitting silently, he sensed his body and found that he didn't consume a significant amount of Soul Consciousness. His energy was still full.

Shi Yan was happy. He then recalled and assessed his procedure to check the changes of his God body and soul during that time.

After a while, his eyes brightened up. He couldn't help but chuckle.

It turned out that it didn't require him to use too much energy. This massive work that looked really tough to finish wasn't actually that difficult.

Also, that magical formation was able to provide him energy to fix itself. What he needed to do was to use his Soul Consciousness to guide and connect it. The energy it required was self-provided.

The Mother formation had the ability to fix itself, and his God Domain was the fountain of its support.

What he needed to do was to show it the direction and guide it. The formation's energy would fix itself.

Understanding this point, Shi Yan smiled. He knew that if he divided his Soul Consciousness into many flows working at the same time, it wouldn't be very difficult.

Shi Yan understood thoroughly.

Thus, his Sea of Consciousness surged, changing. After he had refined and condensed his Soul Consciousness, he sent them to each of the broken nodes.

His Sea of Consciousness changed, turning into tens of thousands of flows, each of which was one of his many godly tentacles. They entered the unstable nodes. Shi Yan just needed to work on one node and his Soul Consciousness would copy his procedure. Each flow of his Soul Consciousness was a clone of his, copying his actions of guiding and connecting pieces of the broken doors.

It wasn't really tough though.

Shi Yan thought, concentrating on fixing dozens of space nodes of the Mother formation while time flew hastily.

Outside the hidden chamber.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo found themselves a cultivating room. They didn't notice Ka Tuo and Zi Yao as they were digesting energy that they received from Shi Yan and comprehending their power Upanishad.

While Carthew and Zi Yao felt bored, they visited every place in Broken Star City to widen their knowledge of the prosperous Agate Star Area.

Today, Zi Yao saw a bald old human in a special potion shop. He wore a long, gray robe that hid his hands into his sleeves. His shaved head had a magical tattoo as if it was made of strange entangling lights. She didn't know the meaning of that tattoo.

That old man had a quiet aura around his body while he was

looking around the shop with dark eyes.

Shortly after, his eyes gazed on Zi Yao as if he was frozen. His calm aura became excited.

After a while, it seemed like the old man had confirmed something. He stepped over proactively, bending his body and talking gently. "Miss, is it true that you are cultivating Light Upanishad and that you've absorbed outer space Divine Light, which has a consciousness?"

Zi Yao's exquisite face had a gleam of surprise which showed in her beautiful, diamond-like eyes. "Precursor, how did you know that?"

The withered face of the old man brightened up with joy. He said tenderly, "My Master also cultivates Light power Upanishad. She has a deep understanding of outer space Divine Light. Miss, can we go somewhere to talk?"

Zi Yao was astounded. She hesitated, looking at Carthew.

Carthew's voice was dry, giving a forced smile. "His realm's really profound. If he wants to hurt us, we can't even run away."

The old man chuckled and then said seriously. "I won't harm you, and I won't let anyone harm you. I can ensure you about that."

Listening to him, Zi Yao nodded. "Okay."

Shortly after, the old man, Zi Yao and Carthew walked to a remote alley. The old man bent to greet them, introducing himself. "I'm Long Duo, a servant of my Master. I'm here to find an apprentice for my Master. Miss, you're cultivating light power, and you've absorbed outer space Divine Light. You meet the requirements to be a disciple of my Master. If you are willing to do that, you can follow me. I'm sure that after you meet my Master, your realm and power will upgrade on a large scale."

Zi Yao's soft body shivered, her beautiful eyes bright. "Which realm does your Master have?"

"Haha. I'm at Peak of Ethereal God Realm. I think you can guess my Master's realm," said the man called Long Duo humbly. "My Master doesn't live in the Far West. She's in a wonderful secret domain. Her reputation is well-known in any area of Agate Star Area. Miss, my Master has strict requirements for enrolling disciple. Until now, she has had only two apprentices. It's your fortune and destiny. If you agree, I'll take you to my Master. If you don't want it, I will not force you."

Carthew was shocked, he couldn't help but hiss, "Your Highness!"

Zi Yao's knitted her bold brows. She was astounded for a while before she could say softly, "Can you give me more time to think about it?"

"Sure," Long Duo smiled mildly. "I'm staying in Broken Star City and I will wait for you to make up your mind. Can you tell me where are you staying?"

"Yes," Zi Yao told him the address of the training court Shi Yan had rented. Then, she left with Carthew, her mind complicated. She was hesitant.

"Your Highness, this is your big opportunity. You can have an Incipient God Realm teacher who also cultivates Light power Upanishad. I think that if you let this chance slip away, you will regret it for the rest of your life." Carthew said honestly, "Even if you walk the same path with Shi Yan, you can't help him on anything. You can't catch up with him now. If you want to get closer to him, at least, your realm shouldn't be lower than his. Your Highness, please seize this chance!"

"I will wait for him until he gets out," Zi Yao pondered for a while and then sighed, "At least before I leave, I want to bid him farewell."

Chapter 936: A Hug

Ai Fu's ancient building, main hall.

After Long Duo bid farewell to Zi Yao, he came here alone, carrying himself with ease and a natural poise.

Ai Fu and the two Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm old men treated him well. They offered him good wine, smiling warmly.

Long Duo enjoyed his wine. He didn't deny the others' offering. He just smiled and drank relaxedly.

"Sir, you are in a good mood today?" Ai Fu smiled, trying to win his favor.

Long Duo nodded. "Yeah, my mood isn't bad. Master will have one more apprentice. Haha, I didn't expect to find a precious jade for my Master so soon. What good luck I have!"

Ai Fu's eyes brightened. "Sir, did you meet a talent who cultivates Light power Upanishad and has merged with outer space Divine Light?"

Long Duo smiled cheerily, "Yeah, I did."

Ai Fu smiled, speaking continually, "Congratulations! Congratulations! We must drink more to celebrate!"

The other two old men also treated him cordially, raising their glasses. Long Duo didn't deny anyone. He drank several glasses of wine and then said with a serious face, "Ai Fu, now we shall discuss our business. Give me that thing."

"Okay!" Ai Fu stopped saying meaningless words. His Fantasy Sky Ring flashed and the lumber of the Life Ancient Tree of the Wood Clan he bought from Shi Yan emerged. He cautiously handed it to Long Duo.

Long Duo's eyes were as bright and sharp as a saber. He studied the lumber, rubbing the lines of the wooden texture. After a while,

he nodded with a smile. "Your Grandfather had you collect materials for his fortune. Yeah, this is the small lumber of the Life Ancient Tree of the Wood Clan. It's good."

Ai Fu laughed as he was in a good mood.

"As you've sent me a quotation, is there any problem with the price of ten million top-quality divine crystals?"

Ai Fu nodded. He didn't have any other opinion. "Of course no problem. Your 'Divine Light' and I have done business for so many years. Of course, I will never turn down the business. Haha, it's hard to sell this lumber in our Far West. We can't sell it at a good price. We're happy that 'Divine Light' will handle it. I know this lumber attracts Incipient God Realm experts of the Wood Clan a lot. I'm sure you will make a fortune with it."

"Then ten million it is." Long Duo smiled as he was about to pay for the item.

"Sir, don't be impatient," Ai Fu rose his hand, "I don't need it all in cash. I need you to use five million to make me some battleships. I just need five million divine crystals."

"Like the previous time?" Long Duo was surprised, "There's no war in the Far West region. Why do you need to stock up on battleships? Divine Light can produce battleship in various types and styles. You don't require high-quality battleships. Do you think you can find some customers for those expensive battleships?"

"No, not the previous types," Ai Fu smiled. "They should be very very big, large enough to fit the Giants. Yeah, the Giant Tribe has ordered two battleships."

"Big?" Long Duo rubbed his chin, smiling. "So it's not cheap. We used to fabricate one for the Monster Clan. The cost is three million for one. Okay, we're partners for a long time. I can make it two million and five hundred thousand for one battleship. With

your five million, I can make you two. Is that okay?"

"Thank you, Sir. Two battleships are what I want with that amount." Ai Fu smiled.

"Okay, deal." Long Duo nodded, dividing the divine crystals in his Fantasy Sky Ring and then handing it to Ai Fu. "Here's your five million. Soon, I will deliver two giant battleships. At most, it will arrive in your warehouse within fifteen days."

"Good business!"

"Good business!"

Hidden chamber.

Shi Yan opened his eyes. He smiled and got up, relaxing his limbs.

The Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation lay near him on the stone ground. The divine crystals inlaid in the formation had turned into ordinary stones as their energy had been all consumed.

However, at this moment, the Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation had waves of space energy and marvelous energy fluctuations. This shattered formation was repaired.

Smiling, he finished his secluding cultivation time. Although he couldn't break through this time, his understanding of Space Upanishad had progressed. If he could create the 'door' himself, he could use the attainment of Space power to break through to Second Sky of Original God Realm.

Walking to the training court, his Soul Consciousness flickered. Shortly after, Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo arrived.

"Is Na Xin here?" asked Shi Yan.

"Yeah, they've been in Broken Star City to buy cultivating materials. I think they are almost done. They've just returned," said Ka Tuo.

Shi Yan nodded, walking out of the training court. At first glance, he found Na Xin of the Giant Tribe.

As soon as Na Xin saw him, he walked over, greeting him happily. "We've placed an order with Ai Fu. He will make large battleship that we can use. Haha, Ai Fu can do that. He can make even this kind of massive battleship. He's living up to his name in Broken Star City."

As the Old Orchid Star had a terrifying gravity, the bigger the people were, the heavier the gravitational effect was that they had to bear. Thus, it was tough to go through the atmosphere and jump directly into outer space.

They had many Giants, including women and children, who had never had a chance to leave Old Orchid Star to travel around the area due to that great gravity.

When a warrior cultivated, he couldn't only stay in his room to break through. With different power Upanishads, they could find different places that better supported and advanced their understanding of power Upanishads better.

If the Giant children reached a bottleneck during their cultivation, they were better off leaving Old Orchid Star to find a place suitable for their power Upanishad. Afterward, they could progress faster, which would increase the general competence of the Giant Tribe.

The massive battleship that suited the Giant Tribe could take many members of their tribe to a better place for their cultivation before they would reach their specific realm. They would have a better chance to advance.

"What is the initial price?" Shi Yan was surprised.

"Ai Fu said five million divine crystals," Na Xin was a little excited. "We don't have enough divine crystals now. But we have plans. After we harvest the Thousand Fold Lotus, we will have

enough money. Haha. We Giants will have our battleship!"

The other Giants also looked excited. They felt proud because of this big event.

"Five million?" Shi Yan beamed a forced smile inwardly.

He saw many different battleships in Ai Fu's treasury which were priced at one hundred thousand to one million divine crystals. The battleship Ai Fu would fabricate for the Giants cost five million. What a rip off!

Anyway, Na Xin and his fellows had placed the order and they looked very excited so Shi Yan couldn't say anything. He could only discreetly blame their naive nature.

"When can you take that battleship?" asked Shi Yan.

"Ai Fu said that as soon as we have the divine crystals, he will hand the battleship to us anytime." Na Xin was yearning for it. "Kids in our tribe have never seen anything that big. They will be thrilled. Haha. The materials we got home this time would make them so happy. They will go crazy."

"Oh," Shi Yan nodded, talking to him. "You guys help me bring one formation back home. Oh, right. We should buy a battleship to carry it."

He was surprised for a while, asking. "Where's Carthew?"

"I'm here," Carthew's voice came from the training court. "You need me to do something?"

"Take this ring. It has eight hundred thousand divine crystals. You and Na Xin should buy a normal battleship and use the remaining divine crystals to buy some suitable pellets or cultivating materials. We will bring them all to Old Orchid Star." Shi Yan flickered a ring to him.

Carthew received the ring, using his Soul Consciousness to sense and then smiled. "No problem."

Hesitating for a while, he continued, "Shi Yan, Zi Yao wants to see you. She's in a cultivating room. She has something important to tell you."

Shi Yan was surprised. He told Na Xin and Carthew to be careful when placing the Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation. Then, he returned to the training yard confused. He found Zi Yao and then asked softly. "I heard Carthew say that you wanted to see me?"

Zi Yao wore a beautiful purple dress, which supported her slim, gentle body with graceful curves. Her beautiful eyes were like a flower with its sweet nectar. She looked indescribably pretty with her light makeup.

Evidently, she tried to wear makeup for this talk.

Shi Yan was stunned, looking at her. His eyes brightened as he was absorbed into his thoughts. After a while, he said, "You're still so beautiful like when I saw you the first time that year. You make me feel like I've encountered a deity."

Zi Yao's beautiful eyes were like a vast sea with many deep meanings. She studied him and then bloomed a smile. "I'm glad to hear that. When I saw you that year, I didn't think that you could have anything special. I used to hate you though."

"Hate me?" Shi Yan pointed at his nose, forcing a smile. "I saved your brother that year. Why did you hate me? Women, I will never understand them."

"Because you were so calm in front of me. You made me think my charisma was reduced. Because you didn't try to flirt me, I didn't feel pleased. Your realm was so low, but you dared to look at me like that!" Zi Yao smiled charmingly, "Anyway, I didn't feel comfortable to look at you. If you haven't saved my brother, perhaps I would have taught you a lesson."

I would trouble you so much so you would know how dangerous I

was."

"You're unreasonable!" said Shi Yan.

"I want to bid farewell to you," Zi Yao sighed weakly. Her beautiful eyes sparked a gleam of sadness.

Pondering for a while, she suddenly stepped forward. While Shi Yan was bewildered, she hugged him. Her stunning chin rested on his shoulder. Her fragranced orchid breath blew to his ear. "After we say farewell, I don't know when we can meet again. Let me... hug you for a while, okay?"

"Why do you want to leave? Where will you go?" Shi Yan was perplexed, showing that he didn't want that. His body stiffened. "Do you feel like you are being neglected by us? No, I didn't mean it. Fei Lan, Leona, Ka Tuo, and I share the same origin. If you guys know it, it won't bring you anything good but disaster..."

"An Incipient God Realm expert wants to make me a disciple of hers. She cultivates Light power Upanishad. Ah, right, don't guess. I know... that expert's a she." Zi Yao bit her lower lip, her face blushing as she whispered, "Don't say anything. Just let me hug you. Let me feel your existence. I want to memorize this moment."

Shi Yan was baffled, but he was actually touched. Vibes rippled through his heart as he had a lot of emotions at this moment.

Chapter 937: Broken Star Field

When people have someone on their side, they would sometimes not treasure them. Only when that person wants to leave do they feel reluctant and bitter inwardly.

Shi Yan now felt bitter and regret.

Zi Yao left. She decided to leave for the advancement of her realm.

Standing in front of the training court, Shi Yan watched Zi Yao, Carthew, and Na Xin leave. It was the first time he found that he didn't want her to leave. Reflecting by himself, he realized that he didn't pay enough attention or take care of her well enough.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo didn't say anything, standing indifferently by his side.

After a while, Shi Yan pulled himself from sorrow and gave a faint smile. "We should go too."

His mind flickered, connecting his Soul Consciousness to another beam in a direction. He told Ka Tuo, "Bring that boy here."

Ka Tuo nodded and left.

After one hour, he brought Ji You back.

Ji You's eyes were dim and gloomy. He stooped in distress. Seeing Shi Yan and Fei Lan, he bent his body to greet them, muttering, "I'm ready. We can go at any time."

Shi Yan smiled, nodded to him, "Why do you look like this? How is your father?"

Ji You had sold his news for one hundred thousand divine crystals saying that he had to save his father. Shi Yan didn't pay much attention to his father's case. He didn't ask him more or discreetly investigate. However, seeing Ji You with his gloomy countenance, Shi Yan felt skeptical as he asked.

"The same. However, as we have one hundred thousand divine crystals, he should be safe for a while." Ji You was a little bit touched, explaining carefully. "My father's at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm. He used to be awesome. But now his soul altar is damaged. He's on the edge. His soul altar is about to break down. I've used one hundred thousand divine crystals to buy medicine and pellets. However, they could only slow down the damaging progress. They couldn't heal him."

Ji You's eyes reddened, balling his fists. He bit his lower lip, muttering, "My father has taken care of me since I was a little boy. For my development, he'd gone to Broken Star Field to find rare materials to exchange for divine crystals. He helped me reach my current realm. However, Broken Star Field isn't a safe place. Although my father's at Ethereal God Realm, he couldn't help himself. He fought for materials once and got wounded badly... until now..."

Staying in Broken Star City for several months, Shi Yan knew a little about Broken Star Field. Many races lived around the area and many powerful forces had come to Broken Star Field to find cultivating materials.

The Broken Star Field had many types of materials, which attracted experts from the entire Agate Star Area.

Broken Star Field was always chaotic and unsafe. With low realms and insufficient competences, warriors couldn't live there with ease. For example, Zhen Gu and his fellow Giants were beaten up by the Mi brothers. They had almost been killed.

"You seem very familiar with Broken Star Field?" Shi Yan was bewildered. "You can survive even though you only have King God Realm?"

"I have my surviving methods," Ji You lifted his head, speaking honestly. "Every time I go to Broken Star Field, I accompany some people. Since I'm familiar with this place, people hire me to be

their guide. And although my realm's low, I have knowledge and I'm not greedy for what I can't keep. Thus, I can survive. People won't target me."

Shi Yan exchanged looks with the others, their faces strange. This teenager had been living in difficulties. His realm wasn't high and he wasn't old enough, but he had survived Broken Star Field many times. He had to endure many things, living in people's disdain and neglect...

He's done so many things just to save his father's soul altar...

"I've promised you. I will never change my mind. When will you want to depart?" Seeing that they say nothing, Ji You took the initiative and asked.

"We'll depart now," Shi Yan said faintly.

"Good, let's go." Ji You mumbled, "I bid farewell to my father anyway. Let's go."

Blood Halberd's headquarters, Broken Star City.

Today, a middle-aged man wearing a long white robe took his subordinates to this place.

Tu Fei and more than ten warriors of the Blood Halberd stood by the door to greet him, bending their bodies. "Greeting, Sir!"

The middle-aged man wore a cold face. He nodded, walking directly to the main hall. He sat on the chairman's seat, which showed his status, waving his hand.

Tu Fei and the Blood Halberd's warriors now sat down on his two sides.

Da Feng, Master of Blood Halberd, and a Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm warrior, was a famous expert in the Far West region and the entire Broken Star Field. His origin was mysterious. One day, he came to Broken Star Field and built Blood Halberd. He had

spent hundreds of years to make Blood Halberd a potent force in Broken Star Field to the point that people didn't dare to provoke them.

Many people had guessed that Da Feng wasn't a warrior from the Far West since they had never heard about this expert in the Far West region before. They deemed Da Feng a warrior of some mighty force in Agate Star Area. He had come to Far West region and built a force on purpose.

Of course, Da Feng had never admitted anything. No one knew if the rumors were true.

"On my way here, I've investigated Tu Feng's murder case." Da Feng's countenance was cold while icy mist swirled around his body. His eyes were like chilling snowflakes.

Tu Fei jolted up, asking in a low voice. "Sir, what was the result of your investigation?"

"Apparently, it was not Mi Ge and Mi Lou." Da Feng snorted coldly. "You were too impulsive. That kid has fooled you. You let your anger blind your mind."

Although Tu Fei was called a madman in Broken Star City, he didn't dare to retort when the man shouted at him.

"When Tu Feng was murdered, Mi Ge and his brother were in Broken Star Field. I've had someone confirm it. Unless Mi Ge and Mi Lou cultivated Space power, it was impossible for them to get out of Broken Star Field and kill Tu Feng." Da Feng's face was cold as he talked, "Although the Mi brothers were harsh and despicable to the weak, has anyone of you seen them provoking Blood Halberd? Don't they only mess with us? When they did do that, wouldn't they clean it up? How could they let people figure out their crime? An Original God Realm kid could avoid them, witness the case and leave safely?"

Tu Fei and the two Ethereal God Realm experts that had joined

the attack were embarrassed, bending their heads. They didn't dare to say anything to defend themselves.

"You've lost your mind because of anger. You didn't verify the provided information. That was how he could fool you." Da Feng explained everything and then continued indifferently. "That kid is the suspect now. You capture him and use the Search Soul Technique to search his memories. You can find the truth. You fool! You even lost one million divine crystals!" Da Feng hissed.

Tu Fei discolored. A fire was about to ignite in his eyes. "I'm going to capture him now! That damn kid dared to deceive me!"

He roared, flying away.

One minute later, Tu Fei returned with red eyes. "They left seven days ago to Broken Star Field. Damn it!"

"Do you need me to teach you what to do now?" Da Feng's face was icy cold.

"I'm after him!" Tu Fei put on a malicious face and bowed to the man. He then said, "Thank you for reminding me." Then, Tu Fei took several warriors, leaving Broken Star City and jumping into Broken Star Field.

"Da Feng sent a message, saying that we don't need to find Mi Ge anymore. Seems like they know that the Mi brothers didn't do that. Tu Fei is after Shi Yan. He's confirmed the news. He's flying to Broken Star Field now," said an old man under Ai Fu's command.

Ai Fu frowned, contemplating for a while. "Da Feng's much smarter than Tu Fei. Yeah, seems like that boy's going to have a lot of trouble."

"Young Master, should we notify him?"

"Remind him?" Ai Fu rubbed his chin. Light sparkled in his eyes. He talked after pondering for a while. "Now that Da Feng has joined this mess, it's more difficult. This man is mysterious and

wicked. It's not good to turn our back to him. Okay, you go there yourself. When Tu Fei encounters them, you seize the chance and capture that kid before him. We must know where the Thousand Fold Lotus is. We can use the Thousand Fold Lotus to exchange for his life. I think it's worth it. Yeah, work on it."

"Understood."

Broken Star Field.

Shi Yan's team hovered in the air, moving slowly. Ji You led ahead of them. Sometimes he gave them descriptions. "Rumor says that Broken Star Field is formed by countless pieces of broken stars. I believe it's true. Moreover, I heard that the core of Broken Star Field has a mysterious force that could attract broken stars. As far as I've known, throughout recent history, there are still many pieces of broken stars flying here and becoming new parts of Broken Star Field."

It was true that Ji You was much more familiar with this area. With his guide, Shi Yan's team didn't need to do anything. They hadn't met any danger yet.

"Broken Star Field is indeed vast. At least, I can't travel through it. It seems like the area has tens of thousands of broken stars congregating here. Some pieces are very old and they hide rare materials. They even have Original Incipient Grade materials. That is why Broken Star Field attracts so many experts.

"I've scouted the route we are traveling. Not many people will choose this route. Thus, we won't meet many experts on this way for quite a long time. Also, we can make sure that we won't be ambushed or have conflicts with others." On their way, Ji You continually told them the wonderful features of Broken Star Field. He knew the place as if it was the back of his hand. His descriptions were clear and easy to understand.

Shi Yan listened to him and widened his knowledge of Broken Star Field. He thought that his one hundred thousand divine crystals were well spent.

Half a year later.

Ji You stopped by a place where disorderly stones made up the mountains. The atmosphere was cold.

"From here onward, we will travel through many places with the possibility of finding rare materials. We will meet a lot of people from different races and forces," Ji You said with a stern face. "From now on, we should be prepared to counter dangers, which can happen at any minute."

Shi Yan squinted his eyes, nodded, and put up guard.

Chapter 938: Becoming Enemies

There were many massive, chipped holes reaching deep underground. Collapsed mountain ranges were everywhere. Some of the mountains had a flat surface as if they were cut by a sharp knife. Large rocks were scattered around the place.

The ground was bumpy as if some Giants had marched through this place. Some holes had colored fluids with something mysterious inside. Also, they found many kinds of dominant plants and even undying ancient trees.

This was also a corner of Broken Star Field.

Shi Yan was standing by the mountain.

"Be careful. This place has been exploited many times. It wouldn't have precious materials. However, there are still some mines deep underground. Once they find some marvelous cultivating materials, the battle would take place." Ji You became anxious in this area, speaking gingerly.

Shi Yan nodded, "I got it. Lead the way, please."

Ji You knitted his brows tightly, slowly flying forward. However, he was much slower than before. Sometimes, he looked around as if he was afraid that they would meet unexpected things.

Five days later.

They came to a deeper corner in Broken Star Field.

Swoosh!

The figure zoomed over from afar. He had a dark blue halo moving around his body, which was stained with black blood, his face pale.

Third Sky of Original God Realm!

Shi Yan's eyes shrank. He pulled his spirit, nodding at Fei Lan.

Fei Lan extended her hand and grabbed the void, pulling Ji You who was flying in front of them.

The oncoming warrior was a member of the Dark Spirit Clan. He had oily green skin and a green shoulder-length hair. His eyes were also as green as a venomous snake. Seeing Shi Yan's team, his eyes brightened, shouting. "Take this!"

A waterdrop-like blue jade shot out from his hand. It had a distinctive energy fluctuation.

Ji You couldn't help but scream surprisedly. "Blue Bloodstone! Level 6 Divine Grade, used to refine Blue Blood Pellet, which is to give a tonic to Blood Qi!"

The Blue Bloodstone turned into a beam of blue light shooting towards Fei Lan. The Dark Spirit Clan man didn't talk much. He just grinned and ran away. He passed by Shi Yan's team, flying quickly to get out of this place.

Boom!

The path in front of him suddenly had a shining silver river. This river hid the soft but tenacious power of water. It was the ability of the Ethereal Extent.

The man bumped into the long river, drowning. Water bound him tightly. He couldn't even wiggle to get rid of it quickly.

Immediately, a man and a woman appeared in the direction he had just left. The man had a nice but evil look. The woman was as charming as a flower. They were around thirty or forty years old, and both of them were members of the Ghost Mark Clan. Their exposed shoulder had marvelous green textures.

"First Sky of Ethereal God Realm!" Fei Lan hissed.

Shi Yan slightly changed his visage, screaming immediately, "Throw that Blood Bloodstone away!"

Fei Lan didn't hesitate. Her left hand was about to capture that

stone now had some pale thread, which then guided the Blue Bloodstone away.

The two Ghost Mark Clan fellows arrived. The man laughed evilly as he rose his hand and caught the Blue Bloodstone. Then, he glanced at Shi Yan's team disdainfully, gliding away.

"Dare to take our stuff? He doesn't know how to live, right?" The woman was charmingly mature. She smiled tenderly, retrieving her power Upanishad. The long silver river shrunk little by little.

The Dark Spirit Clan man was covered in the river, trying to wiggle, but he couldn't get rid of it. Eventually, he was pulled toward the woman.

The woman's phoenix eyes were full of murderous aura. The river derived from her Ethereal Extent turned into water dragons, coiling around him.

Crack Crack Crack!

The Dark Spirit Clan man exploded. His bones broke while his flesh and blood splashed everywhere.

Swoosh!

His soul altar escaped, looking at the Ghost Mark Clan experts with an enormous grudge. It threw a glance at Fei Lan and then turned into a wave, teleporting thousands of miles in just a blink.

"Run fast enough." The beautiful woman of the Ghost Mark Clan cursed then as they retrieved the river into her soul altar. Her beautiful eyes glared at Fei Lan annoyedly.

Fei Lan frowned but said nothing.

"Two ugly women," the Ghost Mark Clan woman mumbled as if she wanted to vent out her anger.

Fei Lan and Leona became cold.

Fei Lan didn't take care about her appearance. At the same time, she looked senile with many wrinkles on her face. Leona's face was

full of scars. Although they were all women, compared to the beautiful Ghost Mark Clan woman, they looked horrid.

However, being pointed at and directly scolded, a nice person would be enraged!

"Cough cough!" Shi Yan gave dry coughs.

Fei Lan and Leona gritted their teeth, trying to control themselves not to burst out and make a mess.

"Don't cause more trouble." The Ghost Mark Clan man frowned. "We still need to harvest Blue Bloodstone. We shouldn't waste more time. Let's go."

The beautiful woman glanced at Fei Lan and Leona disdainfully, muttering, "If I'm not busy, I will play with you guys. How dare you try to run around with such ugly faces? Don't you think you will scare all men away?" Then, she smiled contentedly, following the man and returning. They flew deeper into the place, disappearing shortly.

Waiting until the two of them left, Shi Yan calmly moved to the position where the Dark Spirit Clan man exploded, hovering indifferently for a while.

Pieces of that Dark Spirit Clan man's body seemed shriveled as if someone had taken all the water in them. Eventually, they became dried meat as if they had been dried under the intense sunlight for countless years.

Shi Yan smiled, speaking to Fei Lan and Leona, who still grimaced. "Both of them are at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm and we don't know if they still have some fellows around here. Engaging in a battle isn't a wise move."

Fei Lan and Leona had dark eyes. After a while, they nodded but didn't reply him.

"You should take a rest for a while," Shi Yan contemplated for a while and then looked at Ji You. He rose his hand and a blue light

cave descended from the sky, shrouding Ji You entirely and preventing him from observing anything around.

Shi Yan sat down, closing his eyes to digest the energy. Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo knew what was going to happen. They were all happy, sitting down quietly.

After a while, beams of pure light energy emitted from Shi Yan's God Body, entering the mark on Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo's foreheads.

A long while later, the four of them got up one after another. They were all vivid and refreshed, their auras full and lively.

Especially Ka Tuo. As he had reached Second Sky of Original God Realm, he needed more energy. Receiving energy from Shi Yan, Ka Tuo's accumulation advanced. At least, it helped him save dozens of years of ascetic cultivation.

"It was unnecessary to compete like that. It was boring though. Especially when we weren't sure about the victory. We shouldn't provoke them in such a fight." Shi Yan knitted his brows, talking calmly. "Just think that those b*tches have just given us a gift. We will stay in Broken Star Field for a while. We will probably meet them again. If you guys are sure, I will not stop you from taking revenge. Yeah, that woman has an exquisite face. I think if you use a sharp knife and cut it little by little, it'll be more beautiful when it's bloody enough."

Fei Lan and Leona pulled themselves together. Listening to him, they imagined the picture and smiled coldly.

Seeing them resume their normal states, Shi Yan eased his mind. He grabbed the void and the blue ice light flew up, disappearing into his body.

After Ji You got out of the cage, he looked at him skeptically. "What did you do secretly? If you don't want me to listen to your conversation, you can tell me. I will leave. You don't need to do

that. That cage is so cold. If you hold me there any longer, I won't be able to endure that kind of cold."

Shi Yan smiled. "There's something you shouldn't know. It's better for you. Okay, next time I will control the temperature. You can stay there comfortably."

Listening to him, Ji You had a forced smile but he had no choice. He could only nod his head begrudgingly. "Then you should be more careful. Better to tell me in advance so I can prepare myself."

"Okay, I will tell you in advance," Shi Yan agreed with him.

"We will encounter this sort of thing more often in the future. You shouldn't feel strange. It's normal that weaker warriors are killed or have to run away when they find precious materials. Allow me to advise you on this: If you don't have the competence, you shouldn't be greedy. Just let go what you don't need to live. Only if you learn how to let things go will you be able to live longer," Ji You advised earnestly.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo felt a little shamed.

When they were in Raging Flame Star Area, they were the experts who had their own territories. Fei Lan was the peak warrior, the legendary one.

However, as they were in the remote area of Far West in the Agate Star Area, they felt mocked and disdained. Still, they acted patient and subtle.

Even a kid like Ji You thought that they weren't strong enough. He had advised them to be patient in this damn Broken Star Field.

They found it hard to accept.

"Okay, I know what to do." Shi Yan was calm. He had wandered, drifting away for so many years struggling to survive amongst the experts. He had experienced many bad situations. He knew when to be patient and subtle.

When he had just arrived in the Endless Sea, he was frail. Ultimately, he had reached the peak, standing above everyone else.

When he had entered Divine Great Land, the situation was also the same. With his efforts, he had become the top warrior of Grace Mainland.

The same had happened in Raging Flame Star Area. He had made each step with the goal of protecting himself. Eventually, with his perception and mysterious power Upanishads, he had a great achievement.

Today, as he was in Agate Star Area, everything was the same. Nothing was to be different.

What he had to do now was be persistent in each step he made. He could get stronger little by little. When he reached a certain level, he turned his head around. He would see the ones who used to be powerful who were now under his feet, admiring his aura.

"Be patient now to exchange for the peak later. I hope you guys understand that this place isn't your Raging Flame Star Area!" hissed Shi Yan.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo nodded begrudgingly.

"Don't you think Broken Star Field is the best place for us?" Shi Yan suddenly smiled. His face showed that he wanted to take action. "Killing, fighting, and death are everywhere. Isn't it the best fortune we have?"

The other three's eyes brightened.

Chapter 939: Immortal Grass

Shi Yan strolled forward in a corner of Broken Star Field. He was cautious and watchful for every small change around him.

On their way, they met groups of warriors. Usually, each group had one or several Ethereal God Realm experts leading a team. Some of them were from the Far West region while others came from other places deep in Agate Star Area. They came here to find rare materials in Broken Star Field.

They had encountered a lot of battles and all of them were because of seizing cultivating materials. No exception.

Each battle had taken place because of only one reason: robbing crystals, ores or precious materials. Whether they found it themselves or just saw it and they thought they were strong enough to rob, they took action without much hesitation.

It was extremely brutal!

The weak warriors couldn't keep their benefits. If they understood and gave it up, it was possible that they would save their lives.

If they weren't strong enough and hadn't left before the battle happened, they likely perished.

On their way, they'd seen many similar battles and many unlucky warriors who lost their lives in such battles.

To the others, it was their misfortune. To Shi Yan's team, it was their fortune.

When the battle happened, someone died. Shi Yan acted like he got an injection of chicken blood (*), hurrying to come and watch.

(*) Chicken-blood therapy was a form of pseudo-medical therapy popular in China during the Cultural Revolution. It was practiced mainly by village doctors in the 1960s. Originally banned by the

government, it was eventually accepted and encouraged by the Communist Party of China.

But he had only watched...

He had never joined any battle. He didn't let himself be involved in it. Every time they spotted a battle, they would wait afar. After it ended, Shi Yan's team would approach the corpses, hovering.

Ji You was unlucky. He felt aggrieved because Shi Yan usually used the blue ice cage to imprison him temporarily. He couldn't see anything, so he didn't know what Shi Yan, Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo had done. Also, he didn't know why they had to conceal what they did.

The four people of Shi Yan's team were sitting cross-legged by the piles of crushed stone. The energy fluctuations from Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo calmed down eventually.

After a while, Ka Tuo opened his eyes and smiled. He thanked Shi Yan sincerely. "Senior, my Second Sky of Original God Realm has been strengthened. My energy is brimming, reaching the threshold to break through again. I think as soon as I have some comprehension of power Upanishad, I can enter the whole new world of Third Sky of Original God Realm."

Shi Yan chuckled, nodded, "So can you estimate how much time you need before your breakthrough comes?"

"I think that it won't be too long," Ka Tuo was excited. "If you can maintain your support for me."

"Of course," Shi Yan chuckled, " Broken Star Field suits us well. Fighting is everywhere. When the experts die, people collect materials while we collect the corpses! Our harvest is much larger than anyone else's."

Ka Tuo laughed as he felt so lucky.

Fei Lan stood up quietly. She had a faint nimbus on her wrinkled face. Her spirit, Qi, and soul were vigorous.

She frowned at Leona.

Leona sat neatly. The area around her was like a dark abyss that had swallowed all the light. Her figure was vague in the shaded area. She looked like an ominous shadow. A magical and profound energy came from her soul altar.

Shi Yan and Ka Tuo were surprised. They looked at Leona, their faces touched.

"You can see it right? Leona is about to break through too." Pondering for a while, Fei Lan felt surprised and happy. "Seems like she has harvested a lot lately. When she broke through last time, her Dark power Upanishad has advanced as well. Talking about the realm, she has reached the threshold. She just needs time to accumulate energy. Then, she can make a strong move. And you, you've been giving her this amount of energy, an amount that requires hundreds of years to accumulate, in just one or two years. Perhaps she will break through earlier!"

Ka Tuo's eyes brightened as he couldn't help but scream, "Senior, you're our lucky charm. Going with you, we will leap up and progress faster."

Fei Lan nodded. She sighed inwardly as she said, "Perhaps, it's the reason why the Cortege of Eight wanted to follow Bloodthirsty. His marvelous power Upanishad could grant his escorts their wishes. I think I got it."

After Leona had finished refining her energy, she woke up. Her eyes were as dark as ink, so dark that it was as if it could swallow any kind of light.

She got up quietly, speaking. "At this speed of energy absorption, after one month at most, I can enter Ethereal God Realm!"

Fei Lan and Ka Tuo were excited. They were honestly happy for her.

From the day they entered Broken Star Field, they realized that

even though they were the top warriors in Raging Flame Star Area, they weren't strong enough in this place where there were so many dangers and unidentified factors.

If they could improve their competencies, they could live better in Broken Star Field and they could harvest more benefits.

Although Shi Yan often sneaked into the areas where battles happened, he was always cautious. He didn't dare to come close to some fights. To some of the particular battles, he didn't even dare to watch even from a far distance.

Usually, he would stay as far as possible from the battles between warriors at Ethereal God Realm, especially Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm.

He was afraid that the experts at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm would kill them to warm up. Because to experts at such realms, it didn't require a lot of energy to kill Shi Yan's entire team.

The battles he dared to observe were usually between warriors at the Original God Realm and First Sky of Ethereal God Realm. Since they had Fei Lan and Leona, and they were never greedy for those materials, the others wouldn't trouble them. They didn't consider them their new rivals.

Shi Yan was always cautious. In Broken Star Field, they had harvested the benefits they could at the best rate. They didn't need to join any battle, but their harvest was abundant. Anyway, no one could know this.

Seeing the three of them waking up and refining the energy they had just harvested, Shi Yan smiled, retrieving the power he used to restrain Ji You. Then, they continued moving deeper into Broken Star Field.

Ji You got used to his confinement. He didn't bother asking anymore. Every time he was released, he just continued to lead the

way, not saying anything.

They felt satisfied with Ji You. This boy wasn't mature, but he knew how to guess what people were thinking through their countenances. He knew what to do to not provoke others. Ji You... was a smart kid.

Standing in the middle of the crushed stone piles between the collapsed mountains, a mature, attractive woman was observing something on the ground.

That woman was from the Demon Clan. Just like Di Shan, she was a member of the Black Winged Clan with two massive wings on her back. Her curvy body was shrouded in a black dress, which lingered on her healthy, wheat-toned skin. Her long black hair cascaded like a waterfall, reaching her rear end.

She bent her body slightly, which revealed her heavy bosom. She focused, gliding swiftly between the crushed stone, her flying posture gentle like a bird.

She suddenly felt something and she halted in the air. Her phoenix eyes twinkled, silently watching the incomers.

Shi Yan's team paused, hovering dozens of meters away from that beautiful Demon Clan Woman.

"First Sky of Ethereal God Realm," Fei Lan whispered.

"This area has nothing valuable. I wonder what she's looking for. So strange," Ji You mumbled.

Shi Yan looked at the piles of crushed stone. He could see some tufts of green grass, which looked ordinary without much energy, fragrance or any halo.

However, that charming Demon woman was crouching in the grass. Her slender fingers grabbed the green leaves that could be found everywhere else here. She gingerly watched Shi Yan's team,

frowning. She pondered for a while and then continued her work of harvesting the grass.

"What kind of grass is it?" Shi Yan contemplated and then asked in a low tone.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo shook their heads.

Ji You thought for a while and then lowered his voice to answer Shi Yan. "It's called Immortal Grass. Only this area has this kind of grass in Broken Star Field. It's ordinary. I've never seen anyone harvesting this grass. This Immortal Grass doesn't have energy fluctuations. No alchemist comes to harvest it. However, Immortal Grass is tenacious. After being cut, it will heal itself immediately as if it never died. Except for this feature, I don't know any of its other magical effects."

Immortal Grass...

Shi Yan repeated the name silently. He was bewildered for a while before walking towards the piles of crushed stone.

The Black Winged woman paused her work. She stood up, her legs beautifully slim. Her bright eyes glared at him coldly.

Shi Yan smiled friendly, "I just want to pick a leaf to see. I mean no harm. Don't be tense."

This woman had First Sky of Ethereal God Realm, which wasn't a significant threat in their opinions. That was why Shi Yan dared to come over. If she had had Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm, he wouldn't have dared to get so close.

"Do you... need this grass?" The woman was astounded, her eyes showing her disdain. "Do you know its effects?"

"No," Shi Yan smiled, shaking his head, "I'm just curious. Simply curious." Pausing for a while, he continued, "Did I disturb you?"

The Black Winged woman knitted her brows slightly, speaking as if she was bothered. "You don't know anything, why would you

look around here? Forget it. If you want to waste your time, just do it."

Then, she turned around and left. Like a blackbird, she made a gentle curve in the air, disappearing shortly. Seconds later, they couldn't see her anymore.

Shi Yan was astounded for a while. He didn't keep it in his mind, walking to the area the woman had harvested the grass previously. He picked up a handful.

This green weed was around one meter long, rooted in between the stones, surviving tenaciously. He picked up a tuft of them. Shortly after, the cut roots of the grass grew again. A grass green fluid stuck on the roots. Gradually, this fluid seeped into the grass, disappearing.

The broken leaves where Shi Yan grabbed them by also had grass green fluid sticking on his fingers.

Magically, this grass green fluid seeped directly into his finger, disappearing little by little. And the most tenacious grass started to wither as if their nutrients were taken away.

A drop of ruby Immortal Demon Blood in his finger suddenly vibrated.

Chapter 940: Enemies on a Narrow Road

The grass green fluid of the Immortal Grass seeped into his flesh, vibrating his Immortal Demon Blood.

And a wonderful thing happened...

After that rice-sized drop of Immortal Demon Blood slowly absorbed the fluid of the Immortal Grass, it enlarged! The Blood Qi stored in that drop of blood became strangely abundant!

Shi Yan was baffled.

Ji You couldn't help but hiss, "What's going on?"

He jumped and landed next to Shi Yan. While Shi Yan was absorbed in his thoughts, Ji You shot out a light, cutting the grass underneath. However, those leaves he had cut were still vivid green as if nothing happened. They didn't wither and die like the grass in Shi Yan's hand.

Ji You was perplexed, looking at Shi Yan and asking seriously, "Why did this grass wither and die in your hand?"

Ji You threw the grass he had cut on the ground. Those leaves moved like snakes, protectively slithering towards the grass. The cut leaves joined the grass. They looked as vibrant as they were a moment ago.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo were surprised. They stormed over, stooping to observe the Immortal Grass. However, they didn't spot anything abnormal.

Shi Yan was baffled for a while. His eyes gradually brightened up, laughing happily.

Just like a beam of dark light, he moved back and forth between piles of crushed stone, grabbing tufts of Immortal Grass and squeezing them.

Drops of green fluid seeped into his flesh and dissolved. The

Immortal Grass leaves he plucked withered and died shortly after as if their fountain of life had been taken away.

After five minutes, all the Immortal Grass around this place looked like they were squeezed. They shriveled and died.

At this moment, Shi Yan stopped, his eyes brighter and deeper. A smile hung on the corner of his mouth.

Immortal Grass and Immortal Demon Blood were somehow similar. They could mingle with each other and help him condense more Immortal Demon Blood. Thousands of tufts of ordinary Immortal Grass brought him at least one hundred new drops of Immortal Demon Blood!

This amount could be compared to Essence Qi from dead bodies of some Original God Realm experts!

Shi Yan was happy, laughing loudly. "This grass isn't bad. Interesting!"

Ji You, Fei Lan, and the others looked at him dazedly. They knew that this kind of green grass had some magical effects on him. However, since he didn't disclose it to them, they couldn't guess anything.

"Is there more Immortal Grass around?" Shi Yan chuckled, asking Ji You. "We can go there if it's further away from this area."

Ji You shook his head with a smile. "No. Only this place. You've consumed them all shortly. I'm afraid that we can't have them later. What's happened after all?"

"Nothing, this grass is good for me," Shi Yan smiled, stretching his body and speaking contentedly. "We should go. There's no reason to stay here."

Ji You was so curious, but if Shi Yan didn't want to say it, he couldn't do anything. He nodded and continued to lead.

A long time afterward.

The Black Winged woman who had disappeared from this area returned with two Black Scaled Tribe clansmen of the Demon Clan. The two Black Scaled men looked muscular and rough. Their bodies were covered with fine black scales. They had a naturally imposing aura that people didn't dare to underestimate.

Both of them were at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm!

The three Demon fellows stood in the middle of the withered grass on the ground, their faces grimaced.

"Something is wrong!" The attractive Black Winged woman shivered in fear. Suddenly, she cried, "The Immortal Grass died! It withered and died!"

The two brawny Black Scaled men reacted when they heard her. Strange light sparkled in their eyes.

"It... Is it similar to our Master when he absorbs them?" A beefy man shouted. He looked shaken, hissing solemnly. "Is he... from the Immortal Demon Tribe like our Master?"

"Impossible?!?" The other man shook his head continually, "Master has been searching through Agate Star Area for years. He hasn't found any member of his tribe yet. Only our Master has the Immortal Demon Blood in Agate Star Area. So, it must be impossible!"

The two muscular men shrilled, looking at the beautiful Black Winged woman. "Wu Lan, you're the smartest. What do you think?"

The charming Black Winged woman was astounded. But then, the shout from the man had woken her up. She shook her head, "I don't know. Our Master has been searching for years in Agate Star Area, but he hasn't found any members of his tribe. It's possible that he couldn't sense his fellows with his realm. A hundred year ago, Master had used a lot of energy to rake through the area. He

got nothing. Anyway, the condition of Immortal Grass here is really similar. It looks like some Immortal Demon like our Master has absorbed the grass."

"The last search of our Master was one hundred years ago. What if that person is an Immortal Demon and he has just entered Agate Star Area in the past one hundred years? Could that be possible?" said a Black Scaled man skeptically.

"If it's coincident, this possibility exists." The beautiful Black Winged woman pondered and then nodded. "But there's still another possibility. If he cultivates a peculiar power Upanishad, he can still destroy Immortal Grass. Although Immortal Grass is tenacious, it's not actually immortal. Seems like we have two possibilities here."

"If he's an Immortal Demon Tribe's member, I think our Master will be delighted!" said the muscular man.

"Find them! We must identify them!" Wu Lan said in a lower voice.

"Alright!"

After the three Demon experts set their target, they immediately took action.

Another area.

Tu Fei was flying madly. Some Blood Halberd followed him closely, not daring to linger.

Boom!

Tu Fei stopped by a massive pit.

A group of more than ten warriors was working in that pit. They were exploring the depth of the pit. Sometimes, they laughed out loud.

They had killed several warriors to seize this mine, which had a

level 6 Divine Grade Serene Moon Wood. At this moment, they were identifying the scope of the area to enter deeper and see if they could find more Serene Moon Wood or not.

The noise when Tu Fei descended changed their countenance. They emerged from the deep pit. All looked ferocious. However, seeing that it was Tu Fei, they behaved. One of them beamed a forced smile. "Oh, Tu Fei dage of the Blood Halberd."

"I want to find a person." Tu Fei snorted. His left eyes projected a light curtain, which formed Shi Yan's appearance. "Have you ever met this man?"

"Oh, we have," that man smiled, Half a month ago, we met him here. Just a small warrior. When we robbed this mine, he watched us. I think he likes corpses. He stayed idle by the corpses for a while. Tu Fei dage, what do you need to find him for?"

Tu Fei's face was icy cold. "None of this matters to you! You just need to tell me where he has gone!"

The man smiled reluctantly. He didn't dare to babble, pointing in a direction and talking firmly. "That way. Yeah. With your speed, you'll catch him soon. I wish you success in advance."

Tu Fei snorted coldly. He had a cold intention, gliding above the mine. He observed the pit for a while and then said, "Give me twenty pieces of Serene Moon Wood!"

More than ten warriors were enraged, clenching their jars.

At this moment, more than ten Blood Halberd's warriors quietly approached, circling this team. They smiled coldly as they were prepared to take action in any minute.

"Tu Fei dage minds the Serene Moon Wood with your wise vision. Yeah, this is our honor." The leader tried to press down his anger, obediently handing twenty pieces of Serene Moon Wood. He stooped and spoke, "Tu Fei dage, are you pleased now?"

Tu Fei nodded. "Well, you're lucky this time. If I had more time,

it wouldn't have been easy to talk to me."

Then, Tu Fei brought Blood Halberd's warriors who were going on their journey. Their wanton laughter came from the void.

"I wish you would die soon so you could reincarnate early! You motherf*cker! I've been laboring for so long to get twenty-five pieces of Serene Moon Wood. This mad dog takes more than half! I'm having f*cking bad luck to encounter this man!" After they didn't hear Tu Fei's laughter anymore, the leader spat and then cursed.

"Forget it. We can't cause a grudge against Blood Halberd. Tu Fei's infamous for his madness and sheer wanton deeds. Just think that we got bad luck." A man sighed from inside the pit.

"It's what Broken Star Field is. You have the right if your fist is bigger. We also rob others right? Everybody be prepared. We will find some weaker warriors to vent out our anger on."

"Let's go!"

After Tu Fei's robbery, this group was dispirited. They didn't have the mood to dig further. They flew away, seeking a soft persimmon to squeeze and vent their anger at.

Shi Yan suddenly stopped by an area covered in purple clouds.

Sitting in the dark purple ancient woods were two Ghost Mark fellows: one male and one female. They were exhausted with a pale face, trying to adjust their energy.

They had met these two before. They were the couple who had mocked Fei Lan and Leona, saying that they were too ugly to go around like this and that it scared away men. At this moment, it seemed like they had just finished a battle so they had to use the divine crystals to refill their energy.

Their conditions weren't good either. They had blood stains on

their bodies. Evidently, they were hurt but at least their wounds were less intense.

"Guys, long time no see." Shi Yan watched them for a while, chuckled, and swaggered towards them. "We meet again. Seems like we share some destiny. Haha, I wonder if you have time for a little chat."

Fei Lan and Leona were eager to storm over. Their auras became dark and sinister. They followed him, walking toward the Ghost Mark couple.

The Ghost Mark couple was closing their eyes to stabilize their energy. They opened their eyes at the same time and snorted disdainfully. They slowly got up.

They thought that even when they got hurt, it wasn't a problem to kill Shi Yan's team.

"You don't want to live. You want to attack us when we're wounded. Have you ever checked what the heck you are?" The charming Ghost Mark woman wiped the blood trickle on the corner of her mouth, shouting coldly. "Court death!"

Chapter 941: It's Dark. Please Close Your Eyes

The Ghost Mark woman hissed, her face cold. A supple power of water arose in her soft palms, condensing into a drop of pure water.

She didn't say anything that didn't make sense, snatching over them from a distance. That waterdrop became like a massive sea pouring down from the sky.

That waterdrop was as big as a rice grain. It was crystal clear with a soft halo and immense steam. While falling, it enlarged. Shortly after, it became as big as a fist, bringing the power of a thousand-man army and the confining power of water.

Shi Yan, Fei Lan, Leona and Ka Tuo became stern. Their spinning soul altars were like they were held back in a bog, which delayed their power Upanishad and slowed down their energy circulation.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

The water drop fell. Ear-piercing explosions echoed like a mountain had just collapsed.

The Ghost Mark man had peculiar bearings. He smiled brightly and two fire snakes flew out of his eyes.

The blazing red columns extended hundreds of meters. Despite the distance between them, they attacked Fei Lan and Leona.

These two Ghost Mark fellows seemed to be husband and wife. One cultivated fire while the other cultivated a supple power of water. They had used duet cultivation to support each other. Their power Upanishad could blend with each other and even their power Upanishads were opposed to each other.

Not only that, the fiery power of his flame could strengthen the aura of her water. At the same time, a supple power of water could

make the fire not discernible.

"Watch out!" Fei Lan hissed, her figure disappearing.

A moment later, countless pale lines of corrosive energy appeared in the void between them. They weaved like a thick spider web, covering every inch of the void.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

Several hundred corrosive lines merged into one flow, entering the water drop. Sounds of things being corroded arose. The fist-sized water drop shrank rapidly as a significant amount of steam was dissolved.

Fei Lan's aura changed. Her God Body even turned into a flow of corrosive air, shooting towards that Ghost Mark man.

The Ghost Mark man was shocked. He was stunned because of Fei Lan's power Upanishad.

The Corrosion power Upanishad was one of the Eight Great Inheritances of the Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight. It was rare in any star area. It was unique compared to any popular power Upanishads. Not many people knew it.

Evil and eccentric power Upanishads often hid terrifying abilities. The Ghost Mark couple understood it well. Seeing her Corrosion power Upanishad, they immediately became severe.

At this moment, Leona also expanded her God Domain.

The endless darkness diffused from her body like a black curtain shrouding the entire sky, shading all the stars and absorbing all the light.

It was getting dark. . .

The absolute darkness engulfing any kind of light expanded hundreds of miles around Leona. People couldn't see any beam of light in every place that was too dark.

This kind of darkness didn't affect only people's visions but also

the Sea of Consciousness, touching sense, and even perception!

In the dark, the Ghost Mark couple had their five senses covered. Their eyes couldn't see their surroundings. Their God Body couldn't sense the movement of air and energy. Their Soul Consciousness couldn't detect the auras of living beings. Their Sea of Consciousness had been covered. They suddenly became blind.

Leona's Dark power Upanishad would cover the eyes and Soul Consciousness of everybody but herself.

She wasn't affected, and she could move spookily in the dark. She could approach the Ghost Mark couple easily to kill them!

Shi Yan and Ka Tuo were also shrouded in the darkness. Their perception wasn't different from the other two. Although they had their eyes open, they weren't different from a blind man. All of their senses were blocked.

However, it was temporarily.

After three seconds, they felt a fantastic energy descend from the sky, hitting them. Under that strange power, they were able to get rid of this involuntary confinement. Their vision and Soul Consciousness weren't blocked anymore.

The two exchanged looks. They had an odd countenance as they understood that it was Leona's power.

Now she could release the darkness and control it as she pleased. She could make the dark shroud someone and spare the other with her thoughts.

When she was in Heaven Punishment City, her control of Dark power Upanishad hadn't reached this level yet. As she could manipulate it smoothly and effortlessly like this, her understanding of Dark power Upanishad had reached a whole new level.

Thus, Shi Yan and Ka Tuo could see a dark shadow hover above the Ghost Mark woman. It looked like a spooky ghost as if could

slowly seep into her head, moving towards her soul altar!

Leona seemed to get into the other's Sea of Consciousness!

Shi Yan was scared. Fear crossed his face as he was stunned.

Ka Tuo shivered. It seemed like he was affected. His chaotic energy was released slowly, twirling around his body to protect his soul altar and preventing the attack from others.

The soul altar was the foundation of their lives. It was the control center of the warrior's powers, which stayed deep in the brains. Once it was intruded, the soul altar would stop moving. That moment was like a giant hand that had grabbed all the energy in the soul altar.

The Ghost Mark woman had First Sky of Ethereal God Realm cultivation base, one level higher than Leona's. In the absolute darkness, her soul altar was covered, but she didn't have any way to resist the invasion of her Sea of Consciousness.

The immense, hazy aura of water suddenly became chaotic. The water drop she had released suddenly exploded like shattered glass. Foam and bubbles filled the sky and fell. Each of the bubbles hid the power of her water that could confine the soul.

However, under the dark coverage, her Soul Consciousness couldn't guide her water power precisely. She couldn't do any harm to Shi Yan and Ka Tuo, let alone attack Leona, the master of Darkness.

Abruptly, an ear-piercing shrill came from the beautiful Ghost Mark woman. It was like she was possessed as she crazily scratched her face with both of her jade-like hands. She was trying to damage her face that she had always felt proud of! Blood rolled down her face from the bone-deep scratches!

Blood that looked like eccentric snakes flowed down her white wrists. It looked strange and evil that could give people goosebumps.

The pretty woman that looked like a fairy was now like a wailing ghost. She looked even more terrible than Leona!

This was Leona's retaliation!

The infamous crazy devil was the Regimental Commander of the Bloody Legion of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation. When Leona's mental illness burst out, Shi Yan and Ka Tuo both got anxious.

They exchanged looks and they could see the deep fear in each other's eyes.

Shi Yan suddenly made up his mind. From now on, he had to remember to never comment on Leona's appearance. This was her backward scale!

It turned out that it wasn't that she didn't care about her appearance. Quite the contrary actually as she did mind it a lot. Anyone who dared to insult her look had to bear her bloody retaliation from this bloodthirsty thug!

Evidently, that Ghost Mark woman had been manipulated. Leona had occupied her mind, controlling her to damage her own face.

Perhaps she knew what she was doing, but she couldn't resist as someone distorted her thoughts.

Shi Yan guessed that she was still conscious from her mournful shrills that were like shrieks from an ancient beast. Shi Yan guessed that Leona had spared her that little consciousness.

It was to let her know what she was doing to her face!

Shi Yan shivered, taking a deep breath. He beamed a forced smile, murmuring, "Today, I finally got to see how brutal the Commander of the Bloody Legion is. Her reputation and attainment aren't fabricated. I... underestimated her."

"Yeah, of course," Ka Tuo's voice trembled. "Who isn't afraid of Madame Leona in Raging Flame Star Area? She is the wildest

executioner, the most brutal butcher. Compared to her, my title Bloody Slaughterer shames me. My title is just a vain name..."

Shi Yan was surprised.

"Little Rou!" The Ghost Mark man screamed, his voice shaking the sky as he felt something. Lines of fire shot out, covering the woman.

Boom!

Flows of fire shot out from her God Body, evaporating the blood trickles on her scary face.

Tears brimmed, overflowing from her eyes. Those tears seemed to have the power of miraculous Nature. Water power spun, arraying the magical water formation. Suddenly white waves rippled.

A dark shadow flew out as if the white crystal drops had forced it out. The shadow was struck, turning into small pieces of darkness.

Leona who had disappeared reappeared. There was no emotion in her icy cold, dark, green eyes. She beamed a satisfied smile.

She felt content with her masterpiece. Looking at the Ghost Mark woman who had scratched her own face, Leona crackled as if she went nuts. In her crazy laughter, she disappeared again into the darkness. Shi Yan and Ka Tuo couldn't see her anymore.

"You guys stay away from this. You don't need to participate in this battle." Fei Lan's voice arose from a deep place in the darkness.

In the next moment, Shi Yan and Ka Tuo were pushed out of the darkness shortly. They hovered one hundred meters away from the battle site, staring at a block of black ink area stretching over ten miles. However, they couldn't sense the violent, surging energy in that pitch black area.

However, they understood that Fei Lan and Leona were engaging in a battle against the Ghost Mark couple to the death. They now

had the most terrifying slaughter.

From what they could observe, Fei Lan and Leona didn't fall into a disadvantageous situation. They took the upper hand indeed!

If no one else was involved, the Ghost Mark couple who were already wounded would be buried in this area. They weren't lucky enough to avoid death.

Thus, insulting and Fei Lan and Leona's appearance was the worst mistake they could have made for their whole life, which made their lives turn to nothingness.

Chapter 942: Consequences of Having a Lousy Mouth

Ka Tuo and Shi Yan couldn't see any anomaly or sense any energy in that area shrouded by the endless darkness.

They stood sternly by the edge of the dark area, their face serious, frowning.

They knew that Fei Lan and Leona were powerful.

However, they were confronting a couple, which wasn't weaker than them. Their realms were even higher. Although they were wounded, Fei Lan and Leona weren't so sure about their victory in this death-or-life battle.

Thus, Ka Tuo and Shi Yan were anxious.

"Senior, do you think precursor Fei Lan and Leona da-jie could win?" Ka Tuo kept silent for a while. He couldn't help but ask.

Shi Yan frowned, contemplating for a while. He answered Ka Tuo with a question. "Ka Tuo, if you fight with a Third Sky of Original God Realm warrior, do you think you could win?"

Ka Tuo pondered.

After a while, Ka Tuo guffawed evilly, "Possibly. I don't know why but I always feel my Chaos power Upanishad is much stronger after I have had it complete and got it back on the right track. I'm confident I can skip a level and fight with the opponent." He said confidently and affirmatively. He was much proud of his power Upanishad.

Shi Yan nodded, smiling. "The power Upanishads of precursor Fei Lan and Leona da-jie aren't worse than yours. In other words, they should have the same ability."

Ka Tuo's eyes brightened.

"Precursor Fei Lan's at the First Sky of Ethereal God Realm. As far as we're concerned, if she has to fight for her life, she could resist a Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm expert. And Leona, she has the competence to fight against a First Sky of Ethereal God Realm expert. And, that couple got hurt before..."

Ka Tuo laughed out loud, nodded continually. "Listening to you, I suddenly feel that they will win for sure!"

"I think so," Shi Yan suddenly calmed down. "Our powers Upanishads are unique. They're much different from the popular ones. Rare powers Upanishads guarantee stronger and more bizarre powers. If you can skip one level and fight, they can, too. They won't be defeated."

"... Senior," Ka Tuo was astounded for a while, looking at Shi Yan as if he suddenly recalled something, "if you fight with the other, which is the highest realm you can resist? Your powers Upanishads are even more peculiar than ours. You have three powers Upanishads at the same time. You've fused with the Origin. Which level of the opponent you can resist without falling into a disadvantaged situation?"

Shi Yan was startled. "I've never tried. I'm not sure. However, I think I won't be damaged much if I fight with a Third Sky of Original God Realm warrior. Perhaps, I could win."

Ka Tuo was shaken. After a while, he beamed a forced smile. "Senior, you're worth your name."

Boom!

A blood-soaked figure flew out from the darkness while they were talking.

Along the way she gliding, the ground was turned into a bloody deep ditch.

Swish!

She halted right in front of Shi Yan and Ka Tuo. The Ghost Mark woman was blown through the ground for hundreds of meters.

At this moment, the Ghost Mark woman was blood-soaked. Her clothes were torn, revealing her skin. On her exposed skin, there were many cuts as if someone had used a sharp knife to scratch her body. Hundreds of deep-to-bone cuts were still bleeding.

Her face, neck, breasts, legs, and shoulder were bleeding as if she was executed by dismembering. She looked so pathetic they felt it hard to look at her.

Too pitiful!

Shi Yan shivered inwardly. He couldn't help but gave a forced smile.

Just one comment saying you look ugly and you get it done this way? If you mind your appearance that much, why won't you find a solution to recover your face? It's obvious, but you don't let people talk about it. Such a stubborn, madwoman!

Shi Yan shouted in his mind.

Ka Tuo shivered. He instinctively lifted his head.

A ghostly shadow with darkness swirling around her arose then flew toward them.

Tok! Tok! Tok!

Blood dripped from the fingertips of her relaxed hands... Apparently, it came from the Ghost Mark woman.

Shi Yan observed. He could see pieces of flesh...

Leona grabbed the Ghost Mark woman who had insulted her then used her fingernail to cut bleeding every inch of that woman's attractive body. She had cuts hundreds of times, not even spare the area between the woman's thighs!

Too wicked!

The Ghost Mark woman was dying. Looking at the crazy resentment in her dim eyes, Shi Yan and Ka Tuo felt sorry for her, thinking that she had terrible luck.

Because of her lousy mouth and some insulting words, she bought her self a death sentence. She got so many cuts on her body, which made her more pathetic. Why didn't she do that?

Swoosh!

The water blue soul altar floated up from the woman's head. Her Ethereal Soul and her appearance were the same with her real body with deep-to-bone resentment and wild, bloodthirsty desire. It glared at Leona.

Leona acted as if she didn't see it. She strolled toward Shi Yan, throwing him a glance. "Why are you still standing there idle?"

Shi Yan reacted. He touched his forehead, and his soul altar floated out of his head. The black hole on the Upanishad tier of his soul altar enlarged, generating a terrifying suction force.

The soul and the soul altar of the Ghost Mark's woman swayed violently. She had a deep fear on her mesmerizing face. Her soul shivered, trying her best to wiggle to get away.

Usually, it was hard to destroy the soul altar unless using the Original Incipient Grade weapon or the most terrifying powers Upanishad.

That woman thought Leona couldn't destroy her soul altar, and with the unique features of the soul altar that could get through confining abilities, she could escape this battle site shortly.

Unfortunately, she didn't know Shi Yan, a monster.

Shi Yan had the lowest realm here but his powers Upanishad were the vilest ones. That power Upanishad in the form of a black hole could swallow soul altars!

At the moment the suction force reached her, she felt something

wrong. In the next moment, she had to struggle to get rid of it.

However, it's too late.

No matter how hard she had wiggled, she couldn't get away from the black hole's suction force. That black hole was the nemesis of soul altar. It pulled the soul altar little by little. Slowly, the soul altar disappeared into the black hole.

At this moment, Shi Yan and Ka Tuo understood why the wounded body of this woman shot out from the dark, falling right under their feet.

Leona wanted to let Shi Yan engulf that woman's soul altar.

Swoosh!

The woman's soul altar disappeared entirely into the black hole. All of her vital signs vanished as if a sharp knife had cut off all the connection in just a blink.

This world would no longer have that woman's aura. She left no trace as her soul had utterly perished.

Deep in the dark, the Ghost Mark man seemed to get it right away. The painful screech arose from the immense darkness just like when a beast had lost its mate. In his pitiful roar, a sea of fire emerged in the dark, flying away.

"I swear I will use the last days of my life to hunt you down! It's my sole purpose to live! As long as you are still alive! As long as you still exist! Wherever you are, I will skin you and draw your bones alive! I will make you suffer for ten thousand years before you can die! I swear you must die in the most painful ways..."

The resentful curse of the man reverberated unceasingly within one hundred miles. After his aura disappeared completely, his cursing was still echoing.

Leona frowned, her body sparkling a dark light.

The darkness shrouding the world behind them turned into

clusters of black clouds, entering her body. After several seconds, all the darkness had retreated into her body.

Light reappeared.

Fei Lan's lonely, hunching figure walked toward them from the battle area where filled with crushed stone. With only one step she could cross several hundred meters. Shortly after, she arrived.

"That guy has a higher realm. He's about to reach the Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. As he wanted to get away at any cost, I couldn't stop him." Fei Lan's eyes were dark but her voice cold. "I left the corrosive energy in his body. It will corrode his flesh gradually. He couldn't recover easily. He's not a threat now."

Shi Yan, Ka Tuo, and Leona nodded, listening to her.

Everybody knew how wicked Fei Lan's corrosive power was. Fan Ye got struck once and he died days later as his vitality was corroded to death.

Corrosive energy could caustically wear out flesh and blood energy. As soon as she left a beam of her corrosive energy in the warrior's body, although he wasn't hurt much, as time flies, the terrifying effect of her corrosive energy would become significant.

This time, Fei Lan had seeped her erosive energy into that Ghost Mark man, as he had wounded before, he wouldn't have the strength to battle with them in a short time.

If he didn't have the magical medicines or pellets to support, his realm could be degraded, while his body was decaying. Although his words were threatening, he didn't have the competence to do that. It would sound like a joke then.

Anyway, Shi Yan didn't feel tense or anxious. Facing a dying expert, what would he be afraid?

Smiling, Shi Yan looked at the blue ice cage behind piles of crushed stone.

After they had found the Ghost Mark couple, Shi Yan had confined Ji You and put him away. On the one hand, it would prevent him from seeing things he shouldn't. On the other hand, it would save him from an unexpected attack.

Shi Yan released a beam of energy. An icy cold energy poured into the ground, stretching toward the blue ice cage. He smiled and said, "I need to adjust my energy. In a short time, he won't wake up."

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo were happy. They didn't wait for him to ask them to prepare. They sat down in front of him like the eager students waiting for their teacher.

Shi Yan laughed, sat down then said cheerily. "We got the power and soul energy of an Ethereal God Realm warrior. Yeah, you guys, prepare to receive your gifts."

"Haha, following senior, we will have meat to eat," Ka Tuo smiled, talking servilely, winking and waiting.

Chapter 943: Connect Two Places!

After one hour, pure energy diffused from Shi Yan's God Body and soul altar.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo's eyes brightened. The blood mark on their glabella shimmered with scarlet halos as they quietly took in the energy from Shi Yan.

The energy from Shi Yan's acupuncture points could strengthen their Essence Qi Ancient Tree, while the soul energy from him could nurture their soul altar, facilitating them to understand the powers Upanishad better.

Not long afterward, Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo were full of spirit. Their faces shimmered with strange red halos of abundant Blood Qi.

Shi Yan had become the source of energy. The pure energy emitted from his flesh, bones, and blood, together with the mysterious energy from the black hole congregated in his soul altar, quenching it. Just like when he trained his body, these energies made his soul altar more tenacious.

Normally, the soul altar was like an illusion, a shadow in the water. People could see it but they couldn't touch it.

However, after quenching his soul altar many times, Shi Yan's soul altar became a real matter. It looked like it was made of a combination of metal, jade, and stone. The edges of the soul altar looked sharp and thin like a precious cut jewel. It gave people a feeling that they could feel it using their fingers.

Shi Yan could actually feel his soul altar changing silently after having the tonic from the marvelous, mysterious energy.

This change happened little by little. It couldn't be finished at once, so he hadn't seen any significant change yet. However, Shi Yan understood that after each quenching, his soul altar became

more magical.

The Essence Qi Ancient Tree was still thriving. It was crystal clear like a jewel with God power moving inside!

Each branch was brimming with immense, pure energy, which was the fountain of his strength, the foundation of his existence, and the motivation that made him stronger.

At this moment, each branch of his Essence Qi Ancient Tree was filled with energy. Unless he went through another breakthrough to expand his Essence Qi Ancient Tree, he would have no more room to store energy.

The energy stored in his body had reached its limit.

Smiling, Shi Yan opened his eyes. He silently checked his condition for a while and didn't feel dispirited.

He was just one step away from Second Sky of Original God Realm. If he had another comprehension of his powers Upanishad, he could break through smoothly.

He needed an opportunity.

Fei Lan and Ka Tuo were still refining energy. They sat still as usual while energy twirled around their bodies.

However, Leona had something different...

With a closer look, he found a strange, dark light start to wind around Leona's God Body. Shortly after, Leona's body looked like black ink, turning into a thick block of darkness.

This kind of darkness wasn't from her God Domain.

It appeared directly on her skin and expanded. At this moment, Leona was the darkness as her body was able to swallow all of the light.

Shi Yan knitted his brows, watching quietly. The tail of his brow twitched as if he got something.

Fei Lan opened her eyes all of a sudden, sparkling with joy and hissing. "She's about to break through!"

Shi Yan was shocked, jolting up and speaking, "That was really fast!"

"When we were in Heaven Punishment City, her breakthrough wasn't completed yet. Her attainment in the realm comprehension was profound, but her energy hadn't accumulated enough. That was why she had reached only Third Sky of Original God Realm, but not the new realm."

Fei Lan took a deep breath. She looked at him with her dim eyes while she spoke earnestly. "The Heart of Darkness she got from you hides a marvelous intent domain, which is the essence of Dark power Upanishad. As long as she keeps the Heart of Darkness in her body, her understanding of her realm will get more profound. In other words, her realm comprehension was sufficient and that was why her usage of Dark power had become more exquisite and magnificent."

At this moment, Ka Tuo also woke up. He looked at Leona with admiration. "Ethereal God Realm! I long for it!"

Shi Yan walked to Leona, contemplating. Afterward, he asked Fei Lan. "How long does it take to break through to Ethereal God Realm?"

"It could be quick or it could take around one or two months. It will depend on her. We can't say the exact time." Fei Lan became stern as she knew it wasn't a good thing. "We're in Broken Star Field. Breaking through here isn't a good idea. That Ghost Mark Clan man could return with his friends. If that happens, it will be big trouble for us!"

Ka Tuo also got it. His countenance changed. "Then what should we do?"

"If my timing is correct, Na Xin and Carthew should be in

Original God Realm." Shi Yan had an idea all of a sudden, smiling. "It's easy to solve then."

Under the others' gaze, Shi Yan caressed his ring. A smoke fumed as if he was trying to draw the whole world out of that ring.

Floating on that shady smoke was a formation made of Empty Fantasy Crystals and dozens of supporting materials, refined by an expert using Space power Upanishad. This formation could connect to Mother formation directly.

The brilliant Child formation slowly landed neatly in front of Shi Yan under his power's control.

Boom Boom Boom!

Divine crystals with energy fluctuations flew out of the ring, falling precisely into each concave spot on the edge of the Child formation.

After he had finished inlaying dozens of thousands of divine crystals, the Child formation of the Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation had bunches of beautiful light. Each of them was like a space door aligning one after another to an unknown space under the direction of space power and divine crystals as the energy supply.

The divine crystals started to release their energy.

Shi Yan concentrated, sitting neatly inside the Child formation, releasing space energy. Fine space slits appeared around him.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

Those space slits seemed to be revived, seeping into the formation like a swimming school of fish. They piled up on each space door.

Bang!

Light rippled through the Child formation, stirring up the whole place. A brilliant, dazzling light ring appeared in the center of the

formation.

At the moment the light ring bloomed, Shi Yan disappeared. His aura was also gone.

The beautiful Child formation now had a flickering light as space energy fluctuated. Gradually, a light door was formed. Through that door, they saw many shadows and all of them were the ones that they knew in Old Orchid Star.

They saw Ka Fu, Long Zhu, and Na Xin waiting at the other end as if they knew something would happen shortly.

"Let Leona da-jie in," Shi Yan's voice came from behind the light door. "Ask her to hold her energy while crossing the door. Or else, I'm afraid this door won't be able to endure it."

Fei Lan reacted, placing a fingertip on her temple. A flow of subtle soul energy flew out, falling into Leona's Sea of Consciousness.

Leona hadn't noticed the changes in the outer world. Listening to Fei Lan's call, she woke up from her state. She shivered and then opened her eyes.

She understood what was happening. Fei Lan didn't need to explain. The aura of her dark power retreated. She turned into a beam of dark light, flying through the light door of the Child formation.

Center of the ancient city, Old Orchid Star.

The Mother formation stood on a newly-installed stone platform. At this moment, it had magical space ripples and magnificent light.

Long Zhu, Na Xin, and the others were guarding the Mother formation. Their faces were solemn, waiting.

A light sparkled. Shi Yan appeared standing on the Mother formation.

Grinning, he felt satisfied, looking at Carthew, Long Zhu, and Na Xin. "This formation is really wonderful. We can move between the life stars freely. With this formation, no matter where I am, I can return in just a blink."

As soon as he said that, Carthew, Na Xin, Long Zhu, and Yun Hao cheered up.

Swoosh!

Leona appeared behind him with a dark aura. After she landed on the Mother formation, she nodded to Shi Yan and then disappeared. She found a manor, which hadn't decayed after dozens of thousands of years and sat down quietly.

"After I've broken through, you have to bring me back to Broken Star Field." A soul thought of Leona appeared in Shi Yan's head after she had gone.

Shi Yan smiled, nodded and then turned to Na Xin. "How are you doing? Anything serious happened in Old Orchid Star lately?" "Everything's fine," Na Xin smiled sincerely, "The kids are all happy. The cultivating materials we brought home from Broken Star City can boost up their cultivating progress. They can condense the God Body soon. And Zhen Gu is recovering well. He'll be alright in two months, at most. We bought him good pellets, which are increasing his recovery speed."

They didn't enter Broken Star Field. After buying a lot of cultivating materials, they took the Mother formation and returned it to Old Orchid Star.

This time, the Giant Tribe had a big harvest. They brought home a significant amount of cultivating materials, which stirred up the entire tribe. They finally found hope in their lives.

Carthew used Shi Yan's divine crystals to buy a lot of cultivating materials, pellets, power Upanishad scriptures, and suitable training yards for low-realm warriors. He also explained the

wonderful and yet strange features of Agate Star Area to warriors from Grace Mainland and Raging Flame Star Area.

"Where are you guys? Still in Broken Star City?" After Na Xin calmed down as he couldn't hold his curiosity.

"In the Broken Star Field. We want to explore for a while," Shi Yan didn't tell them the details. He just smiled and said, "Precursor, please help me take care of my family and friends here. And as for the ones I've rescued, please hide them away. Don't let anyone know about them."

Na Xin nodded, "Don't worry. I know what to do."

"Okay, then I'll go now. Send someone to watch over this Mother formation for me." Shi Yan asked Long Zhu and then disappeared into the light door. Shortly after, the light on the Mother formation vanished. Everything resumed its normal state.

Chapter 944: Whereabouts Disclosed

Ai Fu's ancient building, Broken Star City.

Three Third Sky of Original God Realm experts stood in the hall. With logbooks in their hands, they were reporting the recent turnover of their business. They reported all transactions completed in detail to Ai Fu.

Ai Fu lay on his soft sofa, drinking good wine. He felt very satisfied.

Abruptly, a small bell near him rang hurriedly.

Ai Fu frowned, putting down his glass of wine. He waved his hand impatiently to the three who were still reading their records, asking them to leave immediately.

The three of them bowed and excused themselves.

After they had left, Ai Fu gave a low shout. An old man emerged from the five-colored passage behind him. It was his guard who watched over the treasury. He had sent him to Broken Star Field to keep track of Shi Yan.

A spooky shadow slowly emerged in the void between Ai Fu and that old man. That shadow was slowly moving and merging in one place.

Ai Fu had a dark face. He snorted. "Do you know how much precious materials I had to use to gather your soul from Broken Star Field? If your intelligence isn't worth it, don't blame me for not having mercy."

The gloomy shadow smiled reluctantly. "Young Master, don't worry. The news I got this time will frighten you. You won't feel like it was a waste."

Ai Fu was surprised. He nodded, "Tell me."

"I always follow your advice carefully. I've watched the team of

that kid. After they entered Broken Star Field, they behaved well for a long time. They didn't have any dispute with other people. They never attacked anyone deliberately. Their calm manner made me feel strange..."

"Get straight to the main point!" shouted Ai Fu.

The spooky shadow was bewildered. "Okay then. There were two Ghost Mark Clan warriors. You knew them. They were the troopers of Niger of the Ghost Mark Clan in the Far West region. They were a couple. The man was called Gaite and the woman was called Feng Rou. Young Master, do you remember them?"

"I know them. They're all at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm. They used to buy my stuff. Niger has Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm cultivation base. He is a talented one of a family of the Ghost Mark Clan in Agate Star Area. They are in charge of the Far West region. Right?"

"Feng Rou's dead. The ones you've asked me to watch killed her..."

Ai Fu's interest was stirred. "Impossible. Feng Rou was at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm. Even if she couldn't win, she shouldn't be killed, eh? What happened?"

The ominous shadow arranged his ideas and narrated what he had witnessed.

Ai Fu and the old man listened to him. Their faces grimaced.

"You meant... Shi Yan had swallowed Feng Rou's soul altar?!? Are you sure he did that?"

Ai Fu's God Body shivered. He couldn't hide the fear in his eyes. "Swallowed? How? What kind of power Upanishad can swallow a soul altar? Shi Yan... doesn't he has only First Sky of Original God Realm? He swallowed Feng Rou's soul altar. Are you sure you aren't mistaken?"

"I saw it," the gloomy shadow was also frightened. "Unbelievable.

I couldn't believe it! I had never seen anything like that. It was scary alright. A First Sky of Original God Realm warrior has engulfed the soul altar of an Ethereal God Realm warrior. Oh my God. It was against any of my knowledge of earth and heaven's powers!"

The old man by Ai Fu was also scared. He looked so shocked.

"Do you know any power Upanishad that can swallow the soul altar?" Ai Fu turned and asked that old man.

The old man shook his head continually. "Never before."

Two people and a soul sank into an annoying silence.

After a long moment, Ai Fu asked weakly. "You said that the four of them have a magical blood mark. What kind of blood mark is it?"

"Young Master, do you remember a legend in Broken Star Field that thousands of years ago, someone had intruded Broken Star Field? The one who could bring death to anyone else? Tens of thousands of living beings were killed wherever he went. That person also had the same blood mark. If I'm not wrong, Shi Yan's team has the same mark."

Then, Ai Fu and the old man were stunned. They didn't say anything for quite a long time.

"The powers Upanishads they cultivate are evil and peculiar. If I didn't see it with my own eyes, I would never have believed in the existence of such supernatural powers Upanishad. But now I've seen four! It was very shocking." The ominous shadow contemplated for a while and then added, "He has fixed the Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation that he bought from you. He has used it already."

Ai Fu was perplexed. After a while, he scolded, "That cunning kid!"

"Young Master, I think it's critical. I think we should report this

to the Master. Those four have a mysterious origin. They aren't like Agate Star Area's warriors. The man who cultivated Death power Upanishad used to visit the Agate Star Area. He rose the blood rain and stinky wind wherever he passed by. He was so formidable." The old man suggested seriously. "About that blood mark, no one knows which force it represents, but if Shi Yan and his people have it, it should relate to some force for sure!"

The old man felt terrible. As he realized something wrong happened, he was extremely restless.

Pulling himself together, he took another deep breath and continued, "Young Master, we shouldn't act rashly. If they belong to a mighty force, we... I'm afraid that we shouldn't provoke them. When the Incipient God Realm expert's subordinates are killed, he would know immediately and he would hunt the murderer down. I think... we shouldn't mess with them. It is better. Or else, we could bring trouble to our Master."

The gloomy shadow had the same idea. "I also feel that they're really intimidating. If they belong to a force, that force should be unimaginably strong. Being their enemies isn't a good move."

Ai Fu furrowed his brows tightly. What the others said had silenced him for a long moment.

He pondered for a while, sighing begrudgingly. "Report to my Grandfather immediately. Let him decide. And as for you, you should notify Old Han and tell him not to act rashly. If Blood Halberd wants to die, just let them go. We won't get involved."

Old Han was the other Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm he had sent to save Shi Yan to ask for the Thousand Fold Lotus in case Tu Fei wanted to kill him.

However, after that gloomy shadow saw what he shouldn't, Ai Fu was scared. He wasn't an impulsive guy. He knew how to protect himself. That was how he was able to live comfortably in Broken Star City.

"And I got something else. I saw people of Blood Devil in Broken Star Field." The shadow hesitated for a while and then added, "Seems like they were collecting materials for Blood Devil. They had a short encounter with Shi Yan. Now, they are looking for him."

"Blood Devil? The Immortal Demon Tribe of Agate Star Area?" Ai Fu was panicked.

"Yeah, I guessed. They thought that Shi Yan and Blood Devil have some relationship. They are finding him and they aren't far from him. I guess they're going to see him soon," said the gloomy shadow.

Ai Fu and the old man exchanged looks. They saw fear in each other's eyes.

"People of Blood Devil have never operated in the Far West region. Why are they here?" Ai Fu took a deep breath, beaming a forced smile. "Broken Star Field is so lively lately. Even Blood Devil has sent his fellows here. Did they verify Shi Yan and Blood Devil's relationship?"

"Probably," nodded the shadow.

"You should be more careful. Blood Devil's troops can feel your existence. You just need to peek a little bit. Don't let them catch you at any cost." Ai Fu stood up from his couch. "Notify my Grandfather immediately. Tell him everything. I can't understand the whole picture. Blood Devil is a tyrannical, arrogant expert. He hates tiny areas, but he still sends his men to Broken Star Field. What kind of vandalism is that! Does he have mercy to spare us, local warriors?"

Although Ai Fu had a foul mouth, his mood was so bad. He picked up a jug of wine, drinking crazily.

Wu Lan was hovering above a blue lake, closing her eyes to sense.

The two Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm muscular Black Scaled men were so bored, watching here and there.

More than one hundred warriors were hiding inside a deep pit next to them. They didn't dare crane their necks to watch.

A thin and small Dark Spirit old man stooped his head in distress. He was holding a Fantasy Sky Ring, offering it sincerely, "Precursors, this ring stores all of our harvest in Broken Star Field. Please take a look."

More than one hundred warriors staying in the dark pit not far from them had sent him to talk on their behalf. Ten days ago, they had killed around ten experts to occupy this mine. They were happily exploiting a strange metal when they found Wu Lan's team.

They became reluctant. Although Wu Lan was finding something and she didn't want to see them, they were still panicked.

Thus, we have this situation.

This man who came here to talk to Wu Lan's team wanted to offer their harvest so Wu Lan would show them mercy and not kill them.

In Broken Star Field, people would rob and snatch the harvest of the weaker warriors. If they were in a good mood, they would only take the materials. If they were in a bad mood, they often killed all of the poor warriors.

Wu Lan opened her eyes unable to help but glare at the Dark Spirit old man. "Get lost. Do you think that we want the toys that you're exploiting here?"

"We have only these things," the old man discolored, trying to bend his body lower. "If you want anything we have, just say so. Please, you don't need to be polite to us."

"Haha, people in Broken Star Field are interesting, indeed. As they are thugs, they think that everyone else is a thug like them,"

mocked one of the Black Scaled warriors.

"Yeah, since we've come here, we've met a lot like him. They offered us things as if they're our grandchildren," the other brawny man said. "Sh*t, I didn't think that a remote area like the Far West region could be that chaotic. Seems like everywhere in this place will be the same. No place can have peace."

"I said get lost. Didn't you hear that?" Wu Lan was annoyed. A shiny light emerged from her palm. Shortly, she remembered something. The light dot on her finger turned into Shi Yan's image. "Have you ever met this man?"

"Yeah, several days ago, he crossed this place. He went in that direction." The Dark Spirit old man clarified with a stern face. "They're a group of five. They have a teenager guide and an old woman..."

This man said in detailed, as though he was afraid that Wu Lan wouldn't feel satisfied with his answer. He gestured, funnily swinging his arm.

"Alright," Wu Lan snorted, didn't bother to look at him, nodded to the two muscular Black Scaled men. They jumped and disappeared shortly.

More than one hundred warriors hiding in the deep pit sighed in relief as they saw the three disappear. They thought they had good luck today.

Chapter 945: Revive the Deathtrap

"Here we are. This place."

Ji You halted not daring to step further. Instead, he pointed in a direction.

Shi Yan, Fei Lan, and Ka Tuo stopped by him.

In front of them, a luxuriant forest stood with wet ground and thick, lively energy from the woods.

It was utterly contrary to what he had described before.

Fei Lan and Ka Tuo glared at him with malicious looks, giving him a snort.

Ji You beamed a forced smile. "It's inside. You guys should go inside the forest. You will see anomalies."

"He's right. It's here." Shi Yan contemplated for a while and then said, "The Death aura inside is really strong. I have a dear feeling with it. I know this aura. It's exactly the same as my God Domain when I use Death power Upanishad."

Fei Lan and Ka Tuo were surprised.

Shi Yan led the team, walking into the woods without waiting for them to discuss more.

Fei Lan was baffled, but she immediately followed him.

"How about you?" Ka Tuo turned around, looking at Ji You who was shaking like a leaf. "Are you going with us to take a look?"

Ji You shook his head hastily. "No, thanks. I almost died in there last time. I won't go in. You guys just go. Don't wait for me."

While talking, he moved backward, getting further away from the forest as if this forest had some terrifying ghosts or monsters that could take his life away at any moment.

Ka Tuo grinned silently. He didn't mind the boy anymore,

walking behind Shi Yan and Fei Lan. Ten minutes later, he paused as fear sparkled in his eyes.

The center of this lush forest had an area of ten miles that didn't even have a leaf of grass. There was no energy fluctuation. A quiet, desolate aura hovered, frightening people's souls and making them shiver in fear.

Situated in the middle of an exuberant forest, this place looked very peculiar. The ground was damp, but it had no single weed. At the same time, in the area where the Death aura couldn't reach, it was luxuriant. All kinds of floras there were extraordinarily thriving.

This place was so eccentric. The core had a heavy Death aura while its outskirts were lively.

It was the same as Shi Yan's God Domain, which was contrary to each other but had the same magical effects.

Once Shi Yan urged the God Domain using Death power Upanishad, the area around him would become absolutely quiet. Then, it would proactively take life energy, killing other living beings.

However, as the core of his power, Shi Yan's God Body would receive the vivid vitality. He could harvest life energy in his dead territory to strengthen himself.

This was contrary to this forest.

There were no sound or beam of life energy ten miles around the forest. It didn't have a leaf of grass as the dense Death aura hovered. People who came nearer would feel like they were walking toward the abyss of Death, walking on the road of self-destruction.

Fei Lan and Ka Tuo weren't exceptions.

They were just standing near the edge of the Death aura area, but they still felt fear arising from deep inside their hearts. Their souls

and vitality seemed to be drawn away, turning into light dots and vanishing.

Fei Lan and Ka Tuo discolored. They didn't dare linger near the dead area anymore. They retreated into the forest. They finally calmed down, but they still looked frightened.

"That Death Intent Domain was so scary! We just stood outside, but we couldn't endure it. I wonder how many dangers are hiding in there. No wonder Ji You didn't dare go into the woods." Ka Tuo was still frightened, shivering.

Fei Lan was a little better than him. However, her eyes showed her anxiety, which was caused by Shi Yan. He got into the area.

Not only did he enter, but he was also walking towards the center where the Death aura was thickest. He stood silently in the middle of the place, his face astounded. He seemed to be sensing something.

"Senior... are you alright?" Ka Tuo lowered his voice, asking instinctively.

Fei Lan didn't look at him, still frowning at Shi Yan. She said thoughtfully, "If something happens to him here, I'm afraid no one in the entire Agate Star Area will be able to get in here. I think... this place exists because of him."

"Because of him?" Ka Tuo was bewildered. "Impossible? He has never met that person before, right? Why did someone leave this place for him? Did he know Shi Yan would enter Agate Star Area and visit Broken Star Field? It's unimaginable! I think it's impossible!"

"At his realm, he could anticipate anything. Shi Yan received his inheritance, went to Raging Flame Star Area, connected to the Dark Sky family, and then went to God Perishing Land. From the God Perishing Land, he went to Old Orchid Star, staying in the Far West region... It seems like a hand in the dark has arranged

everything. It was all set thousands of years ago." Fei Lan considered her wording. She muttered, "I think he knew that Shi Yan would come. That was why he left the intent domain in Broken Star Field, waiting for Shi Yan."

Ka Tuo was astounded.

He still found it unbelievable.

However, he believed it shortly after. Shi Yan had undergone many changes!

Standing in the core of the Death Intent Domain where the deadly aura was thickest, Shi Yan used his Death power Upanishad to release the God Domain. Death energy fluctuated, stretching from his God Domain and blending in with the Death aura of the place.

In the next moment, Ka Tuo had a magical feeling. He thought that this place was Shi Yan's home. It has been waiting for him to come home. It was whispering and reporting to its master about every difficulty it had experienced.

A strange color was revealed in Shi Yan's eyes. Both of his arms swung as if he was touching Death Intent Domain.

The magical Death energy fluctuation expanded from Shi Yan as the center and reaching further outside.

Each of the rich, ancient trees in the forest and tenacious foliage withered under the Death Intent Domain. Their vitality was all taken.

The silent light dots carrying life energy congregated like a drizzle falling into the sea. Shi Yan was that sea, taking in all the energy around him and receiving a gift from his precursor... including the cognition of Death power Upanishad.

Fei Lan and Ka Tuo were panic-stricken. They had to retreat further away from this area.

Suddenly, Shi Yan's power Upanishad changed. The vigorous energy that fiercely flooded his body was rejected, shooting everywhere.

A miracle happened...

Those dead ancient trees and foliage were revived under this life energy. The withered trees became lively. Buds and leaves started to grow at a speed that naked eyes could observe.

Ka Tuo and Fei Lan gawked, dropping their jaws.

Shi Yan's God Domain changed again.

His entire body became heavy with Death aura. He had no life energy as if his Blood Qi also had Death Qi. His heartbeat even paused.

However, his God Domain was lively and vigorous with countless life energy fluctuations. Under his control, they shrouded everywhere, giving vitality to the shriveled plants.

"He's switched Death and Life energy fluctuations. He can make these two contrary auras take turns and merge. Is he trying to... fuse them?" Ka Tuo was bewildered. "How could he fuse Death Upanishad and Life Upanishad? How could he?"

"I don't know if it's a fusion or not. But I think he has something magical," said Fei Lan softly.

While they were talking, Shi Yan's God Domain changed again. The massive, deadly aura was wiped out, replaced by vigorous life energy. The God Domain around him now had the fierce Death aura. Those revived trees withered and died the second time.

Ka Tuo and Fei Lan gawked.

They understood that Shi Yan was testing his cognition of Death power Upanishad. He had used the power Upanishad magnetic field of that precursor to sublimate his own power Upanishad.

Evidently, Shi Yan had harvested the inheritance that was more

profound than his own Death Upanishad. This inheritance wasn't simply about Death. It was about his new perception of life and an approach to the soul.

Time flew quietly.

Fei Lan and Ka Tuo were waiting for Shi Yan to comprehend the true meaning of his power Upanishad. Afterward, he would awaken from his comprehension.

One day, Fei Lan jolted up in panic. She was comprehending her Corrosion power Upanishad and something alarming struck her.

Fei Lan's reaction made Ka Tuo stand up and frown as he looked around. He lowered his voice and said, "Precursor, is something wrong?" he looked at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan stood in the center of the dead zone. He was still switching between Death and Life power Upanishad, trying to understand the magical mysteries of the two contrary powers Upanishad. There was nothing unusual that happened to him.

"It's not Shi Yan. Someone is coming towards us rapidly! They're almost here!" hissed Fei Lan.

Ka Tuo discolored, shouting. "My senior is studying his power. He can't be disturbed now. Who is that blind little thug?"

"Little thug?" Fei Lan forced a smile. "It better be just a thug. His realm is one level higher than mine!"

Pausing for a while, Fei Lan took a deep breath and spoke resolutely. "We can't let him come close to this area. We must stop them on the way. We must try our best to seize more time for Shi Yan!"

"Who is it? Did the Ghost Mark guy come with his friends?" asked Ka Tuo.

Shaking her head, Fei Lan said, "I don't know. Regardless of who's coming, we must stop him. We can't afford to let Shi Yan be

disturbed at this moment. This opportunity is rare. Once he gets bothered, I'm not sure if we can get into the intent domain the second time. It happens only once in a blue moon. We must seize more time for him!"

"Understood!" Ka Tuo nodded, his face serious. He grinned fiendishly. "Then bring it on!"

"Let's go!" Fei Lan turned into a white-gray light, flying out of the forest.

After fifteen minutes, a tornado came roaring and howling. It crushed the stone around easily as if it was breaking dried branches. This enormous tornado wanted to cover the entire sky.

A figure was shouting and thundering in the center of the tornado. His angry voice shook the sky. He was Tu Fei of Blood Halberd.

More than ten warriors of Blood Halberd emerged from a far distance. They were circling them. Apparently, they didn't want to let Fei Lan's team escape alive.

"Finally, I found you guys!" Tu Fei thundered like an enraged wild beast. He said maliciously, "Bring that kid to me. He must die for what he has done. I want to skin him alive!"

"Beat me and then talk." Fei Lan's face was cold. As she knew Tu Feng's murder was disclosed, she didn't want to conceal it anymore. She tried to stick his resentment on her. "I killed your little brother. It's not related to Shi Yan. Don't shoot at the wrong target."

"Right. That kid's realm is low. How could he have killed my brother," Tu Fei roared crazily. He turned into a tornado, storming toward her. His Ethereal Extent appeared above his head.

Chapter 946: Lift the Siege

Tu Fei and Blood Halberd's warriors came all the way from Broken Star City. Their purpose was clear: to take revenge for Tu Feng.

Shi Yan and Fei Lan were the targets of this mission.

Shi Yan was in his critical moment of comprehending his realm. If he got disturbed and woke up from his cultivation, it would be tough for him to enter that Intent Domain the second time. In the eyes of Fei Lan and Ka Tuo, Shi Yan had done many things for them. It was time to pay back his favors.

Thus, they stood up and faced Tu Fei and his Blood Halberd.

Although their realms and manpower were lower, Fei Lan and Ka Tuo never thought about stepping back. They never thought about abandoning Shi Yan and leaving. It was because Shi Yan's their hope!

As long as Shi Yan was alive, as long as Shi Yan could get gradually stronger, as long as they went the same way as Shi Yan, they would receive enormous benefits. After one battle, they would accumulate a tremendous amount of energy and refine their soul altars at the same time.

After they had experienced this kind of indescribable benefit, they never wanted to ignore it.

"GRRRR!"

Ka Tuo roared like an enraged beast. He suddenly floated up into the air.

Ka Tuo released his God Domain. Chaotic energy appeared, uprooting trees around them. They twirled around his God Domain together with crushed stones, logs, grass, sand, and gravel. They looked like schools of fish, moving around Ka Tuo.

A flow of fierce, chaotic energy expanded from Ka Tuo.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Rocks and trees exploded. The area where Ka Tuo hovered seemed to be smashed. The chaotic energy twisted everything.

None of the warriors of Blood Halberd accompanying Tu Fei had reached Ethereal God Realm. They were all in Third Sky of King God Realm and the Original God Realm. One of them was at Third Sky of Original God Realm, which was one level higher than Ka Tuo's.

However, when Ka Tuo released his Chaos power Upanishad, his twisted power swept the area, affecting all Blood Halberd's warriors. Instantly, they had a distorted feeling that twisted their souls and their vessels, entangling them. When they urged their energy, it felt like someone used a needle to prick their bodies.

Just like Leona, Ka Tuo could now spare one level and attack the others.

A Third Sky of Original God Realm warrior wasn't really terrifying in his eyes. He believed that he could defeat him.

Tu Fei didn't have time to take care of Ka Tuo as he was too busy against Fei Lan, his opponent.

Fei Lan also had the capacity to leap a level and fight higher-realm warriors.

It was the first time she showed her Ethereal Extent.

Deep in the sky, a world of the dark and opaque gray air appeared, which looked like a dark ghostly abyss. This abyss carried the will that could dissolve everything. This world didn't have any lakes or mountains. There was no faunas or floras but the ash-gray corrosive air.

Since this area could corrode everything, there was nothing else in Fei Lan's world. It looked like this world would never have any

living being.

The ash-gray Ethereal Extent slowly descended on Fei Lan, shrouding her entirely.

Tu Fei's Ethereal Extent had tornados like alarming smoke columns that jutted into the clouds. Their auras were harsh and brutal as if they could break everything no matter how hard it was.

Tu Fei's Ethereal Extent collided with Fei Lan's Ethereal Extent.

Fei Lan's Ethereal Extent didn't break. Her empty Ethereal Extent stayed the same after the tornados attacked her world.

It had nothing. What was there to be destroyed?

Tu Fei's tornados were controlled by his power Upanishad and soul. After they fell into Fei Lan's Ethereal Extent, they moved like a thunderstorm. However, they reluctantly found that they couldn't destroy anything. At the same time, their energy was discreetly worn out.

When Tu Fei found this anomaly, the tornados he had created by his soul energy turned into nothingness in Fei Lan's Ethereal Extent.

Tu Fei suddenly appeared in the real world. A tornado supported his body and he raised. He paled and a gleam of fear crossed his eyes.

He suddenly realized that it was impossible to use his higher-realm Ethereal Extent to break Fei Lan's Ethereal Extent with force.

Fei Lan's Ethereal Extent was generated by her peculiar power Upanishad. Due to its corrosive ability, it wasn't afraid of any kind of energy attacks.

Tu Fei couldn't take any advantage. Quite the contrary, his energy was disorderly and he had to consume a significant amount of energy.

He started to change his approach. Switching from using realms, he began to use the energy to attack.

Death and Life energy took turns to show up on the edge of the forest. Fei Lan and Ka Tuo had used all of their best abilities. They didn't seem afraid of exhaustion as if they could restore shortly afterward. They were consuming energy massively to seize more time for Shi Yan.

"There's a battle!" From thousand miles away, a Black Scaled brawny man's eyebrows twitched, hissing.

Wu Lan's eyes sparkled. She closed her eyes to sense. "Over there. We will see that kid soon. I'm excited. If he's a member of Immortal Demon Tribe, a member of our Demon Clan, Master will be cheered up since he finally has someone who belongs to his own kind."

"What if he doesn't want to go the same way as our Demon Clan?" one of them said.

"We just need to make ourselves clear and just tell him the truth. I think he knows what he should do." Wu Lan chuckled. "Our Master's reputation can shake the entire Agate Star Area. As long as he's not a dumbass, he will know how great this opportunity is."

"Yeah, that's right," the two Black Scaled muscular men nodded, showing their agreement.

The three of them smiled, flying faster. They looked relaxed as if they knew that not many forces in Broken Star Field have the strength to resist them. Those who were strong enough to fight them wouldn't cause a dispute with them because of their mighty force.

They had this confidence.

Although they were in Broken Star Field, the distance of a thousand miles took just a blink of an eye to the experts at their level.

"Look! It's them!" Wu Lan's eyes brightened. She recognized Fei Lan and Ka Tuo.

"Ah! They have special powers Upanishad!" screamed a Demon man.

Fei Lan and Ka Tuo were struggling to resist this force. Fei Lan's situation was better.

She looked calm. However, when she used her energy, she looked a little tired. Ka Tuo had blood all over his body. He had a more significant pressure. Not only was he dealing with a Third Sky of Original God Realm expert, but he also had to deal with ten other warriors.

Their manpower was limited. At this moment, Ka Tuo was almost exhausted. Under the besiege of more than ten warriors, it was a miracle that he was able to endure until now.

"Oh, trouble." Wu Lan frowned and he couldn't help but mutter, "Don't waste more time."

The Black Scaled men nodded. They stormed forward, moving directly to Ka Tuo.

Just like two hungry wolves entering a sheep's pasture, as soon as the two Demon men arrived, the Blood Halberd's warriors felt like massive mountains had just smashed them. Their God Bodies cracked and then exploded, sending blood and flesh everywhere. They didn't even have a chance to resist. Their God Bodies were pressed and blasted, their soul altars flying away.

The Blood Halberd's warriors were as weak as lambs in their eyes. They exploded as if others were breaking dried tree branches.

Ka Tuo was petrified. He pulled himself together, watching around. He found no one but floating soul altars.

Those soul altars had hesitated for a while. They were so frightened, flying away immediately, not daring to leave a curse. They disappeared shortly after.

"Wow, that was fast," laughed a Black Scaled warrior. The scales on his body rattled. He looked as mighty as a Black-armored Demogorgon.

Wu Lan moved swiftly, standing by the battle site. He glanced at Ka Tuo.

Ka Tuo was chilled. He stepped backward. He was fearful, but he was prepared to run in any minute.

He recognized Wu Lan.

Wu Lan had initially been collecting Immortal Grass. Seeing Shi Yan, she thought that the situation wasn't going well, running away. It looked like Shi Yan had occupied the grass, and Fei Lan and Ka Tuo were his partners in crime.

At first, Ka Tuo thought that they came to take revenge. The mighty aura of the two Black Scaled warriors was enough to subdue him. As he knew that the others were powerful, Ka Tuo was frightened and anxious.

"We aren't here to trouble you guys," Wu Lan smiled, her face natural, "Where's that kid? The one who took my Immortal Grass."

"What do you want?" Ka Tuo shivered, gritting his teeth.

"Don't be tense. We mean no harm." Wu Lan was surprised. Pondering for a while, she said, "To show our goodwill, we need to do something. Okay, move."

She nodded to the two Black Scaled beefy men.

They understood, storming away like a massive black sword thrusting at Tu Fei.

Tu Fei felt an intense insecure feeling. He didn't linger, getting away from the battle site. In just a blink, he had moved one thousand miles away.

When he saw his subordinates die, he didn't hurry to leave because he wanted to know the identity and purpose of who killed

them. However, seeing the others take action, he knew that he wouldn't have a chance. He made a quick decision to flee.

The Black Scaled men exchanged looks and then grinned.

"People from Broken Star Field are cunning and they have a good sense. They are good at running away."

"Yeah, in this place where battles happen every day, fleeing when seeing the stronger warriors seems to be instinctual."

"Seems like he was lucky. He escaped. Otherwise... Haha!"

While they were talking, Fei Lan wiped the sweat from her forehead, taking a deep breath.

At this moment, Wu Lan and Ka Tuo arrived. Wu Lan smiled weakly. "Can you tell us where he is now?"

Fei Lan and Ka Tuo were confused. Right after that, they sensed and their faces showed surprise.

Shi Yan wasn't far from them. He stayed in the forest right behind their back. Fei Lan and Ka Tuo thought that the others could sense him with their realm, so they shouldn't ask them for his whereabouts. The two then became skeptical.

However, they sensed and found Shi Yan's aura had disappeared completely. The forest behind them didn't have any strange commotion.

Fei Lan and Ka Tuo were frightened. They hurried to fly into the forest, wanting to check the situation back there.

Wu Lan and the two Black Scaled men followed them.

Deep in the forest, the Death and Life energy didn't fluctuate anymore. The atmosphere in there was no different from the outside. However, Shi Yan wasn't there.

No one knew where he had gone. There was nothing left behind for them to sense. He seemed to have vanished into thin air.

Chapter 947: Death and Life Bridge

Deep in the forest, Fei Lan, Ka Tuo, Wu Lan, and the other two knitted their brows tightly, releasing their Soul Consciousness, which moved like shuttles that observed and searched everywhere.

This place didn't have a desolate aura or vigorous vitality. It was similar to the atmosphere of any place in Broken Star Field. Nothing looked strange anymore.

The Death and Life commotions seemed to be just a hallucination for Fei Lan and Ka Tuo. Standing in the middle of the forest, Ka Tuo and Fei Lan were very confused.

Where had Shi Yan gone?

They exchanged looks and couldn't give a reason. Their Soul Consciousness didn't find any anomaly.

Wu Lan's bold brows furrowed, looking at Fei Lan and Ka Tuo coldly and skeptically. "You said he was here? You aren't trying to deceive us, are you? Where is he?"

"He was just right there," Ka Tuo beamed a forced smile, shaking his head. "He found the Intent Domain here suitable for his power Upanishad. He was learning the essence of his Upanishad. We were afraid that the others would disturb him. That was why we got out there and fought. While fighting, we didn't have time to check up on him and we didn't see anything strange."

"Did the others capture him?" One of the Black Scaled men hesitated. "If they still have an Ethereal God Realm warrior, that one could have avoided your sensing to abduct him while you were fighting."

"Impossible!" Fei Lan snorted, her face stern. "With Shi Yan's subtle powers Upanishad, his carefulness, and capabilities, it wouldn't be easy to capture him!"

Wu Lan and the two Black Scaled men were surprised as they

didn't know where Fei Lan had her confidence.

In common sense, a First Sky of Original God Realm warrior would be unable to resist an Ethereal God Realm expert.

Facing such an opponent, when the Ethereal Extent snatched him, his powers Upanishad would be restrained and he would be left with no chance to resist.

In their eyes, even if Shi Yan was stronger, he could never have avoided capture from an Ethereal God Realm expert.

"Yeah, it's true. With his mysterious powers, not many people can restrain him in just a blink." Ka Tuo nodded. "His realm is lower than ours, but in a battle to the death, I would be the loser!" said Ka Tuo affirmatively.

Then, Wu Lan and the two Black Scaled men were perplexed.

"He must have encountered something marvelous," Fei Lan pondered for a while. She seemed to understand something. She sat down cross-legged, squinting her eyes. She didn't mind anything else.

Ka Tuo suddenly smiled, "It's true. The intent domain in this area is left by that precursor. Of course, he wouldn't harm Shi Yan. He would only give him benefits." Then, Ka Tuo also sat down, relaxing. They decided to wait for him here.

Wu Lan and the two Black Scaled beefy men were skeptical. However, seeing that Fei Lan and Ka Tuo did not have any intention of explaining, the three exchanged looks, frowning and then waiting in silence.

Time flew.

Broken Star Field didn't have any sun or moon. It had only brilliant stars in the vast void. Without a special tool, it was hard to tell the exact time.

One day, while the five of them were still sitting neatly, their

brows twitched. They couldn't help but stoop to watch the place underneath.

Crack Crack Crack! Pop Pop!

Strange crispy sounds echoed from the deep underground. It sounded like something rigid had broken. They all heard the noise clearly.

The five of them jolted up. With a severe countenance, they released their Soul Consciousness, seeping deep underground.

Boom Boom! Rumble Rumble!

They shook violently as if they were suddenly pounded by a giant hammer. They even staggered.

The more profound their realm was, the more severe the damage was. As the two Black Scaled men had Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm, their soul altars were shaken violently as if they were about to collapse.

The two paled. They didn't think much, immediately retrieving their Soul Consciousness. They couldn't hold their screeching.

Wu Lan, Fei Lan, and Ka Tuo trembled as if they were drunk. They struggled to steady their body. They were all frightened.

The Soul Consciousness they had sent into the earth had returned with an icy cold energy, running directly into their Sea of Consciousness and God Body. They heard explosions in their heads while their God Bodies shook as if it was about to be ripped off.

"You... Even you guys can't endure it?" Ka Tuo was so scared. He couldn't believe it. He just stared at the two Black Scaled men.

The others two had a bitter and fearful countenance. They gazed at the ground underneath, and couldn't help but hiss. "There's a powerful energy fluctuation down there. It's mighty and unpredictable! It should be some remnant of an Incipient God Realm expert. My my! That vibe came back through our Soul

Consciousness. It's too intimidating! Perhaps our Master isn't that strong!"

Wu Lan's beautiful eyes showed a deep fear. She couldn't help but screech. "More intimidating than our Master?"

"I think so," one of them sighed dejectedly. "Although our Master is mighty and we've been following him for many years, we've never seen anything as formidable as this. The person who had left such energy in the ground could have a more profound realm than our Master."

Listening to him, Wu Lan gawked. She was speechless for a long moment.

"Which is... your Master's realm?" Ka Tuo mouthed gingerly.

"The Second Sky of Incipient God Realm," Wu Lan had deep respect in her voice.

Ka Tuo shut his mouth. He wore a serious face as he had a passionate admiration in his eyes.

He suddenly understood more clearly.

The existence that had left the remnant underground was the one who cultivated Death power Upanishad who used to appear in Raging Flame Star Area and was a member of Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight. This person was a precursor in his school and he also had a close relationship to Shi Yan.

The energy remnant of such a character had almost broken the two unidentified Demon experts. They said that this person could be even stronger than their Master who was an expert at Second Sky of Incipient God Realm. So what was the remarkable realm of this precursor?

Ka Tuo was shocked. He quietly clenched his fists while having a strange rainbow light on his face. He was thrilled, indeed.

Wu Lan and the two Black Scaled men could see his strange

expression. They looked at him skeptically. "Why are you so excited? Does it matter to you?" asked Wu Lan.

"That person was our precursor. I am of course, proud of my powerful precursor." Ka Tuo grinned. "Moreover, he brought something good to my senior. I believe my senior is deep underground. We should now wait for him here."

"Why do you want to find Shi Yan?" Fei Lan's winkled twitched as she looked at the other three lucidly. "Because he took your Immortal Grass?"

Wu Lan got herself together, smiling charmingly. "Sister, I want to ask something..."

"Shoot," Fei Lan said dully.

"Did anything unusual happen after he grabbed the Immortal Grass?" asked Wu Lan.

The two Black Scaled brawny men's eyes also brightened, looking at Fei Lan.

"Unusual?" Fei Lan frowned. "Nothing. The puree of that immortal something grass seeped into his body. He said that it could help him condense more immortal demon blood or something like that..."

Wu Lan and the two Black Scaled warriors were astonished. Their bodies shivered with thrill.

"Indeed!"

"He's one of our Master's fellows!"

"My oh my! I didn't expect that we would find a fellow of our Master's race!"

"If he knows about this, he will be so excited! He has been searching for his clansmen for so many years. It was too bad that he hasn't found anything. If he knows that he's no longer lonely in Agate Star Area, he will go crazy!"

The three Demon experts were surprised and happy. They laughed cheerily, their faces joyful.

Fei Lan and Ka Tuo were baffled.

They weren't fools. Since Wu Lan and the other had helped them out, they knew that those experts weren't their enemies. Thus, Fei Lan and Ka Tuo took the chances and revealed a little about Shi Yan to check their reactions.

At this moment, seeing the other three almost crack of happiness, Ka Tuo and Fei Lan exchanged looks. They felt amazed somehow.

When Shi Yan had finished his blood replacement, his God Body changed. They all saw that Shi Yan didn't have a human form at that moment. He somehow looked similar to the God Clan from the legends. Fei Lan and Ka Tuo understood that Shi Yan still had many secrets that they didn't know.

Today, from Wu Lan's team, they finally confirmed one thing: Shi Yan's changes could be similar to someone else's and that person was likely one of his fellows.

Since the others didn't have any malicious intent, they knew that it would be a good encounter for Shi Yan. Thus, they didn't conceal his information.

Deep in the earth of the most magical place of Broken Star Field was a whole new world.

It was a marvelous, long bridge made of five-colored light. This light bridge led deep underground. There were many transparent handprints on the bridge that looked like someone had left them intentionally. They had Death and Life energies respectively.

There were Death Seals and Life Seals.

That bridge was the Death and Life Bridge, which was made of

light energy. Death and Life seals on the bridge released the Death and Life auras at the same time.

The Death and Life Bridge ran directly into the deep and dark ground, connecting to a mysterious land.

At this moment, Shi Yan, who had disappeared earlier, was taking each step with great effort on that bridge.

At each step, the transparent handprints on Death and Life Bridge would fly out, falling heavily on his God Body. They struck him until his step trembled. Right after that, the handprints merged with his body. It was unknown if the handprints helped him quench the God Body or fuse with the intent domain.

He made each step with a struggle. After each step, he had to pause to recover before continuing his journey.

The transparent handprints carried the intent domain and energy of Death and Life with tremendous power. The handprints attacked his God Body and then disappeared, giving him a lot of wounds. His blood splashed. His bones cracked.

The cracking noise Fei Lan and the other heard actually came from his bones.

However, there was no pain on his face. Quite the contrary, his eyes sparkled like bunches of light. He looked excited and passionate as if he was actually enjoying all of these.

He continued to walk resolutely.

Chapter 948: Inheritance

With each step that Shi Yan took, transparent handprints would fly out and violently strike his God Body.

Inside each handprint was the Death or Life intent domain. They crazily attacked his body. The Death Seal smashed his flesh and bones while the Life Seal revived the damaged part, giving him full vitality.

It felt like he had experienced death and reincarnation, struggling between death and life. This kind of continuous rebirth gave him a strong urge for his life form transformation.

The Death and Life Bridge extended deep underground. It was mysterious and unpredictable. As he walked, the Death Seal and Life Seal flew out and disappeared. Part of the bridge where he had passed slowly disappeared.

The Death and Life Bridge functioned as a marvelous inheritance. With each step he made, he received a flow of power Upanishad Inheritance, which made the previous part of the bridge disappear as it became the engine that quenched his body and soul altar.

The refining of his God Body and the transformation of his soul gave him joy and pain. The pain came from his God Body, his flesh and veins, and his broken and healed bones. The joy came from his soul, and soul altar, especially the tier of powers Upanishad.

The Death power Upanishad in the tier of powers Upanishad had one more beam of vitality after each transparent handprint struck him.

The Death power Upanishad became ingenuine. It condensed and entered his life energy, giving his tier of powers Upanishad vitality. It seemed like it was the complete form of the Death and Life power Upanishad.

The process of receiving power Upanishad Inheritance was to

walk through the Death and Life Bridge. After each step, he was given some mysteries, which made his understanding of Death and Life power Upanishad more profound.

Deep underground, there was no way to count time. Shi Yan didn't know how long he had been walking on this bridge.

Today, he finally walked to the other end of the bridge.

The other end of the bridge was a place of countless brilliant transparent crystals. They looked like a formed glacier buried underground. They had an energy that felt familiar.

Shi Yan concentrated on the glacier, his eyes brightening.

Death and Life threads filled each corner of the crystal glacier complex. It was like a hidden, magical formation buried inside a glacier, with the crystals as hubs that connected the mysterious air currents inside.

That air current carried the Origin energy!

Only the most ancient continent could give birth to the Origin. It could collect energy from outer space to provide for the life star endlessly.

It was like Grace Mainland.

That crystal glacier had a flow of Origin, which was weaker than what he got in Grace Mainland. In that Origin, he saw a blood mark, which was slowly bobbing with life energy. It looked like a wonderful ancient creature.

The Blood Vein Ring on his finger suddenly shone a rainbow light, which reached tens of thousands of meters away.

The blood cloud mark in the crystal also projected a fiercely surging energy. It bounced in the same frequency as his Blood Vein Ring.

Swoosh!

The Blood Vein Ring slid away from his finger, flying towards the

Origin and gathering with the blood cloud mark.

Magnificent light silently radiated from countless complex threads. They all poured into the blood cloud mark, flowing towards the Blood Vein Ring.

The Ring Spirit of the Blood Vein Ring seemed to have two separate identical energies which were slowly merging.

Shi Yan was shocked. He reacted.

The blood cloud mark was one component of the Ring Spirit. It was a beam of the soul detached from the Ring Spirit!

He used to hear the Ring Spirit say that it wasn't complete. It lost a lot of memories. It was vague about things that it had experienced. Because of the missing pieces of its memories, the Ring Spirit didn't have a complete consciousness. Each time it communicated with Shi Yan, it couldn't tell him details.

Today, as the Blood Vein Ring had vehemently entered the Origin to fuse with its lost beam of the soul, Shi Yan suddenly understood it.

A thought was directly reflected in his soul. It came from the Ring Spirit. It was explaining something.

Shi Yan was surprised, listening quietly. His eyes were dark as he was frowning.

"Just like what Lao Luo did, this person had to find an ancient continent which had the Origin that year to impart our Master's inheritance. He brought the Master's Blood Shield and a part of my soul. He found this place, but he couldn't activate the inheritance. Lao Luo succeeded as he found you. But this expert failed."

The Ring Spirit's thought wasn't continuous. It seemed like its energy was limited even though it had fused with another flow of its soul.

"After he failed, he gave the Blood Shield to the descendant of the

Dark Inheritance. A part of my soul was placed in the ancient continent that had the Origin, waiting for you. Today, you've finally come. He had built the Death and Life Bridge for you so that he can help you understand the power of Death and Life. It helped me gather a flow of my soul. But he isn't here. It means he has fallen..."

The thoughts of the Ring Spirit intervened again.

"To fuse my soul, I need a long time. You should swallow more soul altars. It will help me fuse faster. Devouring was the main power Upanishad of our Master. It was the main reason why people didn't accept him. You still have time... You must be persistent..."

The thought message from the Ring Spirit faded away.

Crack Crack Crack!

As the energy moved, the crystal glacier exploded. Exquisite lines of the ancient formation distorted and shattered. The Origin and a flow of soul inside disappeared into the Blood Vein Ring.

The surface of the Blood Vein Ring had a blood membrane, making the ring look like a peculiar, small ball of flesh.

Swoosh!

The Blood Vein Ring flew to him. The small ball of flesh stuck on his finger as if it had become a terrifying small sarcoma on his finger.

That blood membrane functioned as a barrier to protect the Blood Vein Ring during its fusion progress. Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness was blocked. He didn't know what was happening inside the ring.

The Death and Life Bridge disappeared. All the transparent handprints had gone into his body. The crystal glacier had consumed all of the energy. The flow of Origin had turned into some kind of energy fusing with the Blood Vein Ring.

Boom Boom!

Explosions suddenly echoed from deep underground. It was so loud that it was as if it could shake the whole sky. The explosions sounded like a drum being hit in Shi Yan's heart.

While the explosion reverberated loudly, Shi Yan hesitated for a while before letting go of everything. When the glacier shattered, he entered a chunk of crystal, closing his eyes and using his soul to comprehend the truth of Death and Life power. He tried to use his soul to touch the tier of power Upanishad, exploring the newly generated life energy.

Rumble Rumble!

Rumble Rumble!

The intimidating commotion expanded to the entire Broken Star Field.

The Broken Star Field seemed to have dissolved. Countless, massive pieces of the broken stars as large as tens of thousands of islands cracked and detached from the center. Those broken pieces had been attracted here for many years and now, the force that had been holding them together seemed to have disappeared.

It was like a colossal mountain that was cut into billions of pieces and then shot out. Huge chunks of Broken Star Field floated like islands on the sea. They slowly scattered to everywhere in the Far West region.

Broken Star Field is disintegrating.

The energy core that had built Broken Star Field, which was the Origin energy of the ancient continent, disappeared. The old formation of inheritance was made because the Master of the Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight had sent its energy to the Ring Spirit. Thus, it was discarded.

Since the core, Origin energy, and the energy of the formation were all gone, the center of Broken Star Field didn't have the

marvelous effect of drawing pieces of broken stars together anymore. Those fractured stars started to drift apart, moving toward different areas in the starry sea.

Shi Yan didn't care about what was happening out there. He hid deep underground, still comprehending the truth of Death and Life power Upanishad.

Fei Lan, Ka Tuo, and the others were standing on the land above his head, looking at the significant changes of Broken Star Field. Their faces became stern.

They didn't know what was happening. They didn't know why the so-called Natural Resources Field was suddenly collapsing. However, all had an inexplicable intuition; it was related to Shi Yan!

It was hard to find evidence. However, they could feel the anomaly of Broken Star Field. Looking at the giant asteroids, mountains, and continents around them drift away, they instinctively deemed that it was somehow related to Shi Yan.

The five of them exchanged looks.

"This commotion is big, indeed," Ka Tuo exhaled.

"The Broken Star Field is extremely vast. If it dissolves this way, pieces of broken stars will scatter around at a fast speed. Life stars around the Far West will be in danger," Wu Lan frowned.

"Right. These pieces move quickly and it's getting even faster. Without any energy to hold them down, the impact will be extremely terrifying. I'm afraid that even Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm experts couldn't stop broken stars from colliding with life stars. Perhaps they could even pierce through a life star entirely," muttered a Demon man, his face dead serious.

"Did that kid underground cause this?" screamed another Demon man.

Fei Lan's countenance was indifferent as she said softly.

"Whether it was because of him or not, it happened. I think you guys don't want to see anything bad happens to him, right?"

Wu Lan and the two muscular Demon men nodded slightly, giving forced smiles.

They understood what Fei Lan meant.

Pieces of broken stars in Broken Star Field would sweep through the entire Far West region. Many life stars would be affected as those speedy pieces would impact them. There was a high chance that those rocks could destroy the entire life star.

Many clans dwelled in the Far West region. They had formed a lot of powerful forces based on life stars. Once they got damaged, they would find the originator to take revenge.

If they knew that Shi Yan had caused all of this, thousands of people in Far West region would criticize him. He would have no foothold in this area anymore.

If they didn't want anything bad to happen to Shi Yan, they had to conceal this event. Or else, the victims of the case would pursue to kill him at any cost.

Ka Tuo and Fei Lan didn't want anything bad to happen to him.

As Wu Lan and the two Demon men had recognized that Shi Yan and their Master were from the same tribe, they would protect him as best as they could. Obviously, they wouldn't let this happen to him.

The five of them exchanged looks. They silently covered the area, not letting anyone come close.

The anomaly of Broken Star Field made many warriors from different forces who came here to collect materials gawk. They would soon know what was about to happen. Those warriors started to search around, trying to find the originator of the change of Broken Star Field.

A part of them was moving quickly towards this area.

"Watch out!" hissed a Black Scaled man, his aura stern and harsh. "We will not let anyone who witnessed this get away alive! We won't give them a chance to spread the news!"

"Understood!"

Chapter 949: The Star Area Split

All warriors of Broken Star Field were enraged!

The anomaly of Broken Star Field had made thousands of broken stars become violent, flying asteroids that swept different areas of the Far West region.

The massive broken stars moved faster and faster. Their momentum was enhanced on the way. The impact created by these broken pieces were going to be earth-shaking. Many pieces were as large as a small continent that even a level 6 or 7 life star wouldn't be able to endure its impact.

A catastrophe of the Far West region was foreseen.

This kind of catastrophe had never happened before. It wiped through the entire whole region. It would forcefully destroy homes of many experts.

Warriors of different areas in the Far West region rushed into Broken Star Field. After they knew what would happen shortly, they reacted as if someone had broken their inverse scale. They became violent, flying rapidly towards the center of Broken Star Field.

If they wanted to know the originator, it would be simple. They just needed to check the center of Broken Star Field. Whichever area was still intact and didn't follow the changes of Broken Star Field would be the location of the originator.

The center of Broken Star Field was a strange area that held the power to gather pieces of broken stars continually. It wasn't a secret as warriors of different races all know about it. Now they just needed to check if they found anybody there and then they would find the answer.

Thus, warriors who were exploiting rare materials in this area all moved towards Shi Yan's direction.

Broken Star City was a part of Broken Star Field, one of the biggest broken pieces. As Broken Star Field was changing, the Broken Star City collapsed. It was divided into three parts, racing in three different directions.

Warriors of different forces in the Broken Star City fell into a chaotic crisis.

Including Ai Fu.

A corner of Ai Fu's ancient building collapsed as the ground under his feet rumbled. Ai Fu had dust all over his face, his countenance helter-skelter. A shadow appeared in a dark area above his head.

"Young Master!" The shadow was restless. "It was Shi Yan! He caused all of this!"

"Damn it!" Ai Fu clenched his jaw, being foul-mouthed. "That asshole acted unreasonably. He made the entire Broken Star Field dissolve! Countless pieces of broken stars are shooting everywhere. Many life stars will suffer from this disaster! Damn, I've been doing business in Broken Star City for so many years. Because of him, everything has been ruined in just a blink of an eye! Without Broken Star Field, Broken Star City can't exist. Many shops will be ruined. People have become tense. We're trying to transport the materials away. This bastard. How could he change the entire Broken Star Field like this?!"

"I don't know," the spooky shadow was distressed. "I saw him inside a forest. He disappeared all of a sudden. Then, explosions echoed from underground. Shortly after, Broken Star Field started to dissolve. I don't know what he had encountered underground, but I'm sure that the anomaly of Broken Star Field was brought by him!"

"Bastard! That damn bastard!" Ai Fu gritted his teeth, his face dark and sinister. "Watch him closely! Watch him for me! That motherf*cker has destroyed Broken Star Field! He will bring a

catastrophe to the Far West region too!"

The ominous shadow also knew the crisis. He disappeared silently, not speaking anymore.

Master of Blood Halberd also moved toward the center of Broken Star Field. All experts of the forces based near Broken Star Field in Far West region took action and flew towards Shi Yan's location.

For the time being, several thousand warriors of Broken Star Field moved towards the area like clouds of locusts. They all wanted to capture the originator and skin him alive.

All of them looked angry, their eyes vicious and brutal.

"Big trouble!" said the muscular Black Scaled man. "All warriors of Broken Star Field are heading to this area. I think... we can't kill them all."

"Unless our Master comes here personally, we don't have a solution to resist this battle," said the other.

Wu Lan's face was as dark as the earth. She stooped and glanced at the ground underneath. She sighed and then spoke to Fei Lan. "Can you contact him? We must get out of here as fast as possible. Otherwise, when they come, we won't even have a chance to run."

Fei Lan and Ka Tuo were also worried as if they had a fire in their heart. They knew how serious this commotion was. However, they sensed no aura of Shi Yan underground. Their Soul Consciousness couldn't detect anything. They all had severe headaches.

"If we stay, we will be deemed the originators and we won't be able to explain." Wu Lan pulled her bangs worriedly and speaking begrudgingly. "We'll wait for a moment. If he doesn't come out, we will leave."

Fei Lan discolored, shouting, "If you leave, when Shi Yan appears, the others will kill him on the spot. You don't want the

only clansman who's from the same clan as your Master to die, do you?"

Wu Lan and the two Black Scaled men became hesitant.

"Get underground and find him! Quickly!" Wu Lan pondered for a while. Eventually, she didn't want to wait in pain anymore. She didn't speak to Fei Lan and Ka Tuo. She directly asked her fellows. "Get underground immediately. Unless you bump into some barriers you can't solve, try your best to find him!"

"Alright!"

The two brawny Black Scaled warriors roared. The black scales on their bodies rattled. Brutal light radiated under their feet.

Boom! Boom!

The firm ground underneath was pierced. It was as if they were cutting through pieces of tofu. They didn't say anything, jumping right into the holes they just made like moles. They moved further in.

"We should look everywhere. We must ensure that we can kill anyone who comes here first!" Wu Lan became resolute and sinister. "We must try our best and leave no living beings!" Fei Lan and Ka Tuo nodded continually.

As they had just made up their minds, a shadow came with great anxiety.

It was Ji You.

Before this event, he had hidden far away from the forest, concealing his aura and shadow. When Fei Lan and Ka Tuo fought Blood Halberd, Tu Fei didn't dare show himself and he moved further away. Thus, people didn't see him.

Ji You had stayed in Broken Star Field for many years. He knew how to protect himself well. He understood that his realm wasn't high, so being a coward helped him live a little longer.

When Tu Fei and the Blood Halberd's soldiers were killed, he didn't know that happened or recognized the presence of Wu Lan's team.

However, he recognized the anomaly of Broken Star Field. He was very suspicious, coming to see how Fei Lan and the others were doing, and what was happening to Broken Star Field.

That was why he showed himself.

However, as soon as he landed, he retracted his neck as he was very terrified.

From Wu Lan's and Ka Tuo's face, he could see murderous intentions, a feeling of no mercy that chilled him to the bone.

He wanted to retreat immediately.

Wu Lan rose her hand as if she was about to kill him, her face icy cold.

At this moment, Ka Tuo gave a low shout, "He's one of us!"

Wu Lan recognized Ji You. She knew that this kid used to accompany Shi Yan's team. Frowning, she threw a glance at Fei Lan. "Can we trust this man?"

"I don't know," Fei Lan's eyes were malicious, "Better to clean everything."

"Don't!" Ka Tuo tried to stop them. "He brought us to Broken Star Field. We shouldn't be so heartless. At most, we can confine him and make him silent forever!"

"I agree!" Ji You understood the situation well. As his realm was low, he could only survive in Broken Star Field with his tricks.

Ji You threw his arms into the air, showing that he had put down all guard. He walked to Wu Lan and speaking sincerely, "Confine me. I'm willing to be restrained." He understood that the change of Broken Star Field was related to these people. Although he didn't have a high realm, he was smart. He knew that he saw things he

shouldn't have. Now, he had to cooperate with them to save his life.

Wu Lan was surprised. She nodded, "You understood your case well."

"Okay, considering your good sense, we will spare your life." Fei Lan rose her hand, and a pale corrosive air fumed like the clusters of cloud covering Ji You entirely. His consciousness became dizzy and hazy.

"Someone's coming! They're almost here!" Wu Lan hissed.

Fei Lan and Ka Tuo discolored, urging their powers Upanishad. They were prepared to strike with lethal attacks in any minute.

Boom Boom!

A strange noise echoed from the ground. A shout arose from the deep hole that the two Black Scaled men had dug. "We meant no harm!"

Ka Tuo cheered up. He hastened to shout at the hole. "Senior! We got trouble! Get out quickly! We don't have much time!"

"Shi Yan, they aren't enemies!" Fei Lan also hissed. She moved like an arrow through the hole.

Deep underground.

Inside an ice crystal, Shi Yan looked at the two Black Scaled strangers with cold eyes.

Hair rose on his entire body as he could feel intimidation from these two beefy men. It was a kind of terrifying aura that he had never seen before.

Shi Yan was ready to use the Immortal Demon Blood to tear the sky and flee. If Ka Tuo didn't call for him, he would have gone already.

At the moment Fei Lan talked to him, he calmed down, his face suspicious. "Who are you? What's going on out there?" He didn't

know that Broken Star Field was disintegrating. As he was staying deep underground, he could only feel the strange tremors.

"We don't have much time to talk. We must retreat now. Once the experts of Broken Star Field come, we won't be able to leave!" one of them shouted hastily.

Shi Yan changed his visage. He was bewildered for a while before nodding and flying up.

Seconds later, he appeared by Fei Lan and Ka Tuo, shouting, "What should we do?" He didn't know the details, but from Fei Lan and Ka Tuo's countenances, he knew it wasn't going well.

"Congratulations!" Fei Lan's eyes brightened and she nodded at him. "I didn't expect that you would reach Second Sky of Original God Realm that quickly. It's good. Anyway, we have to get out of here immediately. I'll tell you the situation on the way."

"Congratulations!" Ka Tuo also saw Shi Yan's changes, hurriedly congratulating him.

Shi Yan smiled. He said, "Then we should go quickly."

"Move!" Wu Lan was hurried. "We must leave now. Someone's coming!"

The two Black Scaled men appeared. They looked in a general direction, speaking, "Follow us. No one's coming this way. We will get out of here quickly!"

Fei Lan's team didn't say anything, dragging Ji You and following them.

Chapter 950: Inevitable Fierce Combat

"Master directed us to capture Shi Yan at any cost!"g

The old man with a withered face said to Ai Fu in his hall.

"Capture Shi Yan at any cost?" Ai Fu screamed. "Why does Grandfather want to capture him? They all have that blood mark, which is identical to the expert that had intruded Broken Star Field several thousand years ago. That expert had killed so many people that his hands were soaked with blood. I'm not sure if it's a wise move to offend him."

"I don't know his reasons. But this was Master's orders!" snarled the old man.

Ai Fu nodded. "If my Grandfather said that, he must have his plan. If so, we will spread the news that Shi Yan was the originator of Broken Star Field's anomaly. Yeah. We must notify Niger and Da Feng. They all have grudges against Shi Yan. They're searching for him, though. I think they will be interested."

"Okay!" the old man left quickly.

Niger was a powerful tyrant of the Ghost Mark Clan in Far West region. The Ghost Mark couple that Shi Yan had encountered was Niger's subordinates called Gaite and Feng Rou.

As Feng Rou was killed and Gaite had escaped from Fei Lan, of course, they didn't want to let this thing slip away.

Da Feng was the Master of Blood Halberd. Tu Fei and Tu Feng were his men. Tu Feng and some warriors that Tu Fei led were all killed. Of course, this force didn't want to let their enemies stay alive.

Shortly after, not only did Niger and Da Feng receive the news from Ai Fu, but also most of the forces in Broken Star Field now knew what had happened.

A huge hunting operation for Shi Yan was carried neatly under the management of some leaders.

Inside the detaching Broken Star Field, five-colored mist and smoke hovered thickly. It seemed like it wasn't going to disperse.

Shi Yan's team had their God Bodies glow radiantly as they were urging their powers to run at their max speed in a general direction.

The two Black Scaled warriors at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm had their soul altars spin as they were navigating new directions to ensure that they wouldn't be surrounded.

Gradually, they felt something wrong.

"It's weird!" Wu Lan's furrowed her bold brows, thinning her red lips. Strange light sparkled continually in her beautiful eyes. "They seem to know our route. More and more people are gathering. They know where we are going!"

Ka Tuo was startled. "How could it be? We haven't seen anyone in our way yet, right? Moreover, we have two precursors sensing to avoid them.

"Many warriors near here are moving towards us. They know our location," said one of the Black Scaled experts, his face stern. "We are in big trouble. Seems like it won't be easy to get away."

Fei Lan didn't say anything. She just looked at Shi Yan indifferently.

"They're correct. Our whereabouts are disclosed." Shi Yan was still calm. "Although my realm's low, my Soul Consciousness could cover a long range. Several thousand warriors around have received the information. They are waiting ahead of us. They have some battleships too. All are waiting for us."

Using Space power Upanishad, his Soul Consciousness could

extend very far. Although he had only Second Sky of Original God Realm cultivation base and his Soul Consciousness couldn't cover a large area like the two Black Scaled experts, when he focused on some specific directions, he could gather more information than the others.

He had released several flows of Soul Consciousness, which precisely reflected the surroundings to him.

Teams of warriors entered Broken Star Field and scattered around the area, moving towards the center of Broken Star Field. However, around one hour ago, many of them had a clear target. They didn't move towards the center of Broken Star Field. Instead, they headed to Shi Yan's location.

Apparently, they had evidence. They knew that this group had caused this catastrophe. And moreover, they knew Shi Yan's location.

Shi Yan halted.

The Fantasy Sky Ring on his finger glowed weakly. A light curtain twisted and then unfolded. The Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation appeared.

Boom Boom Boom!

Divine crystals that looked like pieces of broken jade flew out of his ring, inlaying precisely in the concave spots of the Child formation. Light sparkled as the energy of the crystals had activated the Child formation.

Light sparkled beautifully, generating the light door, which vaguely led to a deep, unknown place.

Shi Yan looked at Fei Lan and Ka Tuo. He took a deep breath and then said, "You guys should return to Old Orchid Star now!"

Fei Lan and Ka Tuo were shocked, shaking their head continually.

Wu Lan and the two Black Scaled experts' eyes brightened. They were astounded looking at the Child formation. They complimented it. "What a magical space formation! Excellent. Kid, your realm isn't high, but you can control such a precious treasure. You rock!"

Shi Yan explained to Fei Lan and Ka Tuo with a serious countenance. "This trip will be perilous. They've sent many experts with high realms. You can't give me much protection even if you go with me. You should return first."

"Senior, we will never leave you! If we have to fight to the death, I want to fight shoulder to shoulder with you!" Ka Tuo gritted his teeth, his eyes bloodshot. Deadly aura arose around his body. "Isn't it just slaughtering? Who should I fear?"

Fei Lan resisted with silence.

"I cultivate Space power Upanishad. If I'm not killed in a blink, I'll always have a chance to survive and flee," Shi Yan shook his head. He was actually touched. "If I'm not sure, I won't ask you to stay with me. You guys should return to Old Orchid Star for now. After I escape this mess, I'll come back and pick you guys up."

He couldn't leave.

If he left, the Child formation of the Mother and Child Sky Linking formation must be destroyed. Otherwise, their enemies would use it to get to Old Orchid Star. They would bring a catastrophe to Old Orchid Star. Shi Yan had vague confidence and he didn't want to see the formation that he had labored to fix shatter so quickly.

Fei Lan lowered her head, her face dark. "The opponent may have many Third Sky of Original God Realm experts. It isn't impossible to kill you instantly. Shi Yan, even though the Child formation is marvelous, we need to let it go when we need it. It's not worth taking risks."

"Yeah, right. Senior, as long as we return to Old Orchid Star, we can dodge this danger for a while. Then, we can plan the next step," advised Ka Tuo.

Wu Lan and the two Black Scaled warriors stayed silent, waiting for the others' decision.

"No!" Shi Yan said determinedly, not letting the others oppose. "We can't let the Child formation shatter. Once it breaks, if they come to Old Orchid Star for us, we won't have an emergency exit. With the Child formation, as long as I'm alive, we can move everyone and all materials of Old Orchid Star. We can avoid the flames of anger of the other forces in the Far West region! Don't say any more nonsense! You two, go back immediately! Otherwise, I won't consider you my friends anymore!"

Fei Lan lifted her head. She had a gleam of dim shadows in her eyes. "If you die, we can't protect Old Orchid Star. You're our foundation."

Ka Tuo gritted his teeth, speaking ferociously, "Risk our lives! I don't think they can kill us all!"

"I'm not going to be killed that easily," Shi Yan smiled coldly. "I've been in the world of martial arts for years. I've experienced the must-die situations many times. But I haven't fallen yet. Believe me. I have enough tricks to protect myself. I'm sure I will survive!"

"We're here," Wu Lan suddenly intervened, smiling faintly. "As long as we're here, we won't let people kill him. Don't worry and just leave."

"Go," Shi Yan rose his hand to guide them.

The Child formation with its magnificent light drifted, hovering by Fei Lan and Ka Tuo and waiting for them to enter.

"Take care!"

"Senior, take care!"

Fei Lan and Ka Tuo nodded heavily. They weren't stubborn anymore. They jumped into the Child formation, flashed, and then disappeared through the light door as Shi Yan urged them.

Swoosh!

The Child formation turned into beautiful light and disappeared into Shi Yan's Fantasy Sky Ring as guided.

"No worries anymore?" Wu Lan chuckled. She was still calm. "Although the enemies are many, it's not impossible for the four of us to break them." Pausing for a while, Wu Lan snorted, speaking arrogantly. "Not many experts have the guts to resist our Master in this rural area. I don't think they will dare to attack us!"

At this moment, Shi Yan knew that their Master Blood Demon was one of the members of the Immortal Demon Tribe in Agate Star Area. He was famous in the entire Agate Star Area with his Second Sky of Incipient God Realm.

"As soon as we get out of the Far West region, I can contact my Master. With his powers, it won't be hard to travel through some small star areas to get here." One of the Black Scaled men said arrogantly, "Our Master is a famous flag of the Demon Clan in Agate Star Area. He's a strong pillar of the Demon Clan. I believe that no one in this Far West region dares to confront him directly."

"Alright, we can brag later. Let's go." After Shi Yan had arranged Fei Lan and Ka Tuo suitably, he relaxed, feeling more comfortable.

Wu Lan's bright eyes sparkled as she studied him, nodded inwardly.

They didn't talk anymore, navigating their direction and then moving crazily to get out of Broken Star Field.

A long time later, Shi Yan, Wu Lan and the other halted, their pupils shrinking.

Low rumbling noises from engines resounded through the dusty area in front of them. Slowly, two thousand-meter-long battleships

emerged, blockading them.

Those two battleships were made of bone and stone respectively. They were as bright and shiny as a silver bar. Stern warriors stood on the battleships. They saw Tu Fei and the Ghost Mark man who had escaped on the battleships.

"That's him!" Gaite of the Ghost Mark Clan shrilled. With a grimace, he pointed at Shi Yan from a distance, speaking hoarsely. "They killed Feng Rou!"

A middle-aged Ghost Mark man whose God Body looked like a halberd had sharp eyes. He was Niger of the Ghost Mark Clan in the Far West region. He had Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm cultivation base. Now, he was standing on the battleship, his hands clasped behind his back. He talked maliciously, "How do you want him to get killed?"

"He must suffer from every torture in this world. Keep his soul burning on the fire for ten thousand years, which will kill him little by little!" said Gaite through his gritted teeth.

"He's mine!" Tu Fei shouted crazily like a beast baring its teeth. "Your daddy here will skin him first!"

Shi Yan's eyes were harsh and cold, grinning fiendishly. "I'm afraid that you don't have such luck."

Chapter 951: Space Spider Web

As soon as he finished talking, Shi Yan took action immediately.

He crossed his hands in the void, slowly ripping it apart. Two space slits with dark light moved along with his arms, making a cross shape. Each of the two space splits was one thousand meters long.

Urging Space power Upanishad, his soul altar spun rapidly. Energy in his body surged like a violent flood. The pure energy of Essence Qi Ancient Tree was consumed quickly.

God power was the basis of all kinds of energy. It was magical and mysterious as it could activate all kind of powers Upanishad.

After the two space slits crossing each other appeared, Shi Yan continued to tear more space slits, weaving them with each other.

Many warriors on the two battleships emerging from the gray mist looked scared.

In any high-level star area, space power was the heavenly power that was really hard to perceive. However, once they got it and cultivated it, Space power Upanishad could always be an intimidatingly mighty power.

As more space slits appeared, people standing on the battleships grimaced. They frowned as they were hesitating whether to attack him or not.

The space saber was the space class weapon that could defeat everything. Each of the space splits led to the chaotic space basin. If they got in there, they would never get out alive.

Shi Yan used the space spits to make the lines and build a spider web around him which extended several hundred miles. If any warrior stormed into the web, they would be cut into pieces. Even if the Ethereal God Realm experts couldn't sway through the web, it could still mince them.

Wu Lan and the Black Scaled experts smiled seeing him build a spider web.

People who used Space power Upanishad were that intimidating. The trap made by space slits would trouble even warriors with profound realms. Unless they all risked their lives to kill Shi Yan, this space spider web couldn't be rendered useless. It would affect everyone!

"He's our Master's nephew. If you dare to act rashly, don't blame my Master for turning his back to you!" Wu Lan stepped forward, shouting gracefully and arrogantly. "I don't care what kind of disaster your Far West region has. Shi Yan and our Master are close anyway. If you dare to attack him, you'll become our enemies!"

The two muscular Black Scaled experts grinned fiendishly and coldly at Niger and Da Feng.

"Blood Devil's troops?" Niger frowned, glaring coldly at Shi Yan and speaking darkly. "Blood Devil has never come to our Far West region. Why did I not know that he's interested in this rural area? As far as I was aware, Blood Devil didn't have a family. Do you think your fabricated reason could cover that brat?"

"We want him. It has nothing to do with Blood Devil. Please step away!" Da Feng of Blood Halberd shouted, his eyes icy cold. "Even Blood Devil himself if he created such a catastrophe in Far West region, wouldn't dream of getting out of here intact!"

"You have a lot of guts eh," Wu Lan sneered, "perhaps you do want to fight our Demon Clan. I also want to see if you have that competence."

"Kill!"

"Kill!"

Niger and Da Feng exchanged looks. They spat their orders in unison.

Silhouettes soared from the two battleships, moving like meteors. Their momentum was quick with surging energy like a rising tide.

Those people knew how dangerous the space slits were. They didn't dare to use the battleships. In this operation, they scattered, swaying and weaving like beams of light. They tried to avoid the thick-mesh space slits, moving between the narrow gaps.

Instantly, energy shot out as each warrior urged his or her power Upanishad. Life, icicles, fire lines, thunderbolts, wind blades, and more swarmed over from their God Bodies. They were like different branches of a flood, overflowing to the mainstream.

Niger of the Ghost Mark Clan and Da Feng, Blood Halberd's Master, took the lead.

Wu Lan and the two Black Scaled experts wore cold faces. They didn't expect the others to attack them. "Oh. It seems like this rural area still has some passionate people. Tough then." One of the beefy men gave a low roar. He moved like light, confronting Niger in just a blink.

He grinned, showing his teeth. The black scales on his body rattled as he stormed towards Da Feng.

The two Black Scaled experts came from a famous area in Agate Star Area. They were much stronger than the warriors of the Far West region. Their powers generated Ethereal Extent, which was the world of ice and the world of earth. As soon as their Ethereal Extents appeared, they seemed to disorder the real world.

Inside the icy world was a shoreless glacier, which looked like a massive sword stabbing the sky. It was tens of thousands of meters high with a transparent body and gloomy icy Qi.

As soon as his Ethereal Extent appeared, the glacier elongated through the sky, crashing forward.

While moving, the glacier released a terrible freezing energy,

which froze the low-realm warriors. They turned into ice sculptures, which were drawn into his Ethereal Extent and then they shattered.

Filling the world of earth was mist and sand. Yellow, sandy, ancient beasts roared and moved frighteningly. They bared their fangs and rose their claws to slaughter the warriors.

Those ancient beasts seemed to be revived in the real world. They slaughtered, ripping apart Original God Realm warriors with their fangs.

The two Black Scaled experts were at Peak of Ethereal God Realm. They seemed not too far from Incipient God Realm. Their Ethereal Extents were lively as if they were real and about to materialize. The world of ice and the world of earth had their power to transform magically according to the changes of their thoughts.

Low-realm warriors who made contact with the Ethereal Extent were subdued entirely. Their realms were troubled which affected their energy circulation.

Niger and Da Feng discolored, releasing their Ethereal Extents. Niger had a thunderbolt world with countless roaring electric dragons. His thunderclaps shook the sky. Bunches of lightning strikes descended as if they wanted to tear the real world.

Da Feng's Ethereal Extent was a world of metals. Quickly, he got tens of thousands of cold metals, including sabers, swords, spears, halberd, tridents, and even silver hammers. Each of them was extremely sharp as if they were the masterpieces of a skillful blacksmith.

Countless weapons moved, multiplying in each Ethereal Extent, creating some kind of unusual metal formation which could kill all creatures like a sprinkle.

Four great Ethereal Extents appeared disordering the real world

in front of them. Thunderbolts impacted the glacier, crushing each other. Many sharp metal weapons were attacking the ancient beasts. Their arena stretched through thousands of miles, which made the real world shake.

Initially, the space slits were around one thousand meters long. Under the pressure and collision from four great Ethereal Extents, they cracked, generating more space slits.

Shi Yan had flames and ice in his eyes at the same time. His space cracks started to move like real snakes.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Warriors who hadn't reached Ethereal God Realm would have their God Bodies explode from one touch by the space slits.

In less than a minute, more than ten soul altars appeared in front of Shi Yan, which belonged to the warriors whose bodies exploded. They had to use their soul altars to survive. They didn't estimate that the still space splits could suddenly revive like that. They were ambushed.

There was nothing the space splits couldn't destroy. The God Body under Ethereal God Realm couldn't endure the tearing power and they would crack and explode badly.

"If you want to kill me, let's see how much you can pay." Shi Yan floated in the starry sea, smiling coldly. At this moment, his eyes became garnet as a bloodthirsty aura slowly filled the area.

His eyes gradually became dull and icy cold. He had no gleam of emotions. At this moment, he looked like Death who was observing a creature who had no feelings that a human should have.

The Third Sky of Rampage!

His power Upanishad switched. Now, he had an absolutely deadly silent aura. He was like an ancient mummy that had survived thousands of years without a beam of life energy.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

A huge handprint towered the sky, releasing the Death Intent Domain, filling the deadly silent aura and cutting off the vitality of everything.

The Death Seal was as big as a mountain, but it could simply dodge the space split, snatching over more than ten warriors at King God Realm and First Sky or Second Sky of Original God Realm. Under the Death Seal, those warriors paled as life energy in their bodies drifted away. The halos on their God Bodies became ash-gray.

Crack! Crack! Crack!

The Death Seal grumbly pressed down. The God Bodies of more than ten warriors were smashed. Pieces of flesh and bone were sent everywhere. Clots of blood hovered, creating blood curtains.

As the others wanted to kill him, Shi Yan at Second Sky of Original God Realm had a good grasp of Death and Life power. Of course, he wouldn't stay idle. In his peak condition, his attack using his best abilities was unimaginably powerful.

He hadn't urged Immortal Demon Blood, which would have transformed his body. Shi Yan just used Third Sky of Rampage to urge negative energy in his acupuncture points, giving power to this massive Death Seal.

Shi Yan was shaken inwardly. His confidence was boosted to a level that he had never had before!

He suddenly recognized that unless he was confronting an Ethereal God Realm expert, there was no chance that he would lose!

He had absolute confidence in his competence and powers Upanishad!

His blood eyes sparkled strangely. Shi Yan had red veins visible

on his face. He looked like a demon from Hell descended to this world as he didn't have any beam of creature's emotions. He had only the pure thirst for blood and killing.

A deadly will expanded from his God Domain. The heavy dead aura flooded, extending to any warrior coming close to him.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

After the poor warriors had exploded, their blood was guided, creating a sea of blood with a pungent, iron-like smell. This blood sea seethed, generating malicious energy fluctuations that affected souls.

The supernatural ability of Death and Life power Upanishad: The Blood Soul Sea!

The blood sea surged, resonating with his God Domain. Under the God Domain's direction, it covered an area of ten miles around Shi Yan.

No matter how high their realms were, warriors who fell into the Blood Soul Sea lost their minds instantly. All became crazy!

They started to attack everyone they saw, whether they were friends or enemies. They didn't care that even the opponents who were their brothers who had fought shoulder by shoulder with them for so many years. At this moment, they attacked each other madly, not recognizing that their consciousness had collapsed.

Negative energy as thick as black ink gushed out from Shi Yan's acupuncture points, pouring into the Blood Soul Sea, which then strengthened the destructive power of the sea. This kind of energy could distort souls, running directly into warriors' souls and crossing their Sea of Consciousness and tier of powers Upanishad in their soul altar to reach their God Soul.

Swoosh!

Shi Yan turned into a blood light flying swiftly above the blood sea.

Tens of thousands of light dots, which carried life energy, disappeared into his God Body like rain gathered from the vast sea.

The Soul Burial Ground ability of Death and Life Upanishad had cut off all vitality, taking it away. It contributed towards the taken energy into Shi Yan's body, giving him more energy to control everything.

At this moment, Shi Yan at his Second Sky of Original God Realm looked like the sole God of this world. He had used his will and supernatural ability to change space, bring up death, and take away life. He was harvesting pure energy for himself.

He was slaughtering, enjoying himself to the utmost.

Chapter 952: Vicious Natural Instincts

Warriors from different areas of Broken Star Field gradually emerged, surrounding Shi Yan. Thousands of them came by hordes.

Those people were from different forces and different races, but they had the same goal: They wanted to capture or kill Shi Yan!

The anomaly of Broken Star Field would bring an unpredictable catastrophe to the Far West region. Pieces of broken stars would bombard many life stars, wrecking havoc. Those warriors would lose their shelters if their homeland got destroyed.

Shi Yan was the originator. Through different channels, they had confirmed this information from Ai Fu. Ai Fu was the heavenly eye in Broken Star Field. He had ears and eyes everywhere.

No one doubted Ai Fu's intelligence. Ai Fu made people believe him by the credit he had built for hundreds of years.

Battleships appeared one after another. They emerged like wild beasts of Ancient Time showing their fangs. They slowly approached the battle site.

Each battleship carried experts of different clans. All of them looked stern.

While those battleships were moving towards this area, they slowed down, not daring to join the battle site directly.

The space spider web had stretched over thousands of miles, creating a horrible deathtrap. Those space splits were the most dangerous things that could cut off any matter. The battleships weren't designed to resist something like that.

"Is that kid really at Second Sky of Original God Realm? How can he sweep out everywhere? How could he kill the warriors whose realms were higher than his?"

"This man is terrifying. At this realm, he can do such things. When he breaks through the Original God Realm, would we be able to confront him?"

"Be careful. Don't let your anger make you a sacrifice for the others!"

"Do not act rashly and get out there! Be watchful!"

". . ."

Each battleship had a commander, and most of them were at Ethereal God Realm. They belonged to powerful clans of different forces. However, after observing for a while, they all became severe.

The competence of Shi Yan was showing how much was beyond their estimation!

The space sabers weaved with each other, creating a vast spider web. The red blood sea in the center of the spider web was emitting evil, red mist where the murderous aura that terrified people rolled. Death energy fluctuated, covering the whole sky.

Shi Yan and the blood sea merged into one. The Blood Soul Sea was formed by the blood of dead warriors. It had become part of his God Body, a world of his own. In this world, he was the sole God.

On the blood sea, warriors under Niger and Da Feng looked like they were insane. Their consciousness collapsed, their eyes filled with their basic instincts of killing. They blindly slaughtered all warriors around them.

They seemed to have forgotten who they are.

Dozens of warriors who were their blood comrades were killing each other in that Blood Soul Sea. They used their best powers Upanishad to make the whole world discolor. Their powers were like the thunderstorm cleaning up the entire place.

Shi Yan was now like a drop of blood, blending and disappearing into the Blood Soul Sea.

However, the space sabers were encircling the Blood Soul Sea. They were like dragons or snakes slithering around, but their power was enough to tear the whole sky. Outer space light shot out dazzlingly from those sabers.

Those brilliant lights moved directly into the most mysterious space basin: the Space-Time crack.

The two Peak of Ethereal God Realm warriors of the Black Scaled Tribe, Niger, and Da Feng sometimes flashed into the real world. Their Ethereal Extents were pressing the real world, trying to break it.

Although the Ethereal Extent wasn't an Incipient Extent, as soon as an Ethereal God Realm expert had enough energy, the world he created using his power Upanishad could be strong enough to crush the world. It would make all the creatures return to their origin, shattering every matter.

The four great existences at Peak of Ethereal God Realm were performing their Ethereal Extents in the sky, attacking and defending each other using the power of the Ethereal Extent. They made the whole place an etherealized world where the Ethereal Extents they created were real.

No one dared to intrude that area. Niger's and Da Feng's subordinates and the other hotshots from the other forces instinctively avoided that area. They would rather go through the spider web than get directly through their Ethereal Extent.

The space spider web wasn't still. It was moving gently as Shi Yan had changed his thoughts. They looked like a beautiful place of weaving lights. It swayed and moved from time to time.

Every time it moved, the space sabers would elongate, crushing some warriors and leaving only the soul altars.

Around the Blood Soul Sea inside the space spider web, almost one hundred soul altars were floating, which looked like magnificent lotuses. They sparkled in five-colored with different powers Upanishad surging. The souls bobbing above the soul altar were marvelously beautiful like the flame of life.

Shi Yan's God Body was dark red. He emerged for a short time in the Blood Soul Sea, looking at the soul altars floating around with great greed. He was struggling hard in his mind. He hesitated but didn't dare to take action. He disappeared into the Blood Soul Sea one more time.

He still remembered what the Blood Vein Ring asked him to do. He should try his best to swallow more soul altars using his black hole. It was the best support for the Ring Spirit to complete its soul fusion.

However, it was not the right time.

In front of many warriors, if he let the black hole in his soul altar appear and swallow the soul altar, his biggest secret would be revealed.

The Master of Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight was the wicked demon that people didn't want to be alive. His soul altar devouring power Upanishad was the most taboo power. If he disclosed it, he would never have a shelter in Agate Star Area. All the races would hunt him down!

He knew this clearly.

Thus, he could only stare greedily at those soul altars while trying to restrain the avarice in his heart.

The Essence Qi of the dead rolled massively into the Blood Soul Sea, disappearing into his acupuncture points.

The Essence Qi of those who had only the soul altars hovering hadn't dispersed into earth and heaven yet. Shi Yan's God Body attracted it, making it blend with the Blood Soul Sea.

He was using his acupuncture points to absorb it.

This was also the function of Devouring power Upanishad!

Devouring power Upanishad was immensely marvelous. It could swallow Essence Qi and the soul altars of warriors. This was a taboo power that shouldn't exist in this world. It was the forbidden area that even Gods didn't dare to touch.

However, on the date he descended to Grace Mainland, at the moment he jumped into the blood pond, he had touched God's forbidden area. From that day onward, he was destined to be the foreigner, walking on the thorny path. He had never regretted, never hesitated or thought of it as a burden in his mind.

Only a person with extreme greed would take energy accumulated throughout hundreds or thousands of years from the others. He would harm others to make himself stronger.

That year, that day, when the first Essence Qi of the dead entered his body, he wasn't anxious or worried. He had only joy and astonishment. He had considered it the ultimate secret that he would never share with anyone. From that day onward, he knew that he had no way back.

If he were a naive and kind person, he would have a demonic barrier in his heart. He would be fearful and have nightmares every night. Afterward, he would consider Devouring Upanishad, the worst nightmare that he wanted to get rid of. He would proactively resist it.

Shi Yan wasn't such sort of man. Absolutely not!

A person who can destroy the world for his own benefits wouldn't have a burden when he ruins the whole world and puts it back to the time of chaos just to strengthen himself. He would never step back.

Only a person with those vicious natural instincts was eligible to receive the inheritance, walking on the road leading to the peak.

This sort of man would never be accepted or tolerated. He was destined to bear eternal infamy.

He didn't care.

The Blood Soul Sea had blood bubbles, surging vehemently. The aura that could twist the soul swept over the area dragged everything into the abyss of death and uncontrolled slaughter.

Shi Yan was hiding deep in the Blood Soul Sea to gather Dead Qi with his acupuncture points. The Devouring power Upanishad would refine it and make up the consumed energy used to build the space spider web, which would strengthen himself.

Dozens of Blood Halberd hotshots under Da Feng's commands had crossed the space spider web. They rushed with ferocious eyes. They were careful enough to stay by the Blood Soul Sea when releasing the Soul Consciousness to locate Shi Yan in the sea. They didn't jump in directly.

A bright star slowly emerged from the blood sea with dazzling light. It was a real star that looked like a massive, brilliant diamond. Starlight emitted everywhere, carrying the undying will of star power.

The Star Nucleus!

It was the star hovering in Shi Yan's nebula. The star then covered the Blood Soul Sea. Billions of starlight beams extended like a river flowing from the Nine-tiered Sky, congregating at the Star Nucleus. The Star Nucleus enlarged rapidly, emitting countless starlight beams crossing everywhere.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

Dozens of hotshots of Blood Halberd were hit directly. They looked like they were crystallized with starlight on their bodies.

They seemed to become the stars. Blood Halberd's warriors became idle. Their faces slowly turned ash-gray. Starlight started to radiate from them as their soul altars were also filled with

starlight.

Swoosh!

Orange-red flames soared, drawing the marvelous but evil curves in the sky like meteors. Those flames aimed precisely at Blood Halberd warriors who were crystallized.

A flow of blood-like flames shot out from their bodies while their bodies melted like lava. They died without having time to wiggle.

Wu Lan stayed by a corner of the Blood Soul Sea. She didn't take action from the beginning, just observing.

She had a gleam of fear deep in her beautiful eyes. Her mind flickered unsteadily as if someone had thrown a stone into the lake of her heart, a small stone that rose a tsunami.

She was frightened by Shi Yan's series of actions.

This young man from the same tribe with their Master had only Second Sky of Original God Realm, but the momentum he had created out of his efforts could compare to that of a First Sky of Ethereal God Realm expert! And his coverage was even more extensive!

Wu Lan was frightened, but her eyes were sparkling with dark light. Her ample bosom bounced slightly as she breathed. She realized that this young man could be fiercer than their Master at such an age. Their Master did have the competence to skip one level and battle others, but this man... he couldn't help but skip two levels!

She must bring him out of here alive!

Wu Lan made up her mind, her eyes resolute. She had prepared to do her best at the critical moment. Even if she got hurt, she had to get Shi Yan out of this besiege.

She had recognized Shi Yan's great potential. She knew that he would become the most dazzling new outstanding warrior of the

Demon Clan in the future. He would become a more prominent character than her Master. Eventually, he could hold the entire Agate Star Area in his hands!

Chapter 953: The World of Shadows

Dozens of battleships hovered around the space spider web. Thousands of warriors were waiting in silence, observing the fierce battle.

Until this moment, only Niger's and Da Feng's forces had participated in this battle. Many other forces from different clans were still watching indifferently. On one hand, they seemed to be afraid of Blood Devil. On the other hand, they also just didn't want to lose their troops.

At least before the situation was clear, they didn't want to get involved in the mess.

The space spider web was still moving. Warriors continued to go into the blood sea. The four Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm warriors were still attacking each other. Their Ethereal Extents were still colliding and bombarding each other. They pushed the real world to the edge of being demolished.

Shi Yan hid in the blood sea. He hadn't shown himself until now. However, those who dared to enter the blood sea had their soul alters collapse. They lost their minds and started to attack everyone else.

A brilliant star had flown up, radiating dozens of starlight beams above the Blood Soul Sea. Its light had made the brave warriors who dared to get into the blood sea turn to look at an asteroid, which melted from the scorching flame in the next moment.

Wu Lan's visage changed. Her beautiful eyes became severe for the first time.

Tu Fei had stormed over and released his tornados, hovering in front of the Blood Soul Sea. Accompanying him were three other Ethereal God Realm warriors, one at Second Sky and two at First Sky. These were the hotshots under Niger's and Da Feng's

commands.

"It's time to end this farce." At this moment, Tu Fei was quite lucid. He wasn't quite his usual loony self. "No matter how strong Blood Devil is, this place is the Far West region. You can't decide on our business!"

Wu Lan frowned.

"If you stop now, we won't hold any grudge even though you killed our Blood Halberd warriors." Tu Fei seemed to have confirmed something with Da Feng, speaking coldly, "If you poke your nose in our Far West region's business, then... don't blame us for giving no face for Blood Devil!"

The three Ethereal God Realm experts scattered, quietly surrounding Wu Lan.

Wu Lan had only the First Sky of Ethereal God Realm cultivation base. As the three Ethereal God Realm experts had her surrounded, if they wanted to kill her, it was very unlikely that she would escape.

She could have chosen to ignore Shi Yan and retreated. With Blood Devil's reputation, no one would have dared to stop them.

But if Wu Lan wanted to be involved, it was going to be hard to protect herself.

Tu Fei kept silent, coldly looked at Wu Lan and waiting for her final decision.

A blood light emerged on the Blood Soul Sea. Shi Yan's cold and harsh visage appeared in that light as he looked at Wu Lan in the distance. He spoke calmly, "My matter has nothing to do with you guys originally. I won't say a word if you leave. You shouldn't shoulder it for me."

Wu Lan suddenly smiled as she was happy. Deliberately, she thinned her lips, whispering. "Seems like everybody thinks that I can't afford to join this battle."

Then, Wu Lan's black wings opened, flapping gently.

A strange world grew from above her head. It was a gray, gloomy area, like a shadow of the real world. They could see everything from the real world in there. They saw Shi Yan, Tu Fei, and the three Ethereal God Realm experts surrounding Wu Lan.

Just like an image in the water, it reflected the real world. This was Wu Lan's power Upanishad: Shadow. Wu Lan rose her slender fingers. Tu Fei in her world was bound by dark light. Just like his shadow, Tu Fei in the real world seemed to be restrained too.

In the real world, Tu Fei discolored. He suddenly felt an unknown force binding him entirely. He couldn't even move.

The tornados which were swaggering around halted and then vanished.

Wu Lan had a weak smile on her face. Her eyebrows were like a picture. Her fingers emitted beams of light, shooting towards the Shadow Ethereal Extent above her head, aiming at the three Ethereal God Realm experts in there.

The three warriors in the world of shadows were tied by the light as if they were bound by their own shadows. The warriors in the real world were also bound. The Shadow power Upanishad restrained them, preventing them from urging their energy.

Wu Lan was still smiling tenderly. Her dedicate waist swayed gently and she glided through her world of shadows like another shadow.

Her beautiful, exquisite fingers continually poked the shadows of Tu Fei's team. Tu Fei and the other three warriors in the real world screeched. They all had bloody holes in their God Bodies, which were bleeding badly.

Wu Lan's power Upanishad was magical yet bizarre. It could project small shadows of objects in the real world to her Ethereal Extent. She didn't need to attack the warriors in the real world but

still did significant damage to them.

This kind of power Upanishad was eccentric. They didn't know how she had cultivated it to such a profound level. She could even generate a world of shadows, which was truly powerful and terrifying.

What a fierce woman!

Shi Yan was astounded. At this moment, he was looking at her seriously for the first time.

He now realized that Wu Lan was afraid of him and Fei Lan so she had to move away in Broken Star Field. She just wanted to see if he knew how to use the Immortal Grass or not. If she had attacked them with her best abilities, Fei Lan wouldn't have been able to defend herself.

Wu Lan also has the competence to fight warriors at higher realms than hers!

Among the four Ethereal God Realm experts, two were at the same realm as Wu Lan and the other two were one level higher than her at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm.

However, when Wu Lan released her power Upanishad, her world of shadows appeared. She gained the upper hand in just a blink. Tu Fei and the others were subdued before they could seize the time to generate their Ethereal Extents.

"You better seize this chance and escape. I only have the energy to bind them for one hour." Wu Lan said softly in her Ethereal Extent, her eyes serious. "The four of them are at Ethereal God Realm. Even though I did as much as I can, I can't kill them all. Also, more and more experts will come. I can only spare you one hour."

Shi Yan darkened his face. He said, "Thank you."

He knew how dangerous the situation was. At this moment, only Niger's and Da Feng's forces had joined the battle. The other forces

of Broken Star Field were still indifferent. He knew he endured until this moment thanks to the space spider web.

If he let more Ethereal God Realm warriors approach, he wouldn't be able to resist such forces. They would smash his soul quickly.

The reason why he was persistent and didn't flee was to gain the utmost benefits from the others' deaths to fill his energy.

"Since you've cultivated Space power Upanishad, you should have a way to get out of here." Wu Lan mulled over the situation for a while and then said sincerely, "If you leave, remember to visit our territory. We've done so many things just so that you can meet our Master."

"How can I find your Master?" Shi Yan was surprised.

"Come to Devil Blood Star. As long as you can get to Devil Blood Star, my Master will be there. I'm sure that no one from the Far West region will dare to pursue you!"

"I will remember." Nodding, Shi Yan's thought changed. A flow of space energy emitted from his body. Space slits appeared thickly in front of him.

"Kill!"

All of a sudden, hotshots standing on the battleships out of the battle site suddenly thundered.

They could see that Shi Yan was planning to run away.

Warriors cultivating Space power Upanishad were the most slippery warriors in the world of martial arts. When they activated space slits and went through it, no one would stop them.

Instantly, several thousand icicles, thunderbolts, fire columns, and electric dragons created from different powers moved agilely through the space slits, attacking Shi Yan like lances thrusting into the bone.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

His space exploded. Space energy that Shi Yan was urging disordered. He couldn't build the space bridge.

The Blood Soul Sea was destroyed by several thousand powers Upanishad. It was torn apart, creating clusters of blood clouds. The wicked intent domain was ruined.

Ptui!

Shi Yan spat out blood. Those powers Upanishads had affected his mind, distorting his will. Although he was fast enough to sway his body and dodge the icicles, electric dragons, and lightning snakes, he couldn't protect his body completely.

Although his God Body was as hard as heavenly rock, it couldn't endure the bombarding of different energies from the hotshots. The fierce energies seeped into his blood and flesh, damaging his bones and muscles. His God Body was now wounded severely.

"He's not dead yet!"

"Wow, he's not dead!"

"How is he not dead?!?"

Many warriors on the battleships were frightened, their faces grimaced.

That young man had only Second Sky of Original God Realm, but his God Body wasn't blown off by the bombarding of different powers Upanishad. His soul altar didn't fly out. It was beyond their imagination.

"This man is scary! His God Body's intensity could... perhaps be compared to the Monster Clan experts. Otherwise, he could never have resisted such powerful attacks!"

"His God Body is tremendous. How many times has he quenched his body to reach such a level?"

"Seems like he has a big harvest deep in Broken Star Field. We

have to capture his soul altar to extract his memory to get the truth of what had happened back there."

"Right."

The reasons why they came here for Shi Yan didn't include just asking him to pay for what he'd done but also to know what he had gotten in Broken Star Field!"

The Broken Star Field had existed for tens of thousands of years in the Far West region. The extremely marvelous ability it had was attracting pieces of broken stars. People thought that it had a secret and that it was a whole new world. As Shi Yan had broken the magic of Broken Star Field, which led to the disintegration of Broken Star Field, they thought that he had harvested this secret.

Regardless of what it actually was, all of them thought that this secret was a critical matter. They wanted to share the benefits from this secret.

This was their real purpose for letting Shi Yan stay alive.

Crack! Crack! Crack!

Shi Yan's bones resounded noisily and strangely. His God Body turned red as the Immortal Demon Blood inside which was surging, healing his damaged body.

After a short moment of astonishment, the onlookers frowned, flying towards Shi Yan to capture him or to restrain his soul altar. In their eyes, Shi Yan was the key to unlocking Broken Star Field's anomaly.

They were afraid that they would be slower than others. All moved as fast as lightning as if they were crossing long distances and appeared in front of Shi Yan in just a blink of an eye.

As they had been waiting for a long time, seeing this opportunity, they weren't hesitant anymore.

Chapter 954: Sharpening

More and more icicles, lightning sabers, fires, and lava rocks with tremendous power grumbly rushed over at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan tried to build a space door to run away from Broken Star Field. However, after he had been hit the first time, the second wave had come before he could steady his body.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

Shi Yan felt like hundreds of giant hammers pounded him. His body was smashed and bleeding. His eyes became dispirited.

"Holy s*t! His soul altar hasn't been destroyed yet! This brat is like a cockroach that we can't beat up."

"If the soul altar hasn't left the body, that means his God Body hasn't been smashed yet. How much did he quench his body?"

"Monster!"

"Morbid!"

After Broken Star Field's hotshots begun their operation, they screamed as they saw that they couldn't destroy Shi Yan's God Body after the second wave of attack.

All of them were astounded. A warrior with only Second Sky of Original God Realm had a tenacious God Body that was beyond their imagination.

Wu Lan helped Shi Yan hold Tu Fei's team down. Seeing Shi Yan being attacked continuously, her face became cold. She shouted, "Shameless!"

Those who were attacking Shi Yan had not only King God Realm and Original God Realm. Some of them were at Ethereal God Realm. Due to the far distance, they couldn't release as much energy as they wanted to. However, their powers were still intimidating.

Many hotshots were attacking only one warrior. They didn't know shame!

Wu Lan was infuriated!

More shadows appeared in her world of shadows, which reflected the warriors who were striking Shi Yan.

Wu Lan gritted her teeth and snorted. Her delicate fingers continued to poke shadows of the hotshots in her world of shadows.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

The oncoming warriors of Broken Star Field had their bodies explode on the way. Blood splashed as bleeding holes appeared in their chests.

The high-realm warriors had their power Upanishad restrained for the moment. They couldn't urge their energy. All looked at Wu Lan with rage and resentment.

Wu Lan was hiding in the world of shadows. Her face turned as pale as a sheet of paper. She had consumed a lot of energy.

She looked at Shi Yan in the distance, speaking weakly. "Quick!"

Dispirited, Shi Yan was awakened by her call. Immortal Demon Blood seethed in his body.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

His bones sounded crisp. A new flow of newly generated energy turbulently shot out. Shi Yan's eyes became garnet. He used a lot of energy to condense and connect a space door. Layers of light doors appeared in front of him. He gritted his teeth and turned his head to check for the last time before jumping directly into the life door.

Shi Yan flashed and then disappeared.

The light door closed. Marvelous and unpredictable space energy faded away. The regular atmosphere resumed.

The space slits blurred and vanished as his aura and God Body disappeared entirely.

"Ptui!"

Wu Lan spat out a mouthful of blood. The light dimmed in her eyes as her world of shadows collapsed.

Tu Fei and the warriors who were restrained by the world of shadows got rid of her restraint immediately. All rolled their eyes and stared at Wu Lan as if she had just killed their parents.

Wu Lan bit her lower lip. She smiled tiredly, but she didn't move. She just spoke deliberately, "You can try to kill me. But you have to remember this. If I get killed, Blood Devil will definitely give the Far West region a bloodbath!"

Afterward, people got frightened. People who wanted to attack her became hesitant.

At this moment, two strange lights flashed. The two muscular Black Scaled warriors appeared. With a cold and harsh countenance, they guarded Wu Lan's sides.

"Did he leave?" one of the Black Scaled men hissed.

Wu Lan nodded gently. "He's hurt. I'm not sure if he survived."

"It's alright," the man smiled reluctantly. "He's from Immortal Demon Clan like our Master. As long as his God Body isn't obliterated, he can always heal himself."

The other raked through the crowd. He snorted and said, "We should go now. I also want to see if those people of the Far West dare to kill us."

The two Black Scaled experts covered Wu Lan, flying away. Their countenances were icy cold.

Many warriors along their way shifted restlessly as they were all angry. However, when Wu Lan's team passed them, they didn't dare to do anything rashly.

Even Niger and Da Feng kept silent at this moment. They just coldly looked at Wu Lan's team flying away.

They weren't afraid of the three in Wu Lan's team; they were afraid of Blood Devil. They didn't want to cause any grudges against Blood Devil, which would drown the Far West region in blood.

After Wu Lan and the others left, they immediately used their special powers. They turned into three beams of light and disappeared.

Although many experts of the Far West region were watching them, no one dared to attack them at this moment.

This operation of theirs targeted Shi Yan only. They didn't come here to offend Blood Devil. If they couldn't capture Shi Yan's soul altar, killing Wu Lan wouldn't do anything but enrage Blood Devil. So in this situation, keeping silent was a good move.

Niger and Da Feng quietly moved to the area where Shi Yan had disappeared, releasing their Soul Consciousness to investigate.

After a while, they sighed begrudgingly, shaking their heads.

"Warriors who cultivate Space power Upanishad are the toughest ones to kill." Niger forced a smile, speaking to Gaite. "I have no solution now. It's not that I don't want to take revenge for Feng Rou. We don't know where that brat has gone. It would be difficult to hunt him down."

"Master, please help me investigate where he has gone," replied Gaite respectfully.

Niger nodded. "Don't worry. Feng Rou was also my subordinate. I will seek justice for her. I will try my best to find that brat."

"According to you, he's not alone here. He went with an old woman and a muscular man. Where are they?" Da Feng of Blood Halberd came to ask Tu Fei.

Tu Fei shook his head. "I don't know. I didn't see the other two."

Suddenly, an old man stepped out of the crowd, walking to Niger and Da Feng. He was the one of the two who helped Ai Fu watch over his treasury. He was sent to Broken Star Field to seek information about the Thousand Fold Lotus from Shi Yan. However, as he got another instruction from his Master, he changed his approach.

"They should be in Old Orchid Star," the old man frowned. "Our Heaven Eye saw them disappear using the Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation. They should reappear in Old Orchid Star where the Giants are staying."

"Old Orchid Star?" Da Feng's eyes became colder. "As the Giants have formed a relationship with them, they court death themselves."

"The Giant Tribe doesn't want to live anymore," said Niger.

"Go to Old Orchid Star!"

"Go to Old Orchid Star!"

Many warriors of the Far West region became excited as they shared the same grudge, shouting clamorously.

Old Orchid Star.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo were gazing at the Mother formation in the mysterious ancient city, their faces stern.

After a long time, nothing happened to the Mother formation. It had no sign of being activated.

"It has been a long time and we got nothing. Did something unexpected happen?" Ka Tuo growled. "We shouldn't have left. If we stayed, we could have at least fought with him."

"The others are very strong. They are the union of different forces. Unless we have someone at Incipient God Realm, we can't

do anything." Leona now had reached Ethereal God Realm. She looked at Ka Tuo, speaking calmly, "Your senior won't be killed that easily. He has cultivated space power and he's good at using space to escape. I think he just doesn't have a spare moment to message us."

Na Xin and Zhen Gu of the Giant Tribe were also there. They looked anxious.

"I'm sorry. They know that we killed Tu Feng." Fei Lan sighed, speaking to Na Xin. "Blood Halberd won't let it go easily. If they can't find Shi Yan, they will go to Old Orchid Star to take revenge for sure. Old Orchid Star will have a lot of trouble."

Na Xin and Zhen Gu exchanged looks. They became distressed, sighing.

"What should we do?" Fei Lan rubbed his forehead. "We can't wait in Old Orchid Star for a long time. Do we have anywhere else to stay?"

Bi Tian and people from Raging Flame Star Area became restless, looking at Fei Lan and expecting a direction.

Fei Lan didn't have a good solution. "We aren't familiar with Agate Star Area. We have to see if Na Xin has any solution."

"If they want to attack Old Orchid Star, we'll have only one choice, which is to leave this place. We don't have the competence to resist them. Blood Halberd will easily destroy all creatures of Old Orchid Star. We Giants have no countermeasure." Na Xin wore a bitter visage. "We can't stay on Old Orchid Star any longer. We must leave soon. Sigh. I never thought that we would have to leave our home. I thought I could strengthen my tribe after I got the inheritance from our old ancestral land. But now, this happened."

Fei Lan and Leona felt embarrassed. As they didn't know what to say, they could only keep silent.

If Shi Yan hadn't killed Tu Feng, they wouldn't have brought

such a disaster to Giant Tribe. And the Giants wouldn't have needed to leave Old Orchid Star. Because of their existences, the Giants had to bear this catastrophe.

"You guys don't need to feel guilty," Na Xin seemed to understand. "Without Shi Yan, we couldn't have gotten out of the Mi brothers' trap when we were in Broken Star City. Perhaps, we wouldn't have been able to leave Broken Star City alive."

Zhen Gu nodded. "It's the kalpa of our Giant Tribe. Our tribe must thrive, so I think it's inevitable. If we gain something, we will always lose something. We got a lot of good things recently. Of course, we would have to endure the torture of destiny. We can leave Old Orchid Star. As long as we Giants have enough time to recover, we will absolutely grow stronger!"

"Now we should consider which area to move to," Na Xin pondered, speaking to Fei Lan, "You guys should hurry to prepare. And right, we must keep the Mother formation to connect to Shi Yan. Once he has time, he will open the Mother formation. Maybe we can retreat through the Mother formation."

Fei Lan and the others nodded.

Na Xin and Zhen Gu didn't linger. They returned to the grand mountain of the Giant Tribe to prepare for their great migration.

Fei Lan, Long Zhu, and Yun Hao from Grace Mainland had ordered their fellows to prepare everything and wait for Shi Yan. If Shi Yan didn't activate the Mother formation, they could only leave Old Orchid Star.

Chapter 955: An Eccentric Man

Blood circulated in Shi Yan's entire body while he silently floated inside a blue bubble.

This was a marvelous world of colors. However, it didn't have a bit of earth and heaven energy besides the blue bubbles. Those bubbles emitted an immense blue light like some kind of barrier.

Streamers moved around the place like rivers crossing the void. Blue bubbles filled every corner as if they were part of a vast sea.

The bubbles had many sizes. The big ones were as massive as mountain ranges while the small ones were as large as fists. Shi Yan was staying inside a bubble big enough to cover him entirely.

Blue bubbles floated, slowly moving in a direction.

Inside the bubble, Shi Yan gradually healed his badly wounded God Body. Under the magical effects of Immortal Demon Blood, his broken bones and vessels grew and connected to each other. They had recovered at a speed that naked eyes could observe.

This place didn't have a concept of time. Shi Yan didn't know how long he had spent here before he woke up. His face changed immediately.

He turned around, standing up inside the bubble. His face became incredibly severe.

This was not where he should have arrived!

There was no beam of earth and heaven energy. No sun, moon, or stars. Needless to say, a piece of land. This was... a space crack!

Shi Yan was frightened!

As he cultivated Space power Upanishad, he understood well what the space crack meant. It was an absolutely deadly silent area. It didn't have energy or traces of human operations, other creatures or floras. This place had only endless desolation.

When Shi Yan escaped Broken Star Field, he remembered clearly that he had built a space door which would reasonably lead to Agate Star Area as he had this in mind at that time. It shouldn't be some space crack!

After taking a deep breath, Shi Yan sat down cross-legged. He put aside the anomaly of this place for a moment to check the changes of his God Body.

His eyes brightened.

The wounded God Body had completely recovered. Not only that, the Essence Qi Ancient Tree in his body was filled to the brim. His power had reached a new height.

He immediately understood that his acupuncture points had absorbed and refined the energy, providing to his entire body and healing him. Besides, he received more benefits from that.

At this moment, he was at Second Sky of Original God Realm with abundant energy and magical powers Upanishad. He should have been happy! However, his face was dispirited and reluctant.

It was because he didn't know how to get out of this space crack. He didn't know how to get back to Agate Star Area. His Soul Consciousness was restricted in this area. He had no other magical sensibility but his eyes to observe the surroundings.

Being baffled for a while, he silently circulated his energy, trying to break the blue bubble.

Boom!

The blue bubble covering his body burst off. A flow of chaotic space energy grumblingly flooded in like a tsunami striking his body directly.

A blood-red halo emerged, resisting the chaotic space energy. Shi Yan had to consume his energy a lot to maintain the halo.

His countenance changed. Shi Yan looked at a blue bubble. His

thoughts flickered and his body shot like a space saber into that bubble.

The blue bubbles could resist turbulent space flow. Shi Yan was safe taking shelter inside the bubble.

Tens of thousands of blue bubbles were floating, moving slowly in the same direction. There was no star around, but the streamers moved swiftly. If he didn't have a tenacious body, he would have been broken easily.

Shi Yan didn't know what was going on around him.

However, he was able to confirm one thing. The reason that he appeared there wasn't that he had aimed wrongly. Somebody had affected his space door, deviating him. Otherwise, he should have been in some area of Agate Star Area at this moment.

Even though Shi Yan had been cultivating Space power Upanishad, he hadn't reached the level that he could move through the space cracks as he pleased. He couldn't find the door that opened to Agate Star Area. For the time being, he had a headache.

He knew his operation in Broken Star Field would bring a disaster to the Giant Tribe and his friends in Old Orchid Star. He had planned to stop by a life star and activate the Child formation of the Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation. That way, we could evacuate his people in Old Orchid Star.

Shi Yan knew that he was rushing. If his friends in Old Orchid Star couldn't leave early, the natives of Old Orchid Star will receive a catastrophe.

Shi Yan was restless.

Countless bubbles were floating and moving towards an unknown area. Shi Yan didn't know when they would reach their destination and when he could find the way to return.

He must have a solution quickly!

With a dark face, he decided to use his energy to resist the chaotic space current. He started to jump through the bubbles, heading to where the bubbles were heading.

As Shi Yan understood the solution, he applied it immediately. He urged the energy around his body, making his God Body twinkle with starlight. He broke his bubble and jumped to the nearest bubble.

As soon as his God Body left the bubble, the streamers immediately crossed over him. Attacks as potent as billions of tons of water pouring on the sky gave him a massive pressure. Each of his muscles was tense. He could feel pain in his brain too.

He could enter the bubble, but he had to consume his energy.

There were tens of thousands of bubble in front of him. With his energy, if he kept moving forward, he could only get through around one hundred bubbles before draining all of his energy.

He could only use divine crystals to restore.

Shi Yan's knitted his brows tightly, hesitating.

This place looked strange and unpredictable. He hadn't seen this the first time. He didn't know anything about this place. If he drained all of his energy, in case he encountered a danger, what would he do?

But if he couldn't find a way out and kept floating in a bubble like this, how could his friends in Old Orchid Star dodge this calamity?

Taking a deep breath, Shi Yan continued to use energy covering his body. He gritted his teeth, dashing forward.

More than ten blue bubbles passed him while he was moving like a shuttle. When he stopped inside a bubble to recharge his energy, he looked around to check his surroundings.

There were so many blue bubbles ahead, behind, above, and beneath him. All of them were heading in the same direction,

which he didn't know where it led. He didn't know what would be waiting in the other end neither.

"Ah? "

His face darkened, but his eyes were still bright, staring at something ahead of him.

In front of him was a bubble as big as a rubber ball where a cluster of mist dwelled, which had soul energy fluctuations.

Shi Yan was perplexed. Hesitating for a while, he moved fast forwards. His God Body forcefully resisted the space streamers, entering a bubble around one hundred meters away from the bubble with soul energy.

Inside that pocket-sized bubble, the gray mist slowly condensed into an ash-gray ancient face. It looked a bit blurry.

Facing Shi Yan, he seemed to furrow his brows, releasing his shaking soul energy. He didn't look pleased at all. "Don't struggle. This place doesn't have earth and heaven energy. You can't regain what you've consumed. Better to save energy for the critical moments."

Shi Yan was baffled, asking. "Who are you?"

He suddenly realized that the reason why he appeared here somehow related to this person.

Indeed, the blurry soul snorted, speaking coldly. "I had to spend a lot of energy to bring you here. Behave. Don't use energy. Save as much as you can."

"Who's the motherf*cker that asked you to bring me here?" Shi Yan's visage became cold. "I'd navigated and built the space door without a mistake. You interfered and brought me to this unknown space crack that I don't know how to get out of. What do you want?"

"Kid, don't be ungrateful," snarled the soul. "Ordinary people can

never get into this place. If I haven't consumed a lot of energy to drag you here, how could you have been here? Don't babble. Just wait there. I've got a plan for you."

"I need to get back. Why did you bring me here? Please send me back!" roared Shi Yan.

"Don't even think about it!" The soul sneered coldly. "I've used a lot of energy to bring you here. How could I let you go easily? I'm telling you, if you don't help me, you should never dream about getting out of this place. I know you cultivate Space power Upanishad, but without my direction, you can't use your power to get out of this place!"

Shi Yan darkened his face. He kept silent. His eyes became garnet.

Swish!

A bunch of starlights shot out from his finger, tearing the bubble and aiming at his soul.

Sizzle! Sizzle!

The bunch of starlights that Shi Yan shot out vanished quickly. It couldn't gather more energy. When it was about to enter the bubble, the energy in the light wasn't even more than one-tenth the required energy.

The vague, ancient face snorted disdainfully. A beam of soul energy emerged. Space streamers gathered, attacking Shi Yan's starlight.

Pffff!

Shi Yan's attack was shattered instantly, unable to be a threat to others.

"Kid, don't waste your energy. I understand that this place is much better than you. As you have only Second Sky of Original God Realm, I wouldn't take you here if you could attack me." The

old man grinned fiendishly. "Better to behave. If you help me with this, I will bring you back. I'll even give you a big gift too. If you keep that stupid thought in mind, you'll stay here for the rest of your life with me. I've been so lonely for several thousands of years. It's good that I have someone to talk to."

"Who are you? What do you need me to help you with?" Shi Yan frowned, calming his mind. "You want me to work for you right? At least you have to tell me my scope of work."

"Muahahaha. When we get there, I'll tell you. For now, you just need to be content with your lot." The bodiless soul laughed eccentrically. "Don't worry. If you do your best to help me, I won't mistreat you. It's your good fortune that you can be here. You don't know how many warriors have tried to explore this place, but they never found the door. Kid, you're lucky."

Chapter 956: Thorough Comprehension

Inside the mysterious space crack, Shi Yan couldn't figure out what the time was. He didn't know that time was flying fast.

However, he knew that it must have been a long time already.

His mood became heavier. He couldn't rest as he didn't want to stay cluelessly in this place without any idea on how to escape.

"How long has it been?" Shi Yan asked the eccentric man with only a soul sometime in the bubble.

That old freak had always been silent. Sometimes, Shi Yan thought that he would keep quiet for the rest of his life. If he didn't ask him, that eccentric old man would never notice him.

Perhaps he got used to loneliness for hundred or thousands of years. He had shut himself for a long time already.

". . . How long...." The eccentric soul sighed, "I've been here for several thousand years. And for you? Oh. Since I've dragged you here, it has been three years already. Short time. Three years is just a blink of an eye. As we all pursue the truth of powers Upanishad, three years is just a blink of an eye to us."

He answered in a relaxed manner.

However, his answer made Shi Yan discolor. His heart sank into the abyss. He looked at the old freak with resentment and rage.

You don't care about time, but I care!

Shi Yan screamed crazily in his mind. Suddenly, he realized that he could do nothing to Old Orchid Star in Far West region.

Regardless of what happened to Old Orchid Star, he couldn't help. He couldn't give them any aid.

Three years was enough for Da Feng of Blood Halberd and Niger of the Ghost Mark Clan to destroy Old Orchid Star. If they wanted to do anything, they should have it done by now.

Shi Yan was deeply sorrowful and begrudging. He started to worry about his friends in Old Orchid Star. He didn't know whether the Yangs and the Shis could avoid this calamity or not. He didn't know how many of them, the fellows he had endured many difficulties with to get them out of Grace Mainland, could survive this time.

His eyes became brutal!

He had a lot of deep resentments towards that old freak. If he hadn't interfered, Shi Yan could have reappeared in a corner of Agate Star Area. He could have used the Child formation to teleport people and materials of Old Orchid Star, avoiding the massacre from Blood Halberd and Niger.

However, it was too late. The grudges he had caused would be repaid by people in Old Orchid Star.

Taking a deep breath, he sat down quietly, his eyes chilled.

If Old Orchid Star was destroyed when he got out of this place, he would definitely chase and kill anyone who had attacked Old Orchid Star to avenge his friends!

As things had escalated to this point, he knew that it was just a waste of effort to think about Old Orchid Star. He decided to put his mind on figuring out how to get out of this damn place.

He continued to ask the eccentric man about the purpose of this trip. He wanted to know what he should do.

However, that freak had concealed everything. Every time he was asked, he just answered with "I'll tell you when we get there."

Shi Yan felt so aggrieved. After he got to know that he wouldn't get the real situation from that man, he didn't think about it any longer. Staying inside the blue bubble, he quieted down, circulating the soul altar to comprehend Death and Life power Upanishad.

From the center of Broken Star Field, he had crossed the Death

and Life Bridge, which was the magical inheritance of the Death and Life embedded with great abilities of space power. The transparent handprints had disappeared into his God Body, entering the tier of powers Upanishad in his soul altar.

At this moment, he sent his soul to the tier of powers Upanishad to explore and comprehend the mighty mysteries of Death and Life power Upanishad.

The powers Upanishad tier was divided into three distinct sections including Space power Upanishad, Death and Life power Upanishad, and Star power Upanishad. These three powers Upanishad didn't have real entities but there were energy fluctuations. When he didn't use the powers, those energy fluctuations would be tiny and almost unrecognizable.

His soul flickered and his God Body released the Death and Life Intent Domain, creating a small God Domain.

Deep inside the tier of powers Upanishad, the section of Death and Life suddenly had strange vibrations.

It looked like an air-base movement, but it was actually just energy. Transparent handprints floated, moving in that section. They were the handprints that had entered his body. Those handprints weren't real as they were just illusions created in his consciousness, which could only perceive through the soul.

A transparent handprint could change frequently. It switched between Death and Life energy as if it was projecting the life cycle of Death and Life: Rebirth.

It seemed like he could see countless creatures, which appeared in that area in their soul form. Living in there for a while, they gradually lost their vitality, coming to the last phase of their lifespans. Eventually, they died.

From birth to death, it was just a cycle of earth and heaven. It was the fundamental principle of the world that no force could

change.

However, it seemed that this cycle in his tier of power Upanishad was slowed down to last for eternity.

He could see everything clearly. A creature was born. It thrived as its vitality surged before it gradually ceased. It seemed like any kind of living being would decay, bound to the chains of the mortal world.

Those creatures didn't have real forms. Shi Yan just felt them. He could feel some of them die rapidly and some of them knew how to gather and use energy to slow down their disappearance rate. Although they all vanished in the end, some lived longer than others.

In that corner of power Upanishad, he could feel the changes of billions of lives. When a creature disappeared, its soul energy was emitted, returning to earth and heaven.

Creatures' souls were also a kind of earth and heaven energy. They could be strong or weak and all of them had to die and be reborn.

He was just an onlooker. He didn't have the right to join all of these. He could only use his soul to sense quietly. He felt like he was watching a historical movie, looking at all kinds of creatures from the moment they were born to the last minute of their lives. However, he couldn't interfere.

This was the essence of power Upanishad that precursor had imparted to him. That expert seemed to have an unimaginable comprehension of Death and Life power Upanishad. He could use his power to project deaths of creatures in the world.

Although Shi Yan also cultivated Death and Life power Upanishad, he hadn't reached such a level yet.

He had a feeling that his precursor could join the life cycle of a creature from birth to death. He seemed to be able to control

everything discreetly!

Shi Yan's eyes brightened as he thought of one possibility.

If that precursor could control creatures and their life or death, he could kill them or revive them as he pleased. What kind of existence was that?

Could he create creatures?

Shi Yan was frightened by these thoughts.

Creating lives was the restricted area of life that he didn't dare to imagine.

From the day he started to cultivate powers Upanishad, he had been in Grace Mainland, Raging Flame Star Area, and now Agate Star Area. Wasn't it true that creatures were born by Mother Nature? Was there any existence that could create lives?

If this existence did exist, has it used some kind of unknown, formidable power to create Shi Yan himself, the ten great races in Grace Mainland, and the other peculiar races in Agate Star Area?

Creating lives and different races. What kind of power was that?!?

It was beyond his imagination!

However, since he had observed the life cycle of different creatures in his tier of power Upanishad, he suddenly understood something... creating creatures... It seems to be possible to warriors cultivating Death and Life power Upanishad.

Shi Yan didn't know if that precursor had touched this restricted area of life or not. However, he had given him a direction!

Shi Yan felt that as his precursor had comprehended the Death and Life power Upanishad to a profound level, he understood some restricted information that the other creatures in the world shouldn't know. He had searched for it, but Shi Yan didn't know whether or not he had succeeded.

If he succeeded and got the power to create lives, would he be the Mighty Creator, the source of all creatures?

Shi Yan was perplexed.

The more Shi Yan understood the pure power Upanishad that precursor had left to him, the more he recognized how tremendous it would be when he reached the acme of his power Upanishad.

When a warrior cultivated his power Upanishad to the utmost, he could have the deepest understanding of earth and heaven mysteries.

Shi Yan reviewed the other two powers Upanishad he had: Space and Star.

If the Death and Life power Upanishad had reached to the utmost, it could create lives, races, and forcefully interfere with death and life. But what about Space power Upanishad?

Frowning, he mulled over this thought while his soul quietly seeped toward the section of Space power Upanishad.

He suddenly remembered that he was in a space crack.

If the Death and Life power Upanishad could touch the deepest restricted areas, what would it be when Space power Upanishad had reached the final line?

A picture he had never dared to imagine was slowly revealed in his eyes. He seemed to see a whole new world where his vision and imagination were opened to the infinite.

Creating a new space! Creating different spaces! These were the best powers he could have imagined!

As soon as he had this thought, he became perplexed. Would he be able to create an entire star area and the endless universe inside the space crack he was in?

Digging further, he linked the possibilities he had thought with Star power Upanishad. Would the warriors also create those stars?

As soon as he understood Star power Upanishad and learned how a star was created and thrived, he was able to use energy to fabricate and then give it to the Origin energy. Would he be able to create a planet that way? If he could add Origin energy to that planet, he may also be able to create an ancient continent!

His vision and perception of the world had entered a new level from this moment!

His soul moved around the three sections of power Upanishads to search and comprehend. This was the first time he had tried to touch the deepest levels of his powers.

There was no concept of time in the space crack. This time, he had studied his powers for a long time. It was too long that he almost forgot about himself.

This lasted until the old freak called him, "Wake up! We're almost there!"

Shi Yan woke up. He looked as if his life form had been sublimated. At this moment, his aura and bearings were also different.

Chapter 957: Three Souls

"How long?"

After Shi Yan woke up, he immediately asked the most important question. "How much time passed since I sunk into my cultivation?"

"Not long. Just eleven years." The old freak grinned fiendishly. "Kid, your innate endowment isn't bad. You can enter the deepest level of power Upanishad comprehension. It will help you a lot on your understanding of powers Upanishad. It will help you understand the origin of a power."

Shi Yan became distressed, shutting himself out.

It has been eleven years. To this monster who had lived tens of thousands of years, eleven years was just a moment. To Shi Yan, it was significant.

The dust has already settled in Old Orchid Star, right?

Shi Yan wore a sour face, sighing inaudibly. He hated himself.

During this time, he had sunk into a magical intent domain, studying Space, Star, Death and Life powers Upanishads. This kind of study wasn't an application of power so it couldn't increase his realm significantly.

It was like an exploration of the nature of powers and its beginning and ending. He could have his own explanation and unique understanding of the deepest level of his powers, which was the truth of powers Upanishad.

To Shi Yan, it was still too early to comprehend the deepest meaning of his powers.

However, if he recognized these things earlier, he wouldn't have lost himself on his path in the future. Straying from the path could have lead to messing up his cultivation and the collapse of his soul

altar in the end.

He knew what he got. This kind of benefit couldn't be described with words. Unless he could touch it himself, he couldn't get a good grasp of it even though he had an excellent instructor.

"Are we almost there?" waking up from his thoughts, Shi Yan's eyes brightened as he mumbled to himself. "Finally, we are here..."

"We arrived early this time," the eccentric old man whispered. His face was more realistic now. His eyes looked complex and inexplicable. He seemed to sink in his memory, sighing weakly. He looked at Shi Yan and said, "Many years ago... I still had a God Body and my soul altar wasn't broken... Sigh, I hope I could get what I want this time."

As he said that, Shi Yan became stern. He sensed danger.

This man had been surviving in space cracks for thousands of years. He used to have a God Body. What happened to him?

What had destroyed his God Body and shattered his soul altar?

In this space crack, although it had erosive streamers, which was a significant danger to the warriors, as long as they reached a certain level to condense the four-tiered soul altar, they could survive easily. Their soul altars wouldn't shatter.

This man stayed in this space crack and had his soul altar smashed. He must have encountered some danger he couldn't withstand!

What could it be?

Will I have the same consequence as he did?

Shi Yan's mood got heavier.

Tens of thousands of bubbles in his sight slowly moved forward.

It was just what he could see with his limited vision. There were likely countless, similar bubbles in the areas that he couldn't see. Shi Yan didn't know what those bubbles were or how many of

them presented here. He didn't know where they were heading to either.

However, he was sensitive enough to realize that those bubbles were speeding up!

It looked like the closer they were to the destination, the force that attracted them got stronger and made them move faster.

The other end where the bubbles were heading to should have some kind of energy, which was silently affecting and guiding all of these bubbles to gather at that point.

While he was absorbed in his thoughts, the old freak suddenly frowned. He had a gleam of annoyance in his eyes. He cursed, "He's not died yet."

"Well, if you can survive here, why would I die?" Then, a cold voice arose from a distant area.

Shi Yan discolored slightly.

This was the second time he heard someone else talking in this space crack. That voice was as cold as ice. It felt chilly like icy mist shrouding his body, making him irritated.

Right after that, he saw a bunch of cold light, which dragged along a big blue bubble and was moving fast towards him.

That cold light was just a chunk of cold air. It was a soul of a warrior. However, it didn't generate facial features as it was just a congregated mass of cold air. Inside the blue bubble by that cold light was a woman...

An Ice Clan woman!

At first glance, Shi Yan knew that this woman was from the Ice Clan of Agate Star Area. They cultivated ice power Upanishad so their physique was Yin cold and quiet. They didn't look very different from humans aside from their snow-white skin. It seemed like they were ice skeletons, which made them extremely

elegant, chilly, and distant.

That woman looked to be around twenty. She wore snow-white armor and a phoenix coronet. Her skin was the color of snow that outlined her exquisite, beautiful face. She was long-limbed with a generous bosom. Shavings of cold mist hovered on her arms.

The cold light and the woman weren't one person. They were two distinctive living beings.

Just like him and the freak. They were souls bringing a person that had a body.

That Ice woman stood arrogantly inside the blue bubble. Her realm was much higher than his as she got First Sky of Ethereal God Realm. Her face was chilly and her eyes were like two sharp icicles.

Her bold brows knitted tightly together. She glared at them, her countenance getting colder.

"Oh, you got bad luck, eh? Why do you have a brat at Second Sky of Original God Realm? Can he endure this?" the cold light mocked him. "Seems like you'll get nothing this time."

The eccentric man who had captured Shi Yan couldn't help but snort. His face darkened. He didn't snap back as it would show that he was ashamed of bringing Shi Yan with him.

He had his difficulties. He got hurt severely last time. He didn't have enough energy to select the candidate. If Shi Yan hadn't built the space door at that exact moment, he couldn't have found anyone. Initially, he decided to give up. The moment he sensed Shi Yan within his range, he tried to drag him into the space crack.

After he retrieved Shi Yan, he felt reluctant because Shi Yan's realm was too low. He understood that his hope was in vain this time.

But he had to try anyway...

He didn't have extra energy to find another capable candidate. Although Shi Yan was just a 'byproduct,' he could only accept that. Whether Shi Yan could help him or not, it was in God's hands.

"You found someone from your clan?" The old freak was baffled for a moment. He looked at the Ice woman, frowning, "She... does she know what will happen?"

The cold light was silent.

The Ice woman inside the blue bubble had a pair of calm but icy cold eyes. She said, "It has nothing to do with you!"

The old man smiled, shaking his head. "Poor child."

"How about you?" the cold light retorted, "Does the one who you found know what will happen? Haha, perhaps he doesn't. Many years ago, we were like them. We were dragged here knowing nothing. Then, we lost our God Bodies and our soul altars collapsed. Look at us now," the cold light seemed to ridicule herself, "It has been so many years. Like the reincarnation, we've become the originators. Sigh, it's our fates then."

Shi Yan's eyes were cold. He looked at the eccentric man. "From what you're discussing, I won't have a decent ending, will I?"

"Decent ending?" the old freak laughed oddly. "If you can't succeed in this place, who will have a good ending? Kid, don't hate me. I'm going to give you a good encounter. It depends on whether or not you can take it. As you're here, at least you have a chance."

"What chance?" Shi Yan didn't think he would be grateful for that. He mocked him, "A chance for my God Body and soul to vanish?"

"Well, not necessarily to get your soul vanished. But the best condition you can get is to be like us. Losing your body and shattering your soul altar. You will have only a wisp of your soul remain," said the cold light.

Shi Yan was filled with cold intent as if he had fallen into an icy

chamber. He could feel his temperature lowering.

He suddenly understood that nothing good would happen this time. That freak got him here to fulfill something for him.

Whether Shi Yan could survive or not, the old man wouldn't mind.

The cold light and the old man quieted down. They didn't say more as they were waiting for something.

The blue bubbles were still drifting. After an unknown period, a massive blue bubble appeared in front of them.

It carried a dragon! An Evil Dragon!

That Evil Dragon was around two thousand meters long, which reluctantly stuffed him inside the massive bubble. It was struggling to keep every inch of it inside the bubble. It was trying really hard as if it was really afraid that its limbs could stick outside of the bubble. A dark blue chunk hovered above the dragon's head. It was another soul.

The eccentric old man's visage changed. The cold light was also shaken. They were both frightened, looking at the dark blue light above the Evil Dragon's head.

The Evil Dragon belonged to the Monster Clan. This tribe had people with the most tenacious, unbreakable bodies among the Monster Tribes. When he was in Old Orchid Star, Na Xin had found a skull of an Evil Dragon. Back then, they got so happy. The Giant had explained to him its features and how strong the Evil Dragon was.

Thus, at first glance, he knew it was an Evil Dragon.

Observing for a while, he was sure that this dragon was level 12 at least. It could be compared to Ethereal God Realm. However, its body was much stronger than that of the warrior in the same realm.

It seemed like the blue soul hovering above the dragon's head had confined the dragon's soul. The dragon couldn't even release its soul energy. It was always struggling. No matter how hard he tried, he couldn't get rid of the restraint of the blue soul.

"You can capture an Evil Dragon! Aren't you afraid that its tribe will find you and take revenge?" asked the old man in astonishment.

"If they want to find me and take revenge, they have to get in here first, right? If I can get out of here, will I be afraid of the Evil Dragon's tribe?" Arrogant laughter arose from the dark blue light. "To capture this lost Evil Dragon, I've exerted a lot of effort. I must succeed this time!"

The eccentric old man's face darkened. He glanced at Shi Yan, sighing begrudgingly. He knew his chance wasn't great this time.

Living beings with real entities were something that could assure their success. The stronger their bodies were, the more significant opportunities they could have. Since the Ice Clan had unique physiques, their bodies were also tenacious. The Evil Dragons of the Monster Clan were indeed famous existences throughout big star areas thanks to their imposingly, tenacious bodies.

The freak man thought that Shi Yan wasn't worth mentioning compared to the Ice woman and the Evil Dragon.

Chapter 958: Meddle!

The three distinctive souls were in three different blue bubbles, moving forward quickly. Shi Yan, the Ice woman, and an Evil Devil were also with them inside a bubble.

After a while, the eccentric man, the precursor of the Ice Clan, and the man who appeared last discussed using their souls. Then, they used force all of a sudden.

Shi Yan's and the Ice woman's bubbles flew fast forward, merging with the massive bubble that carried the Evil Dragon.

"Stay put. We're going to arrange something." The old man informed Shi Yan and laughed before leaving with the two other souls.

Shi Yan, the Ice woman, and the Evil Dragon were put together inside the massive bubble.

The three souls had done something so that Shi Yan's bubble halted stopped drifting away.

Different-sized bubbles were still moving around them, heading somewhere ahead while their bubble seemed to get rid of some suction force from the other end.

The Evil Dragon's soul was struggling hard as if it had been trying to wiggle.

However, they didn't know what kind of soul restriction the man who came last had cast on him. No matter how hard the dragon tried to condense its soul energy, it couldn't escape this restraint. Its huge body shivered, wiggling hopelessly. It looked desperate and distressed.

"Do you know what's going on? Those two didn't have bodies. What's their purpose in bringing us here?" Shi Yan was cold and stern, asking the Ice woman right after the other three had left.

Shi Yan could see that this Ice woman was obedient to the others. She seemed to know something. Shi Yan didn't want to be plotted against. He wanted to know the situation first so that he could strategize against the freak man.

Unfortunately, the Ice woman disdained him. Her clear and cold eyes glanced at him once and then turned away. She didn't want to talk to him.

A moment later, the Ice woman flew up, landing on the Evil Dragon's head. The refined, chilling energy emerged around her body while she was releasing her soul energy, seeping through the dragon's head. She wanted to help the dragon get rid of its restraint.

Beads of sweat that sparkled like ice appeared on her snow-white checks, rolling along her slender neck. As she cultivated extremely cold energy, her body was so chilled that even her sweat was frozen right after they appeared.

She focused, her face stern and cold. Wisps of cold mist crawled around her body. Currents of ice crystal-like airs emitted from her ten exquisite fingers, entering the Evil Dragon's head, inch by inch.

The dragon realized her deed. It was surprised and felt hopeful.

The two of them urged force at the same time. The massive body of the dragon slowly froze. The powerful cold air covered it entirely.

The Ice woman became more severe. She was constantly releasing energy. She even used the power of her Ethereal Extent. Beams of light that was as sparkling as icy, spider webs emerged from her glabella, shooting towards the Evil Dragon.

The dragon wiggled. Its mist-covered body made 'crack, crack' sounds. It seemed to consume a lot of energy.

All of a sudden, a triangle seal emerged from the Evil Dragon's head, which carried a massive soul energy fluctuation.

The Evil Dragon looked miserable. Its huge eyes were filled with fear and resentment. The soul energy inside that seal fluctuated sharply, aiming at the dragon. That seal was the ultimate form of restriction used to confine the dragon's soul.

The more the dragon wiggled, the brighter the triangle seal became. It looked like three blades, which were cutting the dragon's soul and making its massive body shiver and curl in pain.

The ice-like, sparkling face of the Ice woman paled. Her sweat turned into ice beads. She seemed to have consumed a significant amount of energy.

The Evil Dragon had been struggling for a long time. Gradually, it couldn't resist the pain in the soul anymore. It became hopeless and reluctant. The dragon wanted to give up.

The Ice woman had cold eyes. She shouted, her voice like the sharp icicles. "If you give up now, we will not have any chance later!"

As the dragon's soul was restrained, it didn't have the energy to talk. The giant pupils of the dragon showed its distress and pain.

It seemed like the seal had blocked its ability to use the soul to communicate. The dragon's situation was much worse than Shi Yan's and the Ice woman's.

Being shouted at, the Devil Dragon pulled itself together. They started to urge more energy. The dragon continued to wiggle.

The massive body over two thousand meters long had blood trickle from its scales. This was the sign that the monster had forced its energy to the utmost. To get rid of this restraint, the dragon seemed to want to risk its life.

The Ice woman and the Evil Dragon seemed to know their destiny. To break this harsh destiny, they were trying to escape the restraint of the three souls.

However, none of them had informed Shi Yan about anything.

They didn't consider Shi Yan as someone in the same place as them, someone who could help.

They knew Shi Yan's cultivation base. In their eyes, Shi Yan had only Second Sky of Original God Realm. It wasn't worth mentioning. He couldn't help them at all. Thus, they didn't bother explaining to him or acknowledging him with a look.

In the blue bubble, Shi Yan frowned, his face dark and cold. He quietly assessed the Ice woman and the Evil Dragon.

After a long time, he swiftly glided like the Ice woman to reach the Dragon. Looking at the woman whose skin was like snow and as beautiful and elegant as a snowflake, he spoke deliberately, "Do you need help?"

The Evil Dragon couldn't see him, but it could hear him. It stopped wiggling for a moment.

The Ice woman knitted her brows, her cold eyes looking at him. "You can't help us. You just need to stay put. Don't talk, don't disturb or distract us. That's how you can help us."

Shi Yan was surprised.

Pondering for a while, Shi Yan continued, "You want to help the Evil Dragon get rid of the soul restraint, right?"

The Ice woman had a gleam of disdain in her eyes as if talking to him would affect her concentration. She neither turned around nor answered him and just continued releasing more energy. She was using her soul energy to assist the dragon in resisting the triangle soul seal.

The soul seal came from that imposing soul. It was like an inexplicable, magical lock that locked up the dragon's soul.

If they wanted to free the dragon, they needed to unlock it or destroy it forcefully. The Ice woman and the dragon were using the latter method. They wanted to destroy the seal and free the dragon.

Seeing the Ice woman and the dragon ignore him, Shi Yan stood at his spot and extended his left hand, placing it on the dragon's head.

"Don't meddle! Or else, we will get the reverse effect!" The Ice woman shouted ear-splittingly. She turned to him, her eyes like icicles. "If you do something rash, don't blame me for not showing any mercy!"

The Evil Dragon wiggled harder. It even sprayed blood from its scales. It looked so worried as if it wasn't pleased to let Shi Yan, a low-realm expert, meddle in its struggling situation. They all thought that Shi Yan could only disturb the dragon.

However, at the moment it was about to stop him, its giant eyes showed its confusion...

After five seconds, the massive body of the Evil Dragon shivered as it was very happy!

After Shi Yan had put his hand on the dragon's head, she could feel a new, immense vitality moving in the dragon's body. That vitality was dense, carrying the power of earth and heaven and giving a great tonic to the dragon.

He was using the ability to give away vitality, which was beyond her common knowledge.

Receiving the surging life energy, the tired dragon was boosted up. It roared inaudibly and started to struggle again.

Her clear but cold eyes of the Ice woman brightened quietly. She nodded, speaking indifferently to Shi Yan. "Just pump more life energy. Don't stop!" She was bossy, giving orders. She thought that only if Shi Yan followed her orders, it would bring luck to the three of them.

Shi Yan just smiled, not caring about her. However, he did release more vitality to help the dragon recover its energy.

Inside a bubble far from them, the arrogant soul suddenly sneered disdainfully. "Those three kids are cooperating to help the Evil Dragon get rid of my restraint."

The cold light flashed but kept silent.

The eccentric old man who brought Shi Yan here shook his head. "Just a waste of effort."

"It's normal that they will struggle. Not everybody is as stupid as the kid you brought here." The soul continued to mock him, "Well, the kid you brought here doesn't know what will happen, eh? Haha, it's no use to hide things from him. He has only Second Sky of Original God Realm. Can he endure that? You think you can take his God Body before he's destroyed? Too dumb!"

The eccentric man's face darkened. He snorted, "I never asked for your opinions. No matter what, I have to try. That kid has a tenacious body. I've tested that. Perhaps he could endure it."

"Haha, good. I also want to see if you can borrow his body to enter," laughed the arrogant soul.

"That girl's from your Ice Clan. She's extraordinary. Her God Body has been trained specially. That's a good sapling. Why do you guys want to destroy her?" the freak man looked at the cold light. "Does she know the situation?"

"She's the sacrifice that my clan has offered me. She knows the meaning of her existence. The Ice Clan has nurtured her in order to bring her here to help me get in there." The cold light sighed as if it was a little hesitant. "What a pity."

"It doesn't seem like she accepted her fate. Haha, she's giving a hand to help my Evil Dragon."

"Sigh, too bad. Too bad she can't do it," the cold light sighed again.

Chapter 959: Butcher the Chicken with the Cattle Knife.

The God Body of the Ice woman had twirling wisps of cold air that sparkled like ice, which then seeped into the Evil Dragon. The Evil Dragon was still wiggling, using its energy.

Shi Yan put one hand on the dragon's head, trying to use the Death and Life power Upanishad to strengthen the dragon. He continually pumped his surging vitality into the dragon to help it endure.

The three of them were trying to break the triangle seal. However, after a long time, the seal wasn't destroyed yet.

Gradually, the Ice woman couldn't endure using her powers for so long. She sighed tiredly, her eyes dispirited as if she was already hopeless.

Afterward, the Evil Dragon also stopped. Its eyes reflected its extremely depressed mood.

They wanted to give up.

Shi Yan furrowed his brows. His face became more serious. His mind flickered and crystal divines flew out of his Fantasy Sky Ring. He held them in his hand as he sat down cross-legged on the dragon's head, absorbing the energy from the crystals to refill his energy.

The Ice woman saw that. She also took out her divine crystals and sat down to recover her energy.

The Evil Dragon stopped moving. It looked numb as the energy in its body slowly calmed down.

As the dragon had given up, the triangle seal on its head slowly dimmed out.

They didn't talk. After a long time, Shi Yan finished refilling and

he turned to the Ice woman, asking softly. "What happened? That man brought me here. I have no clue what's going on or what this place is. Can you tell me?"

The Ice woman used to disdain him. However, her attitude was a little better at this moment since she thought that he was somehow useful. She answered indifferently. "We will all die."

Shi Yan nodded. He wasn't so surprised. "Those three souls mean to harm us. I know it. I just want to know what they can do."

"They need a body to enter the place they want to go to. But they all don't have bodies. We're their flesh containers. The moment we get in there, they will possess our bodies. Before our bodies have been smashed down, they will get into a certain place." The Ice woman sighed, speaking reluctantly. "In the best scenario, we will lose our bodies and our soul altars will break. However, we can still be 'alive' with a wisp of a soul, just like they are now. If we are unlucky, we won't even have a wisp of a soul remaining. We will perish entirely."

Shi Yan changed his visage.

The Evil Dragon wiggled, looking ahead of them as if it wanted to intervene something. However, its soul was restrained so it couldn't join Shi Yan and the Ice woman's discussion. The dragon writhed.

"Not even a small chance?" Shi Yan pondered for a while, asking the second time.

"If he can get rid of the restraint, perhaps we can find a way to survive when we join hands. But... I'm afraid it will be tough," said that Ice woman with a distressed countenance.

Shi Yan was grim, taking a deep breath. He looked at the Evil Dragon underneath, whispering. "Let me give it a try, okay?"

The Ice woman was surprised. She studied him for a while and then said, "You wanna try? You have only Second Sky of Original

God Realm. What can you do?"

"We always try. If I can't, we will discuss then," Shi Yan smiled casually. While she was gazing at him, he extended his hand and put it on the dragon's head.

The Ice woman wore a stern face, watching him.

This time, Shi Yan didn't give more life energy to the Evil Dragon. He was releasing a soul fluctuation. A wisp of refined soul flew out of his hand, entering the dragon's head.

He immediately felt the formidable soul fluctuation of the Evil Dragon.

Different from many races, monsters didn't have soul altars and their souls didn't hover above the Sea of Consciousness. Beasts had different methods of cultivating. They seemed to focus on quenching their bodies.

The Evil Dragon didn't have a soul altar inside its head. It had only a huge chunk of soul energy. It looked like an opaque ball moving continually.

At this moment, that soul ball didn't spin as a triangle seal tied it down. That seal was the restraining energy, binding the Evil Dragon's soul, which prevented it from controlling its body. It couldn't even talk.

When Shi Yan's soul got inside the dragon's head, the dim triangle seal glowed.

A flow of strong backlash energy was generated from the seal. It followed and attacked Shi Yan's soul as if it had eyes.

His Sea of Consciousness was hurt. Shi Yan's eyes became colder.

"Burn!"

He hissed and the power of the Soul Consciousness he had sent away changed. It was now a space blade that wanted to smash the seal into pieces.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

The soul energy that flew out from the triangle seal suddenly divided and multiplied like countless spider webs. It didn't attack Shi Yan but it silently entered the Evil Dragon's soul.

It seemed that the spider-thread-like soul had its own consciousness even though it was tied to the master and manipulated continuously.

The meaning of that seal to exist was to only confine the Evil Dragon's soul. It didn't want to spend energy on anything else.

Shi Yan frowned. He understood this was a bit tricky to deal with.

If he wanted to destroy that seal, he had to enter the dragon's soul. That seal was moving constantly, which made it hard to break. Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness with space power could damage the Evil Dragon's soul if he was careless. It was possible that he may grind the dragon's soul into pieces before he broke the seal.

That was not what he wanted to see.

Shi Yan contemplated.

"It's complicated and annoyed, indeed," said the Ice woman. "It's hard to use our soul energy to help it out. Only the dragon can free itself. That was why I've used icy energy to try to freeze that seal."

Shi Yan nodded. "Yeah, it's tough though. That man's realm is profound enough and so is his understanding of power Upanishad. The barrier he has cast is interlinked with his mind, so it isn't still."

"Sigh," the Ice woman sighed, looking at him with complex eyes. She thought he had wasted his efforts. She then sank into silence.

Shi Yan hadn't stopped here. He was thinking of a possible solution.

After a while, his eyes brightened as an idea rose in his mind.

In the next moment, his other soul quietly changed in his Sea of Consciousness.

The soul created by the Origin and heaven flames of Grace Mainland had turned into a scorching flame, burning fiercely.

The result of the heaven flames and Origin's fusion was that they became part of his soul. The characteristics of the heaven flames were also his soul's. He could control them and switch them as he pleased. When he thought something in his mind, his soul would change accordingly.

That soul was now the combination of the Vermilion True Bird Flame, Purgatory True Flame, and Earth Flame with the feature of high temperatures and extreme Yang. That soul of his was like a burning sun.

The change of his other soul created the change in his body. At that moment, his body became terrifyingly burning red.

The Ice woman was standing not far from him. She hated that heat. She furrowed her bold brows, instinctively staying away from Shi Yan.

Shi Yan didn't mind her. He just continued to boost more energy. His flaming soul sent a wisp of blazing energy which was shrouded by a thin layer. It then carefully flew towards the dragon's soul.

As the Evil Dragon could sense something terrible, it struggled violently. A deep fear sparkled in its huge eyes.

However, that flow of flame didn't threaten the dragon's soul after it had gotten in. The thin layer covering it seemed to be able to seal the heat of the flame within, preventing the terrifying heat from getting released.

However, that aura was still very imposing. It made the dragon shake continually. Its nerves were tense as if it was afraid that the flame would burn it into ashes in any minute.

The seal stayed hidden deep inside the Evil Dragon's soul. It could sense the danger right when Shi Yan's flaming Soul Consciousness got in. It moved swiftly like an electric spear between the corners of the dragon's soul.

Shi Yan grinned faintly.

As that seal was afraid of his Soul Consciousness, it meant that he could actually damage that seal with this powers. That seal must be formed by the power Upanishad and the soul energy of that arrogant soul. As soon as he burned it down, the other would be damaged too.

The soul seal was continually moving and dodging. Shi Yan wasn't impatient and he simply increased his heating energy.

Gradually, a fire sea had covered the dragon's soul completely. However, this fire sea had a thin membrane created by the Origin energy, which prevented it from burning the Evil Dragon's soul.

The seal hiding inside the dragon's soul could feel something wrong at this moment. Without any hesitation, it seized the chance to fly out of the dragon's soul, trying to escape.

Swish!

A bunch of light flew away from the dragon's eye, fleeing as fast as possible.

Shi Yan's contemplated for a while, his face malicious, touching his glabella.

Swoosh!

Blazing flames flew out hastily, aimed at that bunch of light. Right after that, the fiery energy was released immediately.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

The fleeing bunch of life dissolved quickly, burned into sparks and scattered away. The soul energy in it vanished.

The restrained Evil Dragon suddenly roared. Its massive body

shook, drawing a graceful curve in the void. The light of metal sparkled in its horns as energy circulated in its body once again.

The Ice woman looked at Shi Yan with fear. She quietly lengthened the distance between herself and Shi Yan. She hated the heat from Shi Yan's body.

The Ice Clan stayed in extremely cold areas so none of them enjoyed the heat. To them, the chilliest areas were the places that could progress their power Upanishad fast the most. They instinctively hated light and heat.

"Not good!" The Ice woman seemed to remember something. "The soul restrained was cast by that arrogant soul. You burned his restraint! They must know what we are doing!"

Actually, Shi Yan was hesitant at that moment, but he still burned it down eventually.

He was calm when he spoke, "Those three aren't good people. We don't need to retrain ourselves. If we can hurt them as much as possible, we can have a greater chance to survive."

"That damn old man! He dared to cast the soul restriction on me. I, McGee will make him pay big for this!" After the Evil Dragon moved again, he roared and thundered inside the blue bubble. His aura was terrifying. "I won't spare him!"

Chapter 960: Evil Dragon McGee

The space crack where streamers moved had a place where lights congregated. It was a giant blue bubble as large as an entire life star.

That bubble was massive. It had countless flaming streamers gathering. Bubbles that came from everywhere disappeared into that big blue bubble.

This place seemed to be one end of this chaotic space basin.

The three souls also stopped here.

Then, the arrogant soul shook violently as if he was severely hit.

Gradually, the face he generated turned ferocious. He cursed, "Damn it! They expelled my soul restriction and even burned it down!"

The cold light twisted for a while before turning into a cold, human face that frowned at him. "Didn't you say that the Evil Dragon couldn't get rid of it?"

The eccentric old man who had brought Shi Yan also changed his face. "Seems like the situation has changed. I didn't expect any unexpected event to happen at this moment."

"It was your man!" roared the arrogant soul. "Carlos! Does the kid you brought cultivate Fire power Upanishad? No, it's not true. His fire has the aura of heaven flames! He fused with the Origin! F*ck! Carlos, why didn't you remind me about that?"

The man called Carlos was the soul that had dragged Shi Yan to this place. His face darkened shortly after. "Heaven Flames? That kid has fused with heaven flames?! Damn it!"

"Ibaka! What should we do now?" The stern face condensed by cold light looked at the arrogant soul and spoke. "Ibaka, how did you get that Evil Dragon? Can you direct the Evil Dragon Tribe

here?"

As he mentioned the Evil Dragon Tribe, the three souls' faces darkened. They all knew how dangerous the Evil Dragon Tribe was.

"Evil Dragon Tribe?" the haughty Ibaka became serious. He contemplated for a while and then shook his head. "I think not. Christen, you're a superior of the Ice Clan. Your Ice Clan was always strong and you live not far from the Evil Dragon Tribe. Is that Tribe so dangerous to deal with?"

Among the three souls, the one who brought Shi Yan here was called Carlos, the Ice expert was called Christen, and the haughty soul's name was Ibaka. They were all experts from Agate Star Area. They were at Peak of Ethereal God Realm, just one step away from Incipient God Realm.

Today, they gathered for one thing that could help them walk through this threshold to enter Incipient God Realm. It also could help them rebuild their soul altars.

Christen used to be a famous sage of the Ice Clan. His power Upanishad was exquisite. He had quickly reached Ethereal God Realm. He came here to find an opportunity to enter Incipient God Realm.

In Agate Star Area, the Ice Clan stayed not far from the Evil Dragon Tribe. They knew the situation of the Evil Dragon Tribe well enough.

When Ibaka rose this issue, Carlos also looked at Christen, the one who used to be a precursor of the Ice Clan.

Christen frowned deeply. "In our Agate Star Area, the Monster Clan was always strong. The Evil Dragon Tribe was the pillar of the Monster Clan. They're the best fighters of the Monster Clan. Since our Ice Clan lives not far from the Evil Dragon Tribe, we don't want to cause any grudge against this powerful tribe. The Evil

Dragon Tribe likes to cover their members' mistakes. They will seek revenge for even the most minor grudges. If they know that you capture their member, they will never spare you."

Ibaka listened to him, his face ferocious. "Wait until I've reached Incipient God Realm. I won't be afraid of them!"

We can't let them escape at any cost," Ibaka hissed, "or else, none of us can dodge the flame of anger of the Evil Dragon Tribe!"

"Can they get out of this place?" Carlos laughed evilly. "Although the brat I brought cultivates Space power Upanishad, unless he finds the space crack mouth, he will stay here forever." Pausing for a while, he continued, "Just ignore them for now. After we finished our preparation, we'll capture them."

Christen nodded, trying to comfort the others. "Ibaka. Soul Consciousness can't detect this place. Even if we kill that little Evil Dragon, no one will know it. Yeah, we just need to kill all who were involved. When we return to Agate Star Area in the future, the Evil Dragon Tribe won't figure out a thing."

Listened to Christen and Carlos, Ibaka smiled. "Yeah, it's true. We should finish our business first."

The three souls immediately got back to their work.

They floated outside the massive blue bubble, gathering more bubbles. They shrank the gigantic bubbles and made them merge with the biggest one.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

Blue electric strikes shot out from the bubbles, gathering the small bubbles that the three souls had condensed.

Gradually, under their powers, blue crystals were generated. They pulled the crystals out, making them float by their souls. Those blue crystals were synthesized by some energy inside the massive blue bubble. They must have some special effects.

After the three of them had condensed around eleven blue crystals, their soul energy fluctuated tiredly as if they had consumed a lot of energy.

"Almost done," Ibaka spoke first, his face malignant. "Go, we can drag those juniors here."

Christen and Carlos also stopped, looking at the floating blue crystals contentedly. They returned with Ibaka to find Shi Yan and the other two.

Evil Dragon McGee shouted crazily for a while and then ceased. His massive body wiggled before shrinking, turning into a rough, young man.

Shi Yan was a little surprised. He looked at the dragon transform into a humanoid form. He knew that the dragon had finished.

Members of the Monster Clan were able to transform into human forms after they had reached a specific realm or level.

After McGee finished his transformation, he happily flew towards Shi Yan, patting his shoulder. "You're excellent. You freed me from the soul restraint. Not bad. Not bad! McGee always appreciates favors. When you come to the Evil Dragon Tribe's territory, I will treat you well."

He didn't speak to the Ice woman.

The Ice woman furrowed her bold brows, looking at Shi Yan and McGee talking. She was a bit impatient. "Shouldn't we think about what to do next? The other three won't let us go easily. Perhaps they're coming here already."

Shi Yan and Evil Dragon McGee stopped talking and laughing as they heard her. They became stern.

"Those three are much more familiar with this place. If we fight them here, we won't have any advantages." McGee snorted. His

eyes had some sparks of flames. "I've tried. From the day I met that man, I've always been struggling hard. I'm not his equal opponent. He knows that I won't follow him. That was why he restrained my soul to prevent me from troubling him more."

Pausing for a while, he looked at Shi Yan and the Ice woman. He said, "How about you? Are you sure you can defeat them?"

The beautiful, snow-white face of the Ice woman twitched as she sighed reluctantly. "I'm not like you guys. I came here intentionally."

Shi Yan and McGee were skeptical.

"That man used to be the pride of our Ice Clan. He reached Ethereal God Realm pretty early. To enter Incipient God Realm, he came here. I don't know what is good about this place nor what could help him enter Incipient God Realm. However, I'm the sacrifice that our clan's seniors have sent to him. They want to have an Incipient God Realm expert for the Ice Clan. I'm just a supporting rock for his breakthrough," said the Ice woman with a lonesome face.

"I know him. Christen, right? I've heard of him before." McGee nodded, "Our Evil Dragon Tribe lives not far from the Ice Clan. We know your experts. Christen has disappeared for many years. I didn't think that I would meet him here."

"I used to hear about you too." The Ice woman looked at McGee. "You're the last son of the Evil Dragon Tribe's Patriarch. You're haughty, indeed. You like to swagger around and bully people. Nothing said about you is good."

McGee looked embarrassed. He opened his hands, explaining to Shi Yan. "The Ice Clan and our Tribe are somehow opponents. This is how they've tried to insult and shame me. I have a good reputation. Dude, don't listen to this woman."

Shi Yan smiled and nodded. "It's alright. I don't care whether you

have a good reputation or not. I just want to see if any of you guys have a plan to get out of here. As long as you can find me the entrance, I can bring us out of this place."

McGee and the Ice woman's eyes brightened, looking at him suspiciously.

"I cultivate Space power Upanishad," Shi Yan smiled and explained.

McGee and the Ice woman were shaken.

"I know how to get in here. I know the direction!" McGee said first, "Follow me. I'm taking you to the entrance!"

Then, McGee flew to the area behind them. His body moved like a flood dragon, breaking the blue barrier. He flew fast as if he wasn't afraid of anything in this chaotic space basin, not even the erosive power of the space streamers.

The Ice woman hesitated for a while. Eventually, she urged her power, froze her body, and flew away from the bubble.

Shi Yan followed them.

McGee was a monster. It was a member of the Evil Dragon who was famous for their extraordinary tenacious bodies. The space streamers struck his body like thousands of electric spears. However, he seemed to not be affected. He just continued moving like a lightning strike.

The Ice woman had frozen her body. Even though she was now an ice sculpture, she was still able to move swiftly between the dangerous streamers.

Shi Yan frowned. He knew McGee and the Ice woman were from clans which were famous for their intimidating bodies. It seemed like that woman had quenched her body using some secret technique to adapt to this space. Hovering in between the space streamers, Shi Yan had to use his energy continuously to resist.

"Where are you hiding?" Not long afterward, Ibaka roared behind them. "That brat who attacked me. I want to draw your Origin to heal my soul! Go die!"

The three souls appeared behind them, moving like three spooky ghosts and approaching them from three different angles.

Chapter 961: Inexorable doom

Ikaba, Christen, and Carlos had almost stopped Shi Yan's team at the same time from three different directions. They didn't look friendly at all.

Shi Yan had his face darkened.

According to the Ice woman, the three of them had reached the Peak of Ethereal God Realm. They were just one step away from the Incipient God Realm. That was why they came here.

The three of them were quite familiar with the situation in this area. At the same time, as they were in the soul form, the chaotic currents in the space basin didn't affect them. They wanted to use the perilous features of this area to attack Shi Yan and his partners. Even if Shi Yan's team risked their lives, they wouldn't have a chance to win.

Shi Yan gradually got his mind to turn calm. He looked at the three of them as electric lights sparkled in his mind. If he could cause a dispute between the three of them, making them attack each other, perhaps he would have a way out.

However...

To the other three, they were just the keys to enter someplace, and their bodies were the essential element for them to get to that place. Before they could get into that mysterious place, the three souls wouldn't attack each other.

It wasn't a good idea to raise a conflict between them.

Shi Yan thought seriously, forcing himself to be lucid. He couldn't help but look at Ibaka. Pondering for seconds, he smiled, talking to Carlos, the soul that brought him here. "I've fused with the Origin. It's a part of my soul now. Without the Origin, my soul altar will break. And without a soul altar, I have only a skeleton left." Pausing for a while, he continued, "Is it useful for you if I only

have a corpse?"

Hearing him, Carlos slightly changed his face. He contemplated, talking to Ibaka, "I want to use him to enter that place. You can't hurt him!"

Ibaka snorted, his eyes wicked. "This brat used heaven flames to hurt my soul. Carlos, do you want to protect him?"

"You have the Evil Dragon, and Christen has his sacrifice. What do I have?" Carlos nodded, "I want to use him to get in there. You won't destroy him, will you? If you want to do that, I won't just let you attack him."

Ibaka wore a harsh face, looking at Shi Yan and then at Carlos. He gritted his teeth, grinning. "Alright, Carlos! I'll give you face this time."

Carlos nodded, saying nothing else.

Ibaka sneered, aiming at McGee. A triangular soul seal emerged from his eyes on the face he had condensed with clear facial features.

A blue crystal shot out of his soul, sparkling with a strange light. It looked magically powerful amidst the chaotic space current. The soul seal suddenly enlarged, pressing down on the Evil Dragon.

Evil Dragon McGee in his human form had flames in his eyes. His indignant roar shook the sky. "You dare provoke me many times. You're challenging our Evil Dragon Tribe to life or death. My father will never spare you!"

While McGee was shouting, his body enlarged, turning back to his monster form. His energy shot out like light dots, trying to resist.

Too bad for him, Ibaka was quite familiar with this place. He knew how to subdue the dragon. The soul seal he created could combine with the erosive power of the chaotic space current. It pressed down, restraining the dragon's soul for the second time.

Shi Yan and the Ice woman had spent a lot of efforts to free Evil Dragon McGee's soul. And now, what they had done was just in vain.

McGee quieted down immediately. Just like the first time they saw him, he looked helpless, unable to even talk.

Afterward, Ibaka laughed evilly. "I know the Evil Dragon Tribe's powerful, but so what? Can they get here and chase after me? Wait until I've reached the Incipient God Realm. What can the Evil Dragon Tribe do to me then? The Agate Star Area's vast enough anyways." He seemed unafraid of the Evil Dragon Tribe.

Carlos also sneered, talking to Shi Yan. "Kid, you shouldn't do that again. Or else, I'll confine you myself."

Christen, the Ice Clan's precursor, moved to the Ice woman. He looked at her with his dark, cold eyes, talking deliberately. "The clan has chosen you and sent you here to help me. It's alright that you're not willing to cooperate. However, our clan has its plans. If we can have one more Incipient God Realm expert, our future will be brighter and smoother. For the welfare of our clan, I won't feel guilty about sacrificing you!"

The cold and clear eyes of the Ice woman had a gleam of sorrow. She didn't say anything, just standing idly like a puppet. She looked pitiful and bitter.

She struggled, but couldn't escape her fate.

The Ice woman felt low, tears trickling down her cheeks. A wisp of sorrowful intent swirled around her.

Christen frowned as he felt a little bit reluctant. They were from the same clan. He knew this girl's natural endowment wasn't bad. She had gotten special training from the clan to be his sacrifice. She was designed to help him enter the Incipient God Realm.

"Go," Christen sighed, releasing a cold thought.

An unknown force pulled the Ice woman, flying away.

Ibaka kept smiling faintly. His soul floated above the Evil Dragon's head, dragging it towards the area they had prepared previously.

Carlos looked at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan sighed, then nodded reluctantly. "I know what to do. You don't need to urge me." Then, he flew after the Ice woman and the Evil Dragon, moving to their destination.

Christen laughed evilly and eccentrically. "Well, so you know your place."

Three souls and three bodies slowly moved through the streamers, heading to the biggest blue bubble. On the way, the three souls often discussed, but they didn't mind Shi Yan and the other two.

Shi Yan didn't talk or ask about the features of this area. Sometimes, he exchanged looks with McGee. He could tell that the latter wasn't willing. He had signaled Shi Yan to find a chance to help him.

The Ice woman seemed to have given up. Shi Yan had signaled to her several times, but she didn't reply. Perhaps, she thought that they couldn't do anything. For the sake of her clan, she decided to follow Christen and help him reach the Incipient God Realm.

Shi Yan was indifferent. Although it looked like he had done things in vain to release McGee, he did harvest something. He knew what he would encounter. McGee and the Ice woman had recognized his performance. They thought he could be of help now.

On the way to their target, Shi Yan had always been contemplating. He pondered what he should do next.

He could confirm one thing: Carlos would take his body to enter some place. He would let his soul enter Shi Yan's head. Then, using Shi Yan's body, he could dodge some kinds of attacks.

In other words, before that event, Shi Yan and Carlos would combat in the former's Sea of Consciousness...

Shi Yan looked natural, but he was chilled, discreetly waiting for the right chance. After an unknown time, the six strange existences arrived by a massive bubble, which was as big as an entire life star. It had a powerful suction force.

The rainbow streamers of the chaotic space current and different sized bubbles were congregating at that biggest blue bubble, becoming a part of it. Christen and the other two halted outside the bubble, waiting for something in silence.

Shi Yan, the Ice woman, and the Evil Dragon were watched by three different souls. They floated in different corners of the place, looking at the big blue bubble, as Shi Yan silently released his Soul Consciousness.

Sizzle!

His wisp of Soul Consciousness scattered as if it got electrocuted right when it touched the blue bubble.

His Soul Consciousness vanished, causing Shi Yan's expression to change thinking. He couldn't help but observe the three souls.

This planet-sized bubble had electric beams moving around, which were powerful and intimidating enough to crush all energies and souls without a tangible entity. In other words, those three souls couldn't get inside the bubble with their powers.

Shi Yan now knew why the three souls had to capture the strong creatures with a tenacious body. They needed the key to enter the bubble. He couldn't help but look at Christen, Ibaka, and Carlos. He knew what he had to deal with.

The three souls didn't act impetuously. They were waiting for something in silence. It seemed their chance hadn't come yet.

The bubble became bigger from time to time, just like it had thousands of streams congregating into the vast sea. Silently,

many brilliant streamers descended from the sky like long rivers, disappearing into the bubble. Together, they created a strikingly magnificent space.

After a long time, space currents and bubbles getting into the big bubble became less. Not so many bubbles appeared at the end.

Eventually, no more bubbles arrived. The streamers gathering seemed to have been cut off. They exploded like fireworks, shooting everywhere.

The biggest, most beautiful bubble changed slowly. An infinite number of ice-blue electric beams sparkled, moving like snakes. They created an unknown natural barrier that could destroy everything coming near to the bubble.

"Almost..." At this moment, Carlos hissed. His eyes became excited as if he had been waiting for this moment for so many years.

Christen and Ibaka were also thrilled. It looked like a door of hope slowly opened in front of their eyes. They just needed to cross that door to enter a whole new world – the Incipient God Realm.

The three faces created by three different souls were now gazing at their preys.

Shi Yan and the others became cold and stern under their gazes. They felt extremely insecure, as if their lives were coming to an end.

The other three looked so excited, as though Shi Yan's group were ready sacrifices whose blood and flesh were needed by them to get the recognition of the Mighty Heaven.

"Muahahaha!"

The three souls laughed evilly while dashing out, heading towards Shi Yan, McGee, and the Ice woman. They wanted to enter their prey's Sea of Consciousness and take control of the body.

Chapter 962: Soul changing!

The three souls moved swiftly. At that moment, Shi Yan, McGee, and the Ice woman faced a huge trouble, as the three souls brutally entered their body!

Carlos directly intruded Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness, occupying his soul altar. He then released a wisp of Origin energy, tempting the soul. Shi Yan seemed to have been struck by a lethal hit. He felt like his soul was cut into many pieces, almost scattering into nothingness.

He lost the control of his God Body immediately.

At this moment, Carlos got the control of Shi Yan's God Body, using his thought to manipulate it. He urged Shi Yan's body to move towards that blue bubble.

At the same time, Evil Dragon McGee and the Ice woman were also invaded. Ibaka and Christen got control of their body instantly. They then manipulated the others' God Body, thrusting into the bubble.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

Countless electric beams entangled their bodies when Shi Yan, McGee, and the Ice woman got through the membrane of the blue bubble. The electric beams entered their body through their skin, veins, and bones.

Pain flooded them!

It felt like tens of thousands of steel needles were pricking him at the same time. Shi Yan shivered as his skin was melted. The electric beams had crushed his flesh and energy. McGee and the Ice woman also screeched the moment they got through the membrane. They felt so much pain, as if someone was tearing their intestines.

Beams of hazy blue electricity entered their body, destroying

their energy and flesh on a large scale.

It was much powerful and lethal than the erosive power of the chaotic space currents. This kind of pain that was hard to endure had almost broken Shi Yan's soul.

His body was enduring a pain as though it was burned, making his soul anxious. He couldn't resist Carlos sufficiently, letting him control his God Body wholly.

"Oh?"

After Carlos entered Shi Yan head, he screamed in astonishment. He observed Shi Yan's soul altar, his face getting stern. Different from the other warriors, Shi Yan's soul altar also had three tiers, but it was marvelous.

Floating above the Sea Consciousness, his soul altar was divided into three sections, including the black hole, the heaven flames, and the powers Upanishad. Above the tier of powers Upanishad and heaven flames floated two souls.

Two souls!

Carlos's eyes were cold and dark. He felt a bit frightened as he had discovered Shi Yan's secrets. He gazed at the two souls.

"Kid, what's happened to your soul altar? You've cultivated many powers Upanishad, and you have two souls. What are you?" Carlos felt something had gone wrong. He knew he had caused grudges against someone he shouldn't have provoked.

Shi Yan wasn't free to mind him. A pain just like his heart being drilled was expanding in his entire body. He was shivering as his blood and flesh shattered.

Those intimidating blue electric beams were eroding his entire vigorous body. The God Body he was proud of couldn't endure this harsh attack.

After Carlos had gotten over his fright as he shrilled in

astonishment. "Good! Good! My time's come!"

Shi Yan and the other two didn't know how fatal the bubble's outer membrane with the blue electric beams weaving on it were. But, Carlos knew about them.

That year, Carlos had tried to enter this bubble. He couldn't resist the formidable energy of those blue electric beams. After ten days, his body was eroded, vanishing into nothingness.

At this moment, Shi Yan's body was being dissolved. However, this speed was much slower than what he had imagined.

Carlos' eyes brightened. He could see hope!

Carlos had thought that Shi Yan was only at the Second Sky of Original God Realm, so he wouldn't be able to bring the former inside. As Carlos wasn't so sure, he had always been worried.

But now...

At this moment, Shi Yan's tenacious body was much more than what he had expected. This body was strong enough to resist until they got to the center of the bubble!

Carlos was so happy he had almost cracked up.

Staying inside Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness, Carlos couldn't help but watch McGee and the Ice woman.

McGee of the Evil Dragon Tribe could make it. Although its massive body was hurt severely under the electric beams, and its scales fell off, its body hadn't been eroded yet.

However, the Ice woman couldn't endure it anymore. She was a bloody figure shortly after getting in contact. They could even see her crystalline bones.

Until now, even Shi Yan's body was damaged, though his skeleton was still alright. Apparently, he possessed an endless potential.

Carlos laughed crazily. He had thought that this kid he had just

brought here because he had no other choice around couldn't help him much. Who would have thought that he had picked up a treasure? If it kept going this way, he could even achieve his target.

While Carlos was still excited, he found that the Ice woman's almost doomed. Her ice crystal-like skeleton was almost melted all.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

The Ice woman suddenly moved, gliding toward Carlos.

Carlos darkened his face while staying inside Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness. He could guess Christen's plan. With cold eyes, he started to gather soul energy in Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness to prevent Christen from getting in.

Christen knew that this sacrifice from the Ice Clan wasn't enough to aid him to get what he wanted. Seeing Shi Yan's tenacious body, he had another plan. He wanted to share Shi Yan's body with Carlos. If he hid his soul in Shi Yan's body, he could get to that place.

Swoosh!

A cold light flew out, entering Shi Yan's body like an icicle.

Carlos couldn't help but grin coldly inside Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness. The surging soul energy condensed a barrier in Shi Yan's skull, preventing Christen from entering.

The two of them used to cooperate well. But now, they attacked each other at the critical moment.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

After Christen flew out, the Ice woman's body exploded. It turned into nothingness in this world of blue electric beams.

A soul altar emerged. It was the Ice woman. Right after her soul appeared, it got hit. Just like a beautiful firework, her soul turned into smoke, vanishing completely.

She was over.

"Let me in!" Christen roared angrily. The ice-blue crystals covered his soul, moving around him. These crystals could prevent the electric beams from corroding his soul.

He had condensed those ice-blue crystals to resist the electric beams in this place for a short while. But, they couldn't give a long-lasting protection.

Christen was hurried. He knew he would be doomed if he exposed himself for a long time.

As Carlos and Christen were at the same realm and not much different in terms of competence, they understood the dangers of this place. Carlos had soon set up a soul barrier in Shi Yan's skull. He successfully stopped Christen from entering Shi Yan's head.

While he was still screaming, Christen's spinning blue crystals were slowly dissolved. The energy in the crystals was draining, and they could only resist for a short moment.

"Christen! You go find Ibaka's flesh host. That Evil Dragon's strong enough to bear the two of you at the same time." Carlos objected fiercely. "This kid can endure only me alone. Don't mess up with me. Otherwise, don't blame me!"

"Would Ibaka let me in?" Christen shouted, "I'm too far from him. I don't have enough time. Let me in, quick!"

"Get lost!" Carlos thundered.

"I'll risk my life with you!"

The cold light gathered its sharp energy like an icicle, shooting towards Shi Yan's skull.

"You motherf*cker! You'll break his soul!" Carlos shouted, his face worried. At the moment he was confronting Christen, his control of Shi Yan's soul weakened a little bit.

Shi Yan's consciousness had been confined, losing his control of the God Body. He could only stare at his body being eroded little by

little. He was worried, as if he had a flame burning his heart.

As Christen appeared, the pressure he had to bear was reduced. His soul could get the control of his body back. Although the energy that bound his soul had halted for a moment, this moment was enough for him to do many things.

"ARGHHHHH!"

Inside the terrifying area of the bubble's membrane, Shi Yan roared like an enraged wild beast, forcefully urging the Immortal Demon Blood.

Drops of dark red blood that looked like jewels burned like a fiery flame, flowing through his God Body. An extreme, surging energy flooded his body instantly.

His God Body turned into a mess of torn flesh and blood, releasing sounds like firecrackers. His veins bulged like snakes under his skin. Each muscle of his was like an erupting volcano. Energy surged powerfully in his body, rocketing his energy to an unimaginable level.

As his body was still transforming into the perfect form of the Immortal Demon Tribe, energy ran unceasingly deep inside his head.

At this moment, he touched his forehead.

Sizzle!

His other soul changed all of a sudden, turning into a scorching flame. The formidable heating energy increased without limits, aiming at Carlos.

It was the pure heaven flame generated by the Origin, which could burn down any creature. In his Sea of Consciousness, except for himself, everyone else would be a target.

When the binding that tied his soul was lifted, Shi Yan could control his body as he pleased. His eyes became garnet, and the

blood-red halo glowed on the mark on his soul's forehead. That kind of red light rippled, expanding like water waves.

Carlos felt like he was encountering a spooky ghost in this place. He was so uneasy and baffled, looking at the fire sea snatching over him and the red halo coming closer...

He didn't know why he was so panic-stricken. He felt the extreme fear deep in his soul. He knew that the fire sea and the blood red light were enough to extinguish him. This kind of threat was much more terrifying than the blue electric beams out there!

Carlos' soul in Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness screeched. He didn't dare to try to face the attacks from the soul-destroying powers. He ran away from Shi Yan's brain as fast as possible.

Swish!

Carlos flew out, full of fear and uneasy feelings.

In the next moment, he found that the barrier he had set up in Shi Yan's skull, the one that was supposed to block out Christen, was swept away completely!

He was so scared, his eyes reflecting his extreme fright. He looked at Shi Yan disbelievingly. He felt that he had brought a hungry wolf from outer space to this place.

Chapter 963: Expel

Carlos escaped from Shi Yan's God Body; he was so worried and uneasy. The ice-blue crystals surrounding his soul gradually cracked.

Blue electric beams struck over like snakes, trying to intrude his soul. Just like Christen, Carlos had no place to go. The two souls surrounded Shi Yan, preparing to attack his soul and occupy his body.

"What happened? What are you doing?" Christen communicated with him via soul messaging. "You had subdued his soul. Why did you fly out?"

"You motherf*cker! It's because of you!" Carlos thundered, "If you didn't mess things up, how could that kid get rid of my soul bind? Now, we're over. None of us can get in there again!"

While the two souls were communicating, more blue electric beams shot towards them. They were as big as ropes, slowly tying their souls up. Their blue crystals couldn't help it anymore. They could explode at any moment.

That blue crystals needed a flesh body to promote its effect the most. Without a body to protect the crystals, when they were exposed, they couldn't resist for a long time.

Carlos was afraid of Shi Yan. He pondered, then said, "I've just used up a lot of energy. I need a break. You go for it! You intrude his Sea of Consciousness. As long as you can subdue his soul, we can take over his body!"

Carlos didn't know how strong Shi Yan was, but he did know that Shi Yan's soul was somehow marvelous. The energy released by the latter's soul had terrified him badly.

He wanted Christen to scout out Shi Yan's special powers.

Christen didn't doubt him. He figured that the other had really

consumed a lot of his soul energy. As he didn't know how Shi Yan's soul was, he hesitated for a while before forcefully entering Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness.

Christen made up his mind. He immediately turned into a bunch of cold light, aiming at Shi Yan's forehead and trying to get into his Sea of Consciousness.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Shi Yan's God Body had the cracking resounding from his bones. Under the power of the Immortal Demon Blood, his damaged flesh and vessels were healed.

A garnet halo glowed from his body. Under the effect of the Immortal Demon Blood, his God Body transformed quickly.

Sharp and pointy barbs emerged from Shi Yan's shoulders, elbows, and knees. They jutted out as if they grew directly from his bones, giving him a ferocious look. His transformation was aimed towards the perfect form of warriors of the Immortal Demon Tribe, and his blood Qi became thicker in his body.

Blood Qi and Essence Qi were surging inside Shi Yan, which both threatened and thrilled Christen. He suddenly recognized that with this level of intensity, Shi Yan's body could hold both Carlos and himself to get into the center of the bubble.

Christen didn't hesitate anymore.

Swoosh!

A big beam of cold light with the icy aura drilled into Shi Yan's glabella, trying to get into his Sea of Consciousness.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

Scarlet flames burst out of Shi Yan's eyes, covering his face. As soon as Christen touched this flame, he faced a lethal attack. His soul energy was melted, dissolving rapidly.

The mournful screeching arose from deep inside his soul.

Christen's cold and stern face became blurry, as if making clear facial features was now really difficult for him.

It was just a short moment, but Christen was hurt severely, which had even affected his soul's foundation.

At this moment, there was no chaotic current of space energy. Christen and Carlos couldn't use external forces to attack Shi Yan. They could only use their soul energy.

The two of them were powerful existences which were just half a step away from the Incipient God Realm. Their souls were indeed intimidating. Although they couldn't release their energy at the maximum rate since they didn't have a soul altar, ordinary warriors would never gain the upper hand in a soul fight with them.

However, Shi Yan's soul was mysterious and unpredictable due to the other soul that had fused with the Origin. He could use the Origin to summon the heaven flames easily.

The heaven flames had an extremely fiery power, which was enough to destroy the souls. Christen couldn't endure such a force, so he was hurt badly.

Shi Yan chuckled. He had completed his transformation, and his Immortal Demon Form was deemed perfect.

He suddenly recognized that in this magical area, as long as his soul wasn't ambushed, he could still maintain his consciousness. Those two souls couldn't capture him.

Outside the bubbles were many disorderly streamers. Carlos and Christen knew how to use the power of those streamers to attack him. Thus, he kept calm and didn't start the fight with the two souls there.

However, in the outer layer of the bubble, there wasn't a single beam of streamer for them to use. In other words, Christen and Carlos couldn't use the streamers to attack his God Body.

Unless they attacked his Sea of Consciousness and occupied his soul altar, enchanting his consciousness, he didn't need to be afraid of them.

Understanding this, Shi Yan smiled happily.

Glancing at Christen, who was moving restlessly, and Carlos, who was so frightened, Shi Yan grinned while mocking. "You two, I think you've just wasted your efforts here."

"Damn it! You motherf*cker! You plotted against me?" Christen was burnt, and he got seriously hurt. The blue crystals around him exploded one by one. His soul felt so uneasy, his situation getting worse.

Christen knew Carlos had fooled him. He knew Carlos was forcefully expelled from Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness. As Carlos didn't know how strong Shi Yan was, he used Christen as a shield to conduct a test.

"We don't have much time left!" Carlos thundered.

Christen was shaken. He knew they were birds on the same wire. If they couldn't take over Shi Yan's soul altar, they would be doomed here.

The two of them exchanged looks. They hesitated, preparing for the second murderous attack.

Shi Yan glared at them, not saying anything. His God Body in the Immortal Demon Form moved like a sharp weapon that could pierce through everything. He broke out of the blue area, rocketing in another direction.

Evil Dragon McGee was there.

The two-thousand-meters long Evil Dragon was struggling hard in pain. Blood sprayed out of its body like a shower of rain.

McGee's scaled body had so many blue electric beams wound around it, squeezing into his flesh as if they wanted to grind his

giant body, killing him slowly in a nasty way.

Ibaka had moved inside McGee. Blue crystals covered the dragon's giant head. Those crystals could generate a blue liquid that could shield the dragon's head from the attack of the blue electric arc.

The real function of the ice blue crystal was to protect the soul from external attack with a premise that this soul had a body!

Ibaka used those crystals to cover McGee's head to protect his own soul hiding inside the head from the electric beams.

Although Carlos and Christen also had the same kind of blue crystals, without a body, they couldn't protect themselves. Those crystals were melted, broken almost completely.

At the moment Shi Yan found McGee, he felt the thick blue electric beams start to seep towards his soul altar.

Christen and Carlos hurried to follow him from the other corner, their faces horrible.

Shi Yan halted. His face looked cold as he was searching for something in the void. A starlight arm that dragged a brilliant tail of over one thousand meters grabbed some crystals, pulling them to him.

Those crystals belonged to Christen. As they were hovering around his soul, Shi Yan had taken them.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The blue crystals stuck on Shi Yan's head like some medicinal patches. He looked like he was wearing a bizarre crystal helmet. The moment the crystals covered his head, he could feel beams of electric discharge, which were trying to attack his soul altar, retreat quietly. They didn't swarm over his soul altar anymore. At this moment, his soul was safe.

It worked!

Shi Yan grinned, coldly looking at Christen, who was enraged. "You don't like it? Oh yeah, you can try to invade my soul one more time. I will make your soul perish!"

Christen discolored in fright.

Carlos was also scared. He was baffled, looking at Shi Yan. He was hesitant whether he could continue attacking the other or not.

"Break!"

Shi Yan shouted as a flame flew out of his left eye. A fiery light ball shot out of his eyes, moving like a meteor towards McGee's head.

The flaming light ball suddenly changed, turning into many smaller flames that entered the Evil Dragon's head. Those flames had the aura of the heaven flames, the most scorching flames that could burn down all kinds of souls and entities.

Ibaka screamed, flying away from McGee's head.

He knew that the Origin flame could destroy both his and McGee's soul.

He thought that Shi Yan wanted to kill him and McGee at the same time. He didn't dare to linger. Seeing the incoming danger, Ibaka immediately flew away, avoiding the burning flame.

With wild schemes, those three souls had dragged Shi Yan, Evil Dragon McGee, and the Ice woman here in an attempt to take their body to enter some place.

Up till now, the Ice woman had perished, and her soul and body had both vanished. Shi Yan and McGee were still safe, relatively.

At this moment, the three souls were forcefully expelled. They didn't have a flesh host anymore.

The three souls formed a "品" formation, silently surrounding Shi Yan. Their clear or blurry faces were filled with bone-deep resentment.

"You're just three soul remnants. You can use the space streamers to attack us. But, in this place, you're just three ghosts! Without a God Body or a soul altar, you can't use the power Upanishad. Dare to fight with me? Do you want to die?" Shi Yan was calm and unafraid, just talking coldly and harshly. "If you retreat now, you can escape this place before your soul vanishes. If you want to attack me, haha, don't blame me for striking at your soul until you have nothing left!"

Evil Dragon McGee panted hard; he was still bleeding. He seemed to be enduring a terrible pain. However, his big eyes, which were filled with resentment, were gazing at Ibaka without blinking. "I will remember you! If I survive this time, I will show you how intimidating our Evil Dragon Tribe can be!"

Ibaka's face became chilled.

Chapter 964: I'm sure I'll handle it!

"Then, I have to kill you here!"

Deep in Ibaka's eyes was a chilling cold intent. He shouted, then attempted to attack one more time.

Carlos and Christen were on his left and right. Hearing him, they screamed hurriedly. "Be watchful of that kid! He's not easy to deal with! Don't get into his soul!"

Ibaka studied Shi Yan.

"His soul altar's strange. It's tough. We've had bad experiences!" Christen said. "We must kill him first, and we have to unite to do so. Ibaka, don't be impetuous."

Ibaka was baffled. He turned to Carlos, who nodded with a cold and dark expression.

"Alright! We'll kill this brat first!" Ibaka was cold. He hated Shi Yan, and wanted to kill him out there. If Carlos hadn't stopped him, Shi Yan would have been executed already!

From Christen and Carlos' attitude, Ibaka knew Shi Yan wasn't ordinary. He didn't dare to act rashly, exchanging looks with the other two. They planned to join hands to knock down Shi Yan's soul altar first.

"You should leave," Shi Yan suddenly turned to McGee, who was still bleeding. He hesitated for a while and then muttered, "If you can endure it furthermore, will you move forward to see what's in the center of this place?"

Evil Dragon McGee was surprised. He didn't know why Shi Yan had rescued him many times.

He could explain that Shi Yan had helped him when they were out there because he wanted to use his power to deal with Ibaka's team.

However, when they had got inside the membrane of the bubble, Shi Yan seemed unafraid of the dangers. Apparently, he wasn't afraid of Ibaka's team. McGee didn't know why Shi Yan wanted more troubles to rescue him.

"Just remember, you owe me this favor," Shi Yan chuckled. "Move, I'll handle it. I'll stop them. I'm sure they won't trouble you more."

Shi Yan had his calculation.

From the woman of the Ice Clan, Shi Yan knew McGee was the youngest son of the Evil Dragon Tribe's Patriarch. In Agate Star Area, the Evil Dragon Tribe was famous for its intimidation. It was the strongest branch of the Monster Clan, whose position was crucial.

He wanted to take advantages of its authority!

As time flew hurriedly, it could be dozens of years passing by. Shi Yan didn't know if his friends and family in the Old Orchid Star had been suffering from the disaster or not. However, he was sure that they couldn't live well in the Far West region even if they had survived that catastrophe.

No matter what happened, he would never forget the resentment. Anyway, the Agate Star Area was different from the other star areas. With only himself alone, he couldn't raise any storm in the Far West region.

If he could have a powerful support, he wouldn't need to worry too much. He could find shelter for those who had survived.

Since the Evil Dragon Tribe was a mighty force, it could be a force he could count on. If he had a good relationship with McGee by helping him escape this area, it would be easier for him in the future.

Shi Yan was trying to create a good relationship with McGee.

"Are you sure you can handle it?" McGee didn't believe in him.

"With only your power, are you sure you can deal with the three of them? Are you sure?"

"Don't worry, just go. I'll help you resolve them. Don't worry! I'm sure I can handle it."

Shi Yan smiled, comforting the dragon. "You monsters don't know how to engage in soul fighting. You can't help me with anything even if you stay. You'd better leave early. Even if I die here, as long as you can escape, you will take revenge for me later. What do you think?"

McGee wasn't an idiot. Listening to Shi Yan's explanation, he quieted down. Suddenly, he nodded and said nothing more before leaving.

Ibaka's team didn't attribute much value to McGee. In their eyes, even if the Monster Clan was strong, they were of no use in this unique space.

As long as they could clean Shi Yan up, they would have plenty of time to kill McGee. Thus, none of them prevented him from leaving. They all focused on Shi Yan.

However, the direction Evil Dragon McGee had taken made them chilled.

McGee didn't run away. He followed Shi Yan's words, and he was confident of his tenacious body. The Dragon rocketed towards the center of the bubble. He wanted to see what the three souls had been yearning for in that area.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

Clusters of flames flew out of Shi Yan's eyes. Those flames were scarlet, orange-red, and gold. They looked like clusters of clouds, bobbing by Shi Yan. They made the place look like the morning haze that was vividly alive.

Those flames were the power of the heaven flames originated from the other soul. It was using the power of the flames to create

a sea of fire.

Shi Yan stayed in the center of the fire sea. He was busy but still deliberate, looking at the three souls while grinning. "Come try me."

Not many kinds of energies could damage the soul. Shi Yan didn't know if his Space power and Star power could do it or not, but he was sure that the scorching flame could exhaust the soul. It could even burn the soul, making it turn into nothingness!

Indeed, when he used his other soul as the source of energy to diffuse clusters of flame continually, the three souls became hesitant.

The three faces of the three souls became heavy. They slowly moved forward, carefully touching the flame. None of them dared to rush.

Shi Yan released a flow of Soul Consciousness.

Boom! Boom!

The blue electric discharge immediately rushed towards Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness. Shortly, it was smashed down, sending numbness to Shi Yan's brain.

With cold eyes, Shi Yan quieted down. He didn't release Soul Consciousness from his main soul anymore. Eventually, he knew whichever Soul Consciousness it was, it would be destroyed in this area.

However, the flaming sea created by the heaven flames of the other soul wasn't affected. Clusters of flames connected each other, creating a vast sea of fire with Shi Yan in the center.

The haughty Ibaka was the first one touching the heaven flame as he came to a red-orange flame. His clear facial features blurred, as if it were twisted by the wind, making him look terrible.

Ibaka was frightened. He immediately moved away from the

flaming sea, his face grim while looking at Carlos and Christen.

"This brat's tough, indeed!" Ibaka gritted his teeth while glaring at Carlos maliciously. "We should have killed him when we were out there! Now we don't have the space streamers to use. Tell me, what should we do?"

The three souls hovered by the edge of the fire sea, trying to find a slit to jump in. However, after moving around for several times, they hadn't found any entrance.

The heaven flames generated by the Origin were fatal to their souls. Thus, they didn't dare to act rashly.

The blue crystals around the three souls had bigger cracks under the power of the blue electric arcs.

Ibaka's team became more restless. They knew they couldn't linger anymore. They knew what kind of tremendous pressure they would have to bear after their crystals were gone.

"Get lost," Shi Yan smiled mockingly, his voice unfriendly. "If you don't dare to risk your lives and kill me, what can you ghostly souls do? Haha, your defense will be gone soon. I can see that your doomsday is near."

The Immortal Demon Blood was being combusted in his body. He was using up his blood rapidly.

Shi Yan was still maintaining the Immortal Demon Form. It was perfect, but it was consuming a lot of energy as the electric beams were attacking each corner of his body.

In this area, the God Body would be eroded with every passing minute. The hazy electric beams were like sharp swords madly destroying his God Body. If his body weren't strong enough, his condition would be much terrible. He would have been dissolved, turning into nothingness.

The massive energy stored in the Immortal Demon Blood was accumulated with Shi Yan's great efforts. Each drop of Immortal

Demon Blood was pretty precious. In this place, Shi Yan was consuming Immortal Demon Blood every second.

If it weren't necessary, Shi Yan didn't want to waste his energy to maintain the Immortal Demon Form. It was a torture to his body anyways.

"Seems like he can't endure any longer." Carlos' eyes brightened, grinning. "Even if his God Body could be more tenacious, he couldn't use it forever. Just like us, he's consuming energy rapidly. Once he can't endure it anymore, his consciousness would be affected. We will have our chance, right?"

Ibaka and Christen were shaken, nodding quietly.

"Oh, you don't treasure your lives." Shi Yan felt funny. Initially, he didn't want to waste much energy. Anyway, the other three, the ones that were like the arrow at the end of its flight, thought that he would soon finish the energy of his God Body.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

Surging flames gushed out of Shi Yan's eyes. The fiery power of the flame was scorching hot, covering the entire place as if it wanted to burn down everything else.

The clusters of flame hovering around his body were revived by his other soul. They formed three different rivers, extending towards Carlos, Ibaka, and Christen respectively.

He attacked proactively!

Carlos's team discolored in fright. They were helplessly frightened. As they were scared of the fire sea, they hurried to move away.

Shi Yan laughed coldly while his God Body gradually disappeared into the fire sea. However, the three flaming rivers were still moving as though they had eyes, following the three souls closely.

Ibaka and the other two could only run for their lives.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Their blue crystals all exploded. While the fire rivers were chasing after them, their souls were exposed. The blue electric beams seized the chance and entangled them all.

Their thought of killing Shi Yan vanished. They were way too frightened, returning using the old track. They didn't dare to enter further. The three of them were filled with sorrow and despair. Their chance, which could appear only after several thousand years, was available to the others. They were so bitter that they wanted to vomit blood.

The electric beams moved like sharp knives in their souls, as a drilling-heart pain flooded their soul.

Christen faced the worst damage. Shortly after, he halted as his soul was weakened. Under the blue electric beams, his life seal scattered and he perished quickly.

Ibaka and Carlos were still flying hastily. They wanted to get rid of this dangerous place while their soul energy was draining rapidly.

Shi Yan had retrieved the heaven flame energy, flying at his max speed towards the deeper place inside the bubble. He wanted to see what was in there, what was worth the other three to spend so much efforts for thousands of years.

Chapter 965: Soul Refining Pool

Inside that massive blue bubble was a brilliant world. It had clusters of silky, thread-like space streamers that gathered in an immense blue pool at the center.

The pool situated in the center of this strange world floated in the void. It continually radiated waves of immense blue light. This kind of blue light seemed to have magic that could soothe the soul and make people calm and relaxed.

Shi Yan and Evil Dragon McGee weren't in good condition.

McGee had many wounds on his body. Half of the scales on his dragon body had fallen off. He was moving in the void as if he was at his last moments of life. Sometimes, he gathered great effort to wave his tail.

Shi Yan was a little better. He had resumed his normal condition after consuming half of the Immortal Demon Blood in his body. However, he wasn't damaged as the demon blood had healed him. His body was still vigorously firm.

Compared to Evil Dragon McGee, his damage taken was trivial.

McGee looked at him as if he was looking at a monster. His huge eyes gazed at Shi Yan without blinking. "Dude, you... You look alright. Your body is much more tenacious than mine, isn't it?"

Shi Yan beamed a reluctant smile. "It has been so many years and I haven't dared to relax. The efforts I've made in training my body wouldn't be less than your efforts. Hmm, do you know the Immortal Demon Tribe?"

Evil Dragon McGee's eyes brightened. He suddenly laughed. "You are from the same tribe as Blood Devil? Impossible! Haha, we are predestined indeed."

"You know Blood Devil?" Shi Yan was surprised.

"Of course!" McGee nodded continually, smiling cheerfully. "Blood Devil has a good relationship with my father. The Monster Clan and the Demon Clans are allies in Agate Star Area. Blood Devil's territory isn't far from our Evil Dragon Tribe's land. I've been there before."

"Seems like we're predestined." Listening to him, Shi Yan also smiled.

"You... Are you Blood Devils' illegitimate son?" Evil Dragon McGee's eyes twinkled. He spoke with surprise. "Not possible though. I didn't know that Blood Devil still had some relatives. Yeah, bro. How are you related to Blood Devil? Why have I never heard about your title before?"

Pausing for a while, McGee cried again. "No wonder why Blood Devil has an extremely tenacious body. Although I've never met him before, I know that his body isn't less tough than my father's. No wonder why you were able to get in here."

"Do you know where we are?" Shi Yan contemplated for a while and then asked. "How can we get out of here?"

"I don't know," McGee beamed a forced smile. "I've brought us here unconsciously. Ibaka captured me. I got here from a forbidden land of the Evil Dragon Tribe. It's a space crack of Agate Star Area. It doesn't have earth and heaven energy, solar, moon, or any other stars. I only know the place I got through to get to this place. We can start from there."

Shi Yan quieted down, feeling hopeless.

Splash! Splash!

As they heard the water splashing, the immense blue pool in the center was releasing waves of blue light. Those ripples calmed down Shi Yan's soul, immersing him in a magical sea, which gave him an indescribably pleasant feeling.

He couldn't help but look at the immense blue pool. His eyes

concentrated, asking. "That blue pool seems to have a magical power that can clean the soul. Do you feel the same thing?"

"Yes, I do!" McGee nodded continually, "I feel so comfortable under those blue ripples. My soul feels cozy and refreshed. It feels like my soul is washed up. It's wonderful. I think it has something marvelous out there. Should we check it out?"

"How are your wounds?"

"There is no problem. As soon as I have enough energy to recover, my wounds will heal soon. The recovery ability of the Evil Dragon is well-known in the entire Agate Star Area."

"Okay. We'll get to that pool and check it out."

Shi Yan and Evil Dragon McGee sauntered towards the hazy blue pool.

The closer they got to the pool, the more pacific and refreshed they felt in their souls. This level of soul satisfaction was hard to describe.

Waves of blue light rippling from the pool had the marvelous power of cleaning the soul. Shi Yan felt all impurities in his mind and soul clean up. He felt very relaxed and revitalized.

"Soul Refining Fluid!"

A weak but surprised voice reached Shi Yan from the Blood Vein Ring. The Ring Spirit seemed to be very happy. "You... You found a place where there is Soul Refining Fluid!"

The Ring Spirit sounded thrilled. However, its soul messaging was paused as if talking to Shi Yan had consumed a lot of its energy.

"Soul Refining Fluid? What's that?" Shi Yan knitted his brows. He hesitated for a while before asking, "How are you?"

"Still fusing the memory. I need more time and more energy." The Ring Spirit replied fast. Then, it explained excitedly. "The Soul

Refining Fluid is the God Water used to refine the soul altar. It's marvelous, indeed. It's the most precious treasure in the big star areas. This is Original Incipient Grade water. It's so magical."

"Explain simply!"

"Okay! When a warrior creates the soul altar, his soul altar is contaminated. As his power was increasing along with his understanding of power Upanishad and training of the soul, the soul altar will become more impure. In fact, the cultivation of the soul altar has the same method and principles with the cultivation of the God Body. We need to discharge the impurities to maintain the crystal-clear soul altar. The clearer the soul altar is, the better and deeper the warrior can understand his power Upanishad. It's a big help to the soul, indeed.

"Soul Refining Fluid is a divine water that can clean your soul altar. It will help you discharge the impurities and refine the soul altar. It can make your soul altar crystal clear!

"The transparent soul altar that doesn't have contaminants is the basis to break through to Incipient God Realm. Only when you get your soul crystal clear will you see the mysteries that help you enter Incipient God Realm. When a warrior reaches Peak of Ethereal God Realm, he needs to clean his soul to have a successive breakthrough.

"To you, the Soul Refining Fluid is more useful! I intended to tell you to use your best to collect Soul Refining Fluid. You need to clean your soul altar once. As you've cultivated Devouring power Upanishad from my Master, you can quench your soul altar many times. However, the Devouring power Upanishad will always generate dregs and contaminants. Those things will contaminate your soul altar. Although you can't see or feel them, they still affect your understanding of powers Upanishad. It will make your breakthrough sluggish.

"More importantly, as your realm advances, you will swallow

more souls. Although your soul altar will be tougher, it will have more contaminants, which will blind your inner world. When that happens, it will be very difficult for you to comprehend the powers Upanishad. When it comes to the acme, your soul altar will break. You will fall into bedevilment.

"Soul Refining Fluid is the greatest treasure that you need the most! You can use this divine fluid to discharge the dregs or contaminants generated by the Devouring power Upanishad. This way, you can keep your soul altar clean. After a period of time when you've swallowed a specific number of soul altars, you must clean your soul altar once!"

The Ring Spirit quickly explained to Shi Yan. Although it was feeble, it had made itself clear enough.

"Release the soul altar and immerse in Soul Refining Fluid. Don't think about anything. You don't need to release the powers Upanishad. Clean your soul altar. It's the most important thing you must do now.

"If you can maintain a crystal-clear soul, my memory combining speed will be faster. Go do it. Seems like I can be restored soon."

". . ."

The Ring Spirit sent its messages directly into Shi Yan's soul. It seemed hurried, urging Shi Yan to clean his soul altar and get rid of the dregs and contaminants.

Shi Yan was surprised. He thought it was unbelievable.

The soul altar was the basis of a warrior. It was the source of life and consciousness. He had never thought that he could cultivate it like how he quenched his body. As his energy and realm were increasing, his soul altar was likely contaminated.

No warrior could maintain a crystal clear soul altar. Every time he advanced his power and every time his power Upanishad had a breakthrough, dregs and contaminants were generated.

When the Devouring power Upanishad swallowed the soul altar and converted it into magical energy, it also conveyed the contaminants in the other's soul altar. Gradually, Shi Yan's soul altar would have layers of pollutants, which would erode his soul and dirty his soul altar. His breakthrough speed would be stagnant.

Soul Refining Fluid could magically solve this problem. It was also the key for Peak of Ethereal God Realm warriors to breakthrough to Incipient God Realm. Only when they had a crystal clear soul altar would they find the secret for their crucial breakthrough.

After listening to the Ring Spirit's explanation, Shi Yan now understood why Carlos and the other two had to come here at any cost. They wanted to use Soul Refining Fluid to clean their soul and advance to Incipient God Realm.

Evil Dragon McGee's big eyes widened. The closer they came to the blue pool, the better he could feel the magical energy that could pacify his soul. However, McGee didn't dare to act rashly. He didn't know if that pool had something dangerous.

He didn't know the conversation between Shi Yan and his Ring Spirit as he was focused on that pool. He was hesitant whether or not to release his soul and go in there to explore.

While the dragon was still hesitant, Shi Yan and the Ring Spirit had finished their conversation. Shi Yan smiled and spoke to him. "I think this pool can benefit our soul. Alright, I'm going there to check. If nothing bad happens to me, you can go too."

Then, he didn't wait for McGee to answer. Shi Yan's soul altar flew out, heading to the hazy blue pool of Soul Refining Flood.

Splash!

Shi Yan's soul altar fell directly into the pool. An indescribable, marvelous feeling flooded his soul. Shi Yan felt so comfortable that he wanted to moan.

Shi Yan's soul smiled until his eyes narrowed above the soul altar. He nodded to Evil Dragon McGee, indicating this place felt very good.

McGee was cheered up. His huge eyes had an unclear excitement. He didn't wait for Shi Yan to signal and he hastily released his soul. The dragon's soul looked like a chunk of turbulent air or more like a gray, light ball that fell into the misty blue pool created by Soul Refining Fluid.

The exceptionally marvelously comfortable feeling flooded into his soul, making McGee relax. He felt so good that he wanted time to stop right at this moment.

Chapter 966: Black Water Star

In the center of the blue pool, Shi Yan's soul altar and McGee's soul were floating. Wisps of deep blue fluid seeped into their souls. They could see beams of gray contaminants like gossamer being pushed out of their souls.

Evil Dragon McGee had stopped being thrilled a long time ago. He stayed calm and pacified, taking in the nutrients of Soul Refining Fluid.

After the two of them sent their souls into the blue pool, the pool slowly shrank.

Washing the soul and cleaning dregs and impurities in the soul was magical effects of Soul Refining Fluid. While their souls were being quenched, they felt refreshed and comfortable as if they were soaking in divine water. Each of their nerves was strangely relaxed.

They didn't need to do anything; they just simply enjoyed. They didn't need to think much. Soul Refining Fluid did all the magical things for them.

The ash-gray beams of impurities oozed out from their souls, evaporating in the void.

Shi Yan's soul altar became transparent. It was crystal clear and sparkling like top quality glass. It had no beam of dirt and it looked as exquisite as a heavenly masterpiece.

Shi Yan's soul altar had many dregs and contaminants. He was taking in Soul Refining Fluid much faster than McGee. The Monster Clan didn't value soul cultivation and McGee didn't have a complete experience in this aspect. Thus, he didn't absorb Soul Refining Fluid as much as Shi Yan did.

A significant proportion of the blue pool of Soul Refining Fluid had fiercely flooded Shi Yan's soul altar, washing and quenching it.

The divine fluid helped him discharge all impurities in his soul altar. It made his soul altar empty and fulgent. It looked like he had just formed the soul altar. It was much lighter and brighter.

The empty and transparent soul altar could make the warrior more sensitive in comprehending power Upanishad. It could also advance the power Upanishad.

Warriors with a soul altar would have their soul get dirty gradually as their power and realm increased. The dregs and contaminants would coat their soul and mind. Gradually, this kind of impurity could drive the warriors out of the right cultivating track. At that moment, their understanding of the power Upanishad would be slowed down.

Especially in Shi Yan's case.

He had swallowed so many soul altars. Although the energy he had harvested was much more than he expected and could help his soul altar be tougher and become almost unbreakable, it brought more contaminants to his soul altar.

Soul Refining Fluid was much more useful to him than anybody else. It was like a gift that was particularly bestowed to warriors like him.

The blue pool slowly shrank. After an unknown time, the pool full of Soul Refining Fluid was all absorbed. Shi Yan had taken in three-fourths, and McGee took the other quarter.

However, McGee's soul was cleaned. Now he had a deeper understanding of the Evil Dragon Tribe's power.

The pool disappeared, leaving two floating souls, which were slowly digesting the magical energy they had just taken. They could feel their empty and peaceful soul without much thought.

After a while, Shi Yan's soul altar moved and disappeared into his God Body.

He opened his eyes, stretching his body. He smiled as he was

satisfied.

McGee's soul swayed, flying back to his two-thousand-meters body. Right after that, McGee moved his body. His bones sounded like metal clanging. McGee shook his head and his tail. The huge eyes of the monster sparkled with surprise. He couldn't help but shout. "Awesome!"

His eyes looked like they had turned into beautiful green jewels, which didn't have a dot of impurity. They were transparent and Shi Yan could even see the bottom.

It was the visible sign of a cleaned soul altar.

McGee quieted down and sensed. He felt happy, looking at Shi Yan. He talked seriously, "Bro, I don't know how to thank you enough. Without you, I could have died. You've rescued me twice. You brought me here to refine my soul. I..."

Shi Yan smiled, talking deliberately. "I may need your help later. If I come to you and ask for your help one day, I hope you won't deny me."

McGee nodded continually and cheerfully. "Bro, you can find me for help at any time. It's my honor. As long as McGee can do it, I will never deny it from you." After pausing for a while, McGee added, "You know, our Monster Clan values friendly sentiments. We won't just have things done carelessly. If you need me, please don't hesitate."

"Sure," Shi Yan nodded strongly.

Both Shi Yan and McGee had taken advantage of Soul Refining Fluid in ways that they couldn't describe. Their clear souls made them more sensitive to power Upanishad. Their souls seemed to have upgraded to another level.

While Shi Yan was checking his condition, he found that his Sea of Consciousness didn't change much. However, it was calm and peaceful. Each flow of his Soul Consciousness had connected to his

soul. They became his extended limbs. He had never experienced this kind of connection before.

In the tier of power Upanishad, the Star, Death and Life, and Space powers seemed to have some subtle changes. Although they opened to different directions, they seemed to become a body and a part of his soul. Shi Yan could sense the feeble modifications of his powers Upanishad.

"Ah!" McGee screamed in surprised. He turned around, his face skeptical. "Look!"

Shi Yan turned around, his face baffled.

The outer layer of the blue bubble had become a murky, gray area. There was no crazy electric discharge anymore. Fine space slits appeared in the outer layer of the bubble. They could see the real world out there through the slits.

"It is collapsing," taking a deep breath, Shi Yan closed his eyes to sense. He knew that this space crack was changing silently. The space slits appeared, leading to the real world.

"There!" McGee's eyes brightened as he stormed over a space slit. Lights sparkled in his eyes as he said, "It looks familiar. It must be Black Water Star. It's not far from our Evil Dragon Tribe's territory!"

Shi Yan followed McGee's line of sight.

A narrow space slit slowly expanded. They could see a seething black sea through the slit. This seawater was rare, indeed. Scattered here and there were some small islands, which looked like tiny boats floating in the sea.

This black sea was shoreless. It seemed to occupy half this life star. Shi Yan didn't see any continent. He saw just a few islands and all of them were somehow small and ugly.

"The ocean covers Black Water Star entirely. Anyway, it's the hustle and bustle of the undersea." Seeing Shi Yan watching,

McGee explained immediately, "Bro, can you... take me to Black Water Star? I heard you cultivate Space power Upanishad, right?"

McGee was uncertain, looking at Shi Yan with hope.

He didn't know Shi Yan's real attainment on Space power Upanishad. If Shi Yan looked hesitant, it meant that Shi Yan didn't have a profound understanding of Space power. McGee would feel very worried then.

Moving through the space slit was a dangerous operation. If they were careless for just a moment, their souls would perish. If Shi Yan wasn't sure, McGee wouldn't take this risk.

". . . Black Water Star..." Shi Yan mumbled. He frowned and then said, "It isn't far from Devil Blood Star, is it?"

Devil Blood Star was the Blood Devil's headquarter. Before Wu Lan left, she told him that if he could escape, he must go to Devil Blood Star. As long as he could get there, no expert of the Far West region would dare to trouble him anymore.

"It's true. Black Water Star and Devil Blood Star aren't far from each other. Also, it's pretty close to our Monster Dragon Star." McGee nodded continually.

"Alright. Then we'll go there," Shi Yan chuckled. He looked at the enlarging space slit, urging his powers.

Beams of space energy were like gossamers in his body that shot toward the space slits like sharp, pointy knives. A brilliant light passage created by his space energy appeared. It looked like a door leading directly to Black Water Star where there was an immense black ocean.

Evil Dragon McGee was shaken, speaking happily. "Bro? Can we get there?"

Shi Yan smiled, "I'm going first. You just need to follow me." Then, he stormed towards the magnificently radiant passage. His God Body was entangled with many beams of vivid light. However,

the chaotic space currents didn't attack him anymore.

McGee's eyes brightened. He didn't wait until Shi Yan disappeared completely and hurried to follow after him.

One human and one dragon moved through the light passage. They gradually disappeared from this magical, chaotic space basin, leaving no trace.

Not long after they left, the magical deep blue world shattered. It became a ruin in the space basin. Streamers shot out like fires or a crazy meteor shower.

Above the immensely vast black ocean of Black Water Star appeared a space slit. Two figures were flung out of the slits, violently falling into the water.

The space slit disappeared little by little as if streamers were mending it. Eventually, the void was resumed.

Shi Yan and McGee floated in the icy cold seawater, facing the sky.

It was a starry sky with several suns and moons arranged above the star, beaming strange but splendid lights that illuminated this world. The black seawater was also shining. It looked like shattered light that lit up this whole world.

"Ha ha ha! I've survived!" Evil Dragon McGee looked at the familiar environment. His massive dragon body was continually wiggling in the sea and rising waves. He looked like a water monster which was trying to swagger, messing up everything.

Suddenly, some figures started to emerge from the black sea. They were warriors of the Sea Clan, holding sharp weapons. They were angry as they wanted to send punitive forces against the ones who were wreaking havoc here.

However, after they found that it was Evil Dragon McGee, they

discolored and said nothing. They then sank down, getting back to the seabed. It seemed like they knew how intimidating the Evil Dragon Tribe was so they didn't dare to cause any grudge against McGee.

McGee didn't mind them. He moved and stretched his body in the water to vent out his excitement. He had stirred the sea area around him so much that it was like there was a disaster.

Black Water Star also had dwellers. However, as they knew McGee was strong, none of them dare to bother him.

After rolling around for a while, McGee calmed down. He felt bored all of a sudden. His massive body transformed into his human form, becoming a brawny man. He laughed cheerily, "Bro, have you ever been to Black Water Star?"

Shi Yan shook his head.

"Go, I'm taking you to a nice place. We're going to throw a welcome party for you." McGee laughed crazily, moving through the water impetuously.

He seemed to be very familiar with Black Water Star. He knew where to go. After he had turned into a humanoid form, he was still domineeringly wild, charging around violently.

Shi Yan felt funny, shaking his head begrudgingly and following him.

Chapter 967: Evil Dragon's Natural Instincts

Evil Dragon McGee seemed to be the distinguished guest of Black Water Star. He knew this place well. He was charging around violently, didn't mind the others. He had bumped into warriors of different races along the way but none of them dared to stop him.

Evil Dragon Tribe had a strong force with a high reputation around this place. McGee was the youngest son of the Evil Dragon Tribe's Patriarch. He was usually stubborn and domineering. He belonged to a small group of people on the top of the pyramid.

However, the target McGee was looking for seemed to be very far away. They had run for a long time but hadn't reached the place yet.

Shi Yan became impatient.

They had gone through a lot of struggles to get out of that space crack. Shi Yan had an urge to use the Child formation of the Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation to connect to the Giant Tribe, Fei Lan, and Leona. He wanted to know what was happening to them lately.

Dozens of years were perpetual to the warriors who could live for several thousands of years. It was just a blink of an eye.

However, it was like an endless amount of time to Shi Yan. A couple dozens of years were enough for the Giant Tribe to undergo tremendous changes. He didn't know if his fellows could get over that challenge safely. He felt very worried and hurried.

Thus, he halted, frowning and talking to McGee. "I want to find a rest stop. I need to do something."

McGee also stopped, turning his head to look at Shi Yan and smiling. "Don't rush. We're almost there. Hmm, we'll get there in two hours max. It's a small island, but it's the center of Black

Water Star which is the most bustling area."

Frowning, Shi Yan nodded.

After two hours.

They saw an island in the middle of the shoreless black ocean. The ground of this island was as black and tough as iron. However, this place still had some bizarre floras and members of different races working on it.

Most of them belonged to the Monster Clan, Sea Clan, Human Clan, and Demon Clan. It looked like they came here to trade for materials.

This island was called Black Stone Island. It had many buildings, which looked more like grand palaces. Those buildings were really tall. Their heights could be dozens or hundreds of meters. Shi Yan could see many people from different races, including the Sea Clan, Monster Clan, Demon Clan, Human Clan, and some other Clans move around in Black Stone Island.

Strange battleships anchored in the sea area by Black Stone Island. They looked like ancient beasts lying underwater. All looked huge and ferocious.

People were transporting brilliant and colorful cultivating materials from the battleships to the buildings in this small island.

"Black Water Star is the territory of the Sea Clan. This life star doesn't have land but there is an immensely vast ocean. Anyway, there are many marvelous cultivating materials undersea, which can't be found in any other stars. The Sea Clan exploits those materials and trades with other warriors in the surrounding life stars." McGee smiled and explained. "Black Stone Island is the market. You can enjoy many things here. We can find a lot of beauties in different clans. You've saved me twice. I'll make you more comfortable here."

McGee laughed, heading to the most luxurious palaces in the

center of Black Stone Island.

Shi Yan was surprised, smiling bitterly inwardly. He hesitated but still followed McGee.

When they walked to a palace, a Sea Clan guard shouted all of a sudden, his eyes brightening. "Young Master McGee! Is that you?"

McGee laughed as if he had cracked and was going crazy. "Give me the most luxurious and expensive place for me. I want to treat my distinguished guest. Let the girls in. I want the best for my bro."

"Young Master McGee, it... Your father has been looking for you... Haven't you... gone missing?" the guard looked at him, trying to find his words.

McGee was baffled for a while, scratching his head and mumbling. "Oh, I forgot this. Right, it's been dozens of years since he's seen me. He should be worried."

However, he forgot this shortly after, speaking deliberately. "I'm heading back to Monster Dragon Star soon. You shouldn't mind my business. Get me the room."

The guard smiled happily and nodded his head continually while leading the way.

This place was a palace made of glistening, five-colored stone. It was lit up by the suns, moons, and stars everywhere in the sky. The splendid lights made this place stunningly luxurious.

The palace was divided into many blocks and the best places were behind the palace with different villas. Each villa had a hot pond, which was directed from the hot spring. The water's temperature here was warm and comfortable year round. With many precious stones and mineral substances, it had a magical effect on the warriors when they cultivated here.

Each of the villas was built with different and rare materials. They looked luxurious and elegant. They had miniatures of

mountains, streams, and bridges. The walls of these villas had formations that could gather earth and heaven energy.

McGee took Shi Yan directly to a villa behind the palace. After he found a seat, he called loudly for good food and liquors.

Shortly after, beautiful women in opulent clothes arrived beaming. Their exquisite, jade-like hands were holding trays of fruits and wine, their eyes twinkling.

Shi Yan could see Merpeople of the Sea Clan, Fox Race women of the Monster Clan, Charming Race women of the Demon Clan in this group. Those clans were famous for their significant number of beautiful and charming ladies. Those ladies wore flimsy, silky clothes, flashing their snow-white skin. They giggled, leaning on McGee and massaging his shoulders and his legs. Their delicate, charming faces looked servile as they were trying to win his favor.

McGee had a constant smile on his face. After those women came, his hands were too busy lingering on their ample bosoms and rear ends. His eyes were lustful and he laughed constantly.

Some beautiful ladies of the Charming Race and the Fox Race around twenty years old approached Shi Yan. They looked vivid and fresh like newly grown flowers.

Shi Yan frowned discreetly, glancing at McGee and his lecherous behavior. He thought that the Evil Dragon Tribe lived up to their lustful infamy. Besides their tremendous combat competence, they were also infamous for their licentious behaviors in the entire Agate Star Area.

McGee's bearings were the natural instincts of the Evil Dragon Tribe.

Staying in Agate Star Area for a long time, Shi Yan knew that this high-level, vast star area had many races which didn't originate from Grace Mainland. He knew there were Evil Dragon Tribe, Ice Clan, Wood Clan, Fire Clan, and other bizarre clans. Agate Star

Area had Human Clan, Demon Clan, and Sea Clan.

He understood that the ten Ancient Clans of Grace Mainland didn't exist only in Grace Mainland.

Outer space was infinite indeed. With countless star areas, there were as many life stars as grains of sand. Different races originated and derived into different shapes. Perhaps the ten Ancient Clans of Grace Mainland appeared for a long time in other star areas. Also, it was possible that the Ten Ancient Clans in Grace Mainland had come from other star areas through some space channels or some magical inheritances.

In short, Grace Mainland wasn't the central star area. Although it was an ancient continent, it wasn't unique.

Agate Star Area had more than one hundred races including the known ten ancient races. Moreover, they weren't from Grace Mainland. Of course, there should be some clans that had departed from Grace Mainland and settled down in Agate Star Area like the Giant Tribe.

However, those clans from Grace Mainland weren't critical forces of Agate Star Area. They were even weaker.

McGee and the famous beauties of the pagan tribes were still drinking and teasing each other. They wanted Shi Yan to enjoy this time with them.

Shi Yan's smile was reluctant and faint. As he was worried, he couldn't be in a good mood.

McGee could see that he was down. He was bewildered for a while and he pushed the Fox girl in his lap away with a frown. "Bro, what makes you down? If McGee can help, I won't refuse. You can be honest with me."

Shi Yan smiled, finished half of his glass in just one gulp. "I'm from the Far West region. I have many friends. I don't know where they are now. I'm worried a lot."

McGee was baffled. He contemplated for a while and then waved his hand, dismissing the ladies. "Get out now!"

The beauties had gone, leaving only McGee and Shi Yan in the spacious villa.

"How may I help you?" McGee said seriously when there were only the two of them in the room. "As long as I'm capable, I will definitely help you. You tell me. How can I help you?"

"Is it safe here? Will we be disturbed?" Shi Yan was hesitant. He released his Soul Consciousness skeptically. His eyes brightened. "It can prevent soul detecting?" He looked at the walls as he found that he couldn't get through the barriers unless he used his Space power Upanishad.

Shi Yan suddenly realized that this place wasn't just simply a luxury tavern. The one who had designed this palace should have some background or attainment.

"Don't worry. No one can disturb us here. I know the owner of this place. Members of the Sea Dragon Tribe of the Sea Clan built this place. You can tell me anything here," McGee nodded.

Shi Yan smiled. He got up, walking to the center of this grand villa.

The Fantasy Sky Ring flashed and the Child formation of the Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation emerged beautifully like a precious lotus throne. It descended to the ground. Divine crystals were immediately inlaid neatly on the formation. All of a sudden, the Child formation glowed. Space energy diffused shortly after.

McGee was astounded, hissing. "Bro, you're not ordinary at all. This kind of linking formation is priceless!"

Shi Yan nodded, his face became stern. He extended his left hand, shaking. He didn't dare to create the connection.

He didn't know whether the Mother formation in the Old Orchid Star was taken or not. It has been dozens of years. He didn't know

if the Giant Tribe, Fei Lan, Leona, and the others were able to escape. He was scared. He was scared that he would get nothing after he connected the formation. He was afraid that he would see something he didn't want to see.

"Bro, why you are hesitant?" McGee was curious.

Shi Yan sighed inwardly. His face became resolute. Beams of space light meandered, shooting out from his palm and congregating at the Child Formation.

Fierce space energy fluctuated from the Child formation. The imposing villa was shaken as if it couldn't endure it.

Thump! Thump! Thump!

All of a sudden, the metal doors of the villa pounded. A voice that could soften people's bones arose. "McGee, come out here. Your sister is here to see you!"

McGee retracted his neck. He slightly discolored. He shouted hastily, "Don't! I'm taking a shower!"

"It's alright. I like watching you shower the most."

Boom!

The massive doors broke. In the radiant light, a slim body stormed in.

Chapter 968: Gu Mo

McGee discolored. Looking at Shi Yan releasing space power to connect the formation, McGee had a gleam of irritation in his eyes.

Frowning, Shi Yan stopped his operation, flew out of the Child Formation, and steadied himself inside the grand villa. He coldly looked at the one who had just arrived.

It was a petite woman who didn't look like she was more than eighteen years old. She had two dragon horns on her head. She wore a suit of black armor, which lingered on her healthy bronze skin. Her ruby eyes were sparkling beautifully.

The little girl had a soft and cute voice. She spoke tender words. However, she was full of energy, which wasn't less than McGee.

"Ah!"

The girl let out a low cry. Looking at the Child formation in the hall, her ruby eyes glowed. She laughed cheerfully, looking at McGee. "Why did you bring a space teleport formation here? Hehe. McGee, you've disappeared for a couple dozens of years. What are you playing? You father worried a lot about you. He has asked our Brutal Dragon Tribe to keep an eye on your whereabouts."

Brutal Dragon Tribe?

Shi Yan was surprised. He couldn't help but observe the girl, feeling amazed discreetly.

The Monster Clan in Agate Star Area was a mighty clan. Although it had many branches, the two most powerful branches of Monster Clan were the Evil Dragon Tribe and the Brutal Dragon Tribe. They were the pillars of the Monster Clan.

The Brutal Dragon Tribe was another Tribe of the Monster Clan which was famous for its mighty power. The Brutal Dragon Tribe had a good relationship with the Evil Dragon Tribe. They were sustainable allies who moved and retreated together. When the

Monster Clan had any issue, these two tribes would join hands and solve the problem.

The petite girl had utterly transformed, but the tremendous blood Qi from her body was significant enough for Shi Yan to recognize her identity.

Warriors of different races found it hard to reach the toughness level of their bodies. At the same time, only the Monster Clan considered body cultivating as their main path of martial art. And only the strong branches of Monster Clan could reach such a level.

"Gu Mo, why are you in Black Water Star?" McGee snorted, pouting his lips. "And don't be all sisterly to me. I don't have such a rude, unreasonable, and mindless sister like you. Spit it out. What problem have you caused this time?"

"Problem?" Gu Mo laughed cheerily. "What problems would I have? I'm worried about you. I want to see how you are doing. So why don't you welcome me?"

"I won't!" McGee looked like he had a headache. "If you don't have any business here, don't disturb me. It was so hard for me to get back. I wanna relax a bit here."

Then, McGee waved his hand as if he couldn't stand her anymore. He signaled Gu Mo to go away.

Gu Mo of the Brutal Dragon Tribe still had a smile on her face as she assessed Shi Yan. She spoke to him tenderly. "Little brother, how do you relate to McGee? I just wanted to warn you as soon as possible. McGee is a spoiled kid. You won't have anything good happen if you stay with him. You'd better draw a clear line with him soon."

Shi Yan frowned, his face cold and stern. He didn't respond to the girl.

Gu Mo snorted. She wasn't pleased with Shi Yan's manners. She turned around and rolled her eyes at McGee. Suddenly, she looked

reluctant, her voice more tender. "McGee, I want to discuss something with you."

"Later," McGee was bewildered. Afterward, he spoke up, "Wait until my bro I and here finish our business. Then, I will talk to you. But I want to make myself clear first. Don't you dare use me as your shield or ask me to be your partner in crime ever again."

Shi Yan was amazed.

From McGee's attitude, Shi Yan could tell that his relationship with this Brutal Dragon girl wasn't shallow. It seemed like she used to use him before. He was pissed off. However, due to the good relationship between the Evil Dragon Tribe and the Brutal Dragon Tribe, he previously got along well with Gu Mo. That was why he was a bit moody now.

"Don't! I like a man. He's arrogant. But my father favors him a lot. He doesn't even mind me." Gu Mo let herself loose easily. She didn't even mind Shi Yan's presence. She talked tenderly, "I don't know what he likes. He's very quiet. I don't know what he thinks. I think you guys are all men so it would be easier for you guys to connect. Can you help me make him open up a little bit to see what he likes?"

McGee was astounded. He looked at Gu Mo disbelievingly and stammered, "You... you're joking, right? I have never seen your face like this before. Do you really like him? Impossible! The savage little girl of the Brutal Dragon Tribe likes someone? You never favored any man. Is he... is he from Monster Clan too?"

"Yeah, he's one of us. Anyway, he isn't from Agate Star Area. He came to our star area ten years ago. Now, he's a fighter of our Brutal Dragon Tribe. My father said that he has endless potential and that he would become the new star of our Monster Clan." Gu Mo was a little shy. "He's very cold and harsh. In the past ten years, he has fought everywhere for our Brutal Dragon Tribe. He has earned our respect. Lately, my father had a bizarre idea. He wants

to give him a life star."

"Wow, impossible!" McGee became interested. "Your father has sharp eyes, and he has high expectations too. A foreigner can earn his appreciation that much? Is he really that excellent?"

"Yeah," Gu Mo nodded. She hesitated for a while before continuing. "I think he's a hybrid. He has the blood of the Dark Clan though. His power is strange and wicked. He is definitely a member of Monster Clan, but we've never seen his branch in Agate Star Area before. He's called... Ghost Hunter."

Shi Yan was struck. He heard only buzzing sounds in his head and he didn't know what Gu Mo and McGee were talking about.

Ghost Hunter! It was Ghost Hunter!

When he left Grace Mainland that year, Ghost Hunter, Holy Spirit God, Devouring Gold Silkworm, King of Demonic Insects had gone to gather the Monster Clan's inheritance. After that, Shi Yan lost his connection with them.

After he had returned, he had found them bitterly in Grace Mainland. He could only see the inheritance altar on that mountain range and his beasts.

It has been so many years. How could Shi Yan stay calm hearing news of Ghost Hunter in Agate Star Area?

Actually, Ghost Hunter was the first mount he had tamed. His Great Grandfather had brought him from the Demon Area.

Ghost Hunter had a unique origin. He was the hybrid of Heaven Ghost of Underworld and Hunter Dragon of the Demon Area, which was the strongest and most bizarre dark monster and demon beast of the Underworld and Demon Area in Grace Mainland respectively. From the day he followed Shi Yan, Shi Yan always felt that he was an extremely fearful creature.

Shi Yan could never imagine that he could find Ghost Hunter's whereabouts in Agate Star Area. They had been apart for so long.

Ghost Hunter... Why did he work for Brutal Dragon Clan of Agate Star Area? What happened to them in Heavenly Demon Mountain Range? Where had he been before he came to Agate Star Area? What happened to him?

Shi Yan was perplexed, staying put. He was immersed in shock. He didn't say anything for a long time.

McGee was still talking to Gu Mo. Gu Mo was explaining and telling him how Ghost Hunter of the Brutal Dragon Tribe had won in many battles. "He is pretty fierce. Ever since he arrived, he has always been engaging in combat. He's bloodthirsty and brutal. He's more brutal and savage than our Brutal Dragon Tribe! My father favors him a lot. He has joined many fights for our tribe. His achievements pile up day by day, which is a threat to our clansmen. At this moment, he's about to break through to level 12. I think... it won't take too long."

"About to reach level 12? Which means he's at the peak of level 11? Nah, not much different from the other warriors at Peak of Original God Realm. Gu Mo, you're at level 12. Why do you need to please him?" McGee was surprised.

"I couldn't defeat him," Gu Mo smiled embarrassedly. "I didn't feel right when my father favored him more than me. I fought him once when no one noticed. He beat me up. He almost killed me. At that moment, I found his charisma. Only this sort of man would be able to match me!"

"Holy moly!" McGee was astounded. "He's one level lower than you and he almost killed you? Gu Mo, have you not made any progress these years?"

"You think you're strong?" Gu Mo sneered. "Even if it were you, you would be defeated! If he wasn't so outstanding, how can I yearn for him that much? Our Monster Clan isn't similar to other races. Not many tribes can do this kind of different-level combat. Especially since he defeated me. Among tribes of Monster Clan, our

two tribes are the strongest. If he can defeat me, a Brutal Dragon member, he can beat you up too. He can even kill you!"

Gu Mo spoke resolutely as if it the absolute truth.

Apparently, McGee didn't buy it. He sneered, shaking his head. "He's from a small, unknown tribe. You think he can defeat me? What kind of joke is that! I think that since you like him, you didn't use your full power. That was how he defeated you. Oh, women. You will do everything your heart tells you to do!"

"Bring it on!" Gu Mo was enraged. She smiled coldly. "He's in Black Stone Island. Do you need to test him? If you can defeat him, I'm sure I won't trouble you anymore. And I will cover your ass for those dirty things you've done."

"Are you sure?"

"Sure!"

"Deal!"

McGee was boosted. He rubbed his hands, grinning. "Since you have my tail, you often threatened me that you will report me. I'm so irritated. Well, I can teach your loved one a lesson. You will see how strong I am. Later on, you won't babble and tag along anymore."

McGee shot up. He was excited about having a fight. However, he seemed to recall something, turning to Shi Yan embarrassedly. "Bro, you stay here. I'll get back to you soon. Don't worry. No one will disturb you here. I will tell them and take care of you."

Gu Mo of the Brutal Dragon Tribe didn't mind Shi Yan. She just glanced at him and then turned around.

In Gu Mo's eyes, Shi Yan was just a warrior at Second Sky of Original God Realm. Evidently, he wasn't worth mentioning. As one of the strongest branches of the Monster Clan in Agate Star Area, the Brutal Dragon Tribe was famous. They had keen eyesight.

"I'm going with you." As McGee and Gu Mo were still baffled, Shi Yan put the Child formation back into his Fantasy Sky Ring. He followed them quietly, speaking deliberately. "I also want to widen my knowledge."

"Hey boy, remember to stay far away from them. The man I like is very strong. He won't care about killing you. As you are McGee's friend, I'm kind enough to remind you. You shouldn't court yourself death!" Gu Mo frowned, kindly giving him advice.

Shi Yan nodded nonchalantly.

"McGee, your friend's realm isn't high. How did you meet him?" Gu Mo didn't care about Shi Yan's feelings, speaking to McGee casually. "You should be careful. Don't infuriate him. Otherwise, even I won't be able to stop him. He... he doesn't listen to me. He doesn't listen to anybody. Sometimes, he even goes against my father's orders. This man is very haughty... But I really like him."

Gu Mo was infatuated with the man as if she had been sinking deep into the sea of affection that she couldn't control.

Chapter 969: Ghost Hunter at This Moment...

A slender, flying-bird battleship anchored on the black stone South of Black Stone Island.

This battleship was more than two thousand meters long. It looked like a bird that had spread its wings and was flying. This battleship was sleek and slender with a small head, small tail, and broad wings. It was made of some snow-white, jade-like bone. A beautiful halo was moving along the battleship as if it had magical water murmuring.

Experts of the Monster Clan in their human forms were sitting neatly on that battleship. They looked strange and eccentric, indeed. Some had long heads and long horns while others had long tails and thick fangs.

Although they had humanoid forms, they still kept the best prominent feature of their races. All looked brutal and mighty.

A young man wearing black-gray garments sat on the top of the battleship. He was indifferent and cold like a rock. His black-gray long robe was filled with bizarre embroideries, which looked more like wiggling worms. His long hair flew with the wind, giving him a peculiarly wicked look with a bunch of snakes on his head.

The outlines on his face looked like they were carved right out of marble with distinctive edges and corners. His pupils were terrifyingly red.

Several hundred Monster warriors lined up behind him. They were looking at their leader with great respect and admiration which came from the bottom of their hearts.

In Monster Clan, the Brutal Dragon had many outstanding and robust young men. However, those vigorous and wild men were all followed this young one.

The young man sat quietly. His eyes looked straight ahead without a real focus. He seemed to be absorbed in his thoughts. The others didn't know what was in his head.

"That's him!" Gu Mo halted, pointing at the man in the distance from the forest. Her beautiful eyes bright as she muttered, "What do you think? Manly and cool enough, right?"

McGee frowned and snorted, "Haughty!"

"You should gather your guts and fight him." Gu Mo smiled tenderly and relaxingly. "We don't need a reason to fight between the members of Monster Clan. It's like discussing martial arts. You can go now."

"I do want to see what he's got." McGee laughed evilly. His body shot out of the forest like a sharp sword. An explosive blow came from his arms.

Giant trees exploded. Pieces of wood and rock shattered everywhere as they couldn't stand the shockwave of his movement.

A deep ditch appeared underneath McGee while he was flying. It looked like a massive weapon had plowed this terrifying ditch.

Shi Yan halted quietly. He was very surprised when he looked at his face, which was somehow both similar and strange to him. He had a complex mood and he didn't know what to say.

After dozens of years apart, his old partner was now a mighty fighter of the Monster Clan. He had accumulated tremendous powers in his body, which helped him grind the entire Black Stone Island into powder easily. From his competence, Shi Yan could tell that he could be compared to Peak of Original God Realm warriors. He also had the ability to challenge level 12 Monster experts.

This meant Ghost Hunter wouldn't be in a disadvantaged situation if he fought Shi Yan.

It was just a couple dozens of years. Ghost Hunter's progress

wasn't less than his. He didn't know what difficulties Ghost Hunter had experienced or the number of bloody battles he had undergone to reach his current intimidating level.

Shi Yan's pupils shrank as he observed the Monster experts lining behind Ghost Monster. He didn't skip anyone of them.

However, he was dispirited as he found that none of them were familiar except for Ghost Hunter.

King of Demonic Insects, Devouring Gold Silkworm, and Holy Spirit God weren't with Ghost Hunter. Shi Yan's mood sank. He felt a little worried.

Ghost Hunter sat silently on the birdlike battleship. A gleam of brutal deeds flashed in his eyes as he saw McGee coming fiercely. He stood up.

Fierce and imposing energy shot out from an arm that looked like it was molded out of iron and steel. It felt like many volcanoes erupting at the same time. This kind of Blood Qi and energy was unimaginable!

Boom!

His strike seemed to be able to crush the sky. Explosions reverberated around Black Stone Island. The small island was shaken grumbly.

His punch seemed to seal the whole world. His fist enlarged continually like a steel mountain, which burst off the air by its formidable pressure. With the earth-shattering momentum, his strike dimmed the light from the suns and moons.

In Shi Yan's and Gu Mo's eyes, the world seemed to not exist anymore. They could see only that punch, which had torn space and was filling each corner of this island and each Sea of Consciousness while sending pains to other warriors.

Shi Yan's soul altar shook. He felt frightened.

He could never have imagined such power from Ghost Hunter!

His body sealed this space with a changing power. Within his punch, he had tens of thousands of energy threads combining. Eventually, he would urge his power to the acme. This was the brutal force that only warriors with exquisite attainment in their body's energy could release.

Shi Yan thought that he couldn't urge his body's energy to this mighty level.

Explode!

Tens of thousands of light beams shot out, running like dragons or snakes in the air. They forcefully stopped McGee on his way.

This punch was covered with entangling light beams. It looked like a light ball, exploding directly in front of McGee's chest.

In this earth-shattering commotion, McGee's body sank and then fell to the ground.

Crack! Crack! Crack!

A massive cave running several thousand meters deep into the ground opened the moment McGee landed. It led deep under this small island.

The entire Black Stone Island was shaking as if a great earthquake was shaking it violently. Many iron or stone building shook as if they were about to collapse. Many warriors of different clans screamed in fear. They immediately got out of where they were and headed to this area to see what was going on.

Standing on the battleship, Ghost Hunter wore a cold and harsh countenance. He had a savage aura. His distinctive facial edges were icy cold, which made him like an ice sharp sword drawn out of its scabbard.

He hadn't moved yet. Only his hand buzzed as the bones, flesh, and vessels inside made noise. It was the sign of energy urged to

the utmost.

McGee fell into the massive cave. Water splashed in that cave from time to time. It seemed like the Black Stone Island had been drilled.

McGee hadn't reacted. He looked like he was dizzy after that strike. He didn't fly out from that cave under the black sea. Staying in the dim-lit cave, McGee lifted his face to look at Ghost Hunter, his face baffled.

Gu Mo balled her soft and small hands. Her beautiful eyes were cheerful and vivid with different brilliant colors. She eyed Ghost Hunter, giggling and screaming excitedly. "How about that? More domineering than McGee?"

Shi Yan nodded unconsciously.

"You should stay far away from them. McGee will be enraged shortly. He won't control himself when he battles. If they move their battle site to your place, I'm sure you won't be able to resist the shockwave with your realm." As Gu Mo saw him agree with her idea, she kindly reminded him. "Although you have the soul altar, without power from your soul altar, your feeble body won't be able to stand the shockwave of such potent forces. Since you have a good relationship with McGee, I advise you to leave this place early. You are different from me so you don't have the mighty power of our tribe."

Shi Yan frowned and cocked his head to look at her, talking deliberately. "It's okay. I want to observe."

The reason why Shi Yan had come here but hadn't met Ghost Hunter yet was that he wanted to see to which level Ghost Hunter had achieved at this moment. Of course, he wouldn't retreat before learning this.

Gu Mo's beautiful eyes had a gleam of disdain. She snorted, talking impatiently. "Forget it. I'll protect you. I don't want McGee

to blame me for lacking a code of brotherhood."

Shi Yan chuckled, but he didn't say anything else.

Many warriors of the clans on Black Stone Island gathered. They consisted of Monster Clan, Demon Clan, Sea Clan, and Human Clan.

They came with varying means. Some rode beautiful war chariots or flying carriages. Some just flew over, floating in the air. They were young and old, and men and women. There were senile warriors as well as excited and elegant ladies.

"Ghost Hunter! Ghost Hunter of the Brutal Dragon Tribe!"

"Whom is he fighting? Ghost Hunter is quite the character. Thirteen years ago, he emerged in this place. He'd killed so many members of the Monster Clan. He used their blood to strengthen himself. His deeds are brutal and domineering. The Brutal Dragon Tribe had sent several troops to clean him up. They had sacrificed a lot but got nothing. In the end, the Patriarch of the Brutal Dragon Tribe came to talk to him. We don't know what they spoke about, but afterward, he became a member of the Brutal Dragon Tribe. He has battled everywhere for the Brutal Dragon Tribe."

"Yeah, I heard that he's not from the Monster Clan in Agate Star Area. He's a hybrid. Very cruel and dangerous."

"The Brutal Dragon Tribe's fortune got better since they got such a savage subordinate like that. I heard the Patriarch of the Tribe wanted to recruit him. He said that this young man would become one of the leaders of the Monster Clan in the future."

"He's blinding me."

". . ."

Members of different clans gathering here all lived in the nearby life stars. Listening to Ghost Hunter's legends, they acclaimed continually.

In their eyes, Ghost Hunter, the new star, was an unpredictable character with endless potential. He'd become the sharpest and bloodiest sword of the Brutal Dragon Clan. His name was enough to scare the Brutal Dragon Tribe's enemies out of their wits.

When they arrived, McGee had been struck into the cave, so they didn't see who Ghost Hunter's opponent was. They didn't know that it was McGee, the bad McGee of the Evil Dragon Tribe.

Splash Splash!

A backwater current shot up into the sky from the cave. This current looked like a giant black dragon, circling Black Stone Island. All of a sudden, it stormed toward Ghost Hunter.

McGee slowly emerged in the center of the black current. His face was dark and calm like the water. He looked stiff and focused as if he had to have this dangerous combat against Ghost Hunter.

"McGee! It's Evil Dragon McGee!"

"It's McGee!"

"It's the haughty McGee of the Evil Dragon Clan!"

"A fierce battle to be expected!"

The onlookers recognized McGee. They felt excitedly hyped. They knew that they could expect a fantastic battle. They were all stirred up.

"McGee looks serious," Gu Mo also became stern. Her beautiful eyes gazed at the battle, mumbling, "Finally, I have a chance to know your real competence. McGee... you're strong than me... I'm so thrilled. I wonder if you could defeat him..."

Shi Yan was surprised, glancing at Gu Mo and contemplating.

The Monster Clan appreciated the strong. Monster females had always linked competence together with masculine attractions. From her bearings, Gu Ma seemed to have a real feeling for Ghost Hunter and no other intentions.

Chapter 970: Shi Yan's Guarantee

Giant McGee burst out of the cave. His body was hidden in the center of the black water dragon. He moved like a rainbow with the powers of a thousand men pressing down maliciously on Ghost Hunter.

Rattle! Rattle!

The black dragon was still moving in the air. The dense steam shrank, condensing earth and heaven energy around into one flow.

Earth and heaven energy of Black Stone Island seemed to all be drawn. The other warriors felt their souls trembling hard. They had a hallucination of their soul altars and consciousness sinking deep into an unknown tornado. Some couldn't even control their bodies, moving toward the black water dragon.

To the warriors who cultivated physical strength, when they had reached a specific level, they could easily gather earth and heaven energy and accumulate in their bodies.

McGee was a member of the Evil Dragon Tribe. He had always cultivated his body. At this moment, his understanding and controlling of surrounding energy had reached an exquisite and profound level.

Ghost Hunter stayed cold, looking at McGee taking in all the energy of Black Stone Island. He frowned. He finally became serious.

McGee was definitely a strong opponent with whom he could have a good fight.

He didn't know McGee or the reason why McGee suddenly wanted to battle him and he didn't have any interest to do that.

However, today Ghost Hunter had become a captain of a troop of Brutal Dragon Tribe. He had several hundred bloodthirsty Monster experts under his command. They only listened to his orders and

submitted to him wholeheartedly.

Ghost Hunter got such support because he was always in the vanguard of each battle. He had never retreated and seemed to have no fear of any force. Even if he had to confront a warrior whose realm was higher than his, he would still have the guts to fight the other directly.

He would never lose his face in front of his troopers.

Thus, Ghost Hunter wasn't hesitant at all. His face darkened as if he was actually enraged.

ROAR!

A low but sharp roar tore the sky. Ghost Hunter soared up into the sky from his battleship. He was like a sharp weapon that could pierce through everything, shooting towards the giant black dragon.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

The earth-shattering explosions reverberated in each corner of Black Stone Island. Low-realm warriors shivered, their souls trembling uneasily.

The energy of the shockwave was dazzling, shooting and exploding everywhere from the sky.

Each strike of the shockwaves left a bottomless hole on the ground of Black Stone Island. Those shockwaves even boiled the seawater, sending black water arrows up into the sky.

Black Stone Island was poorly damaged quickly. Thousands of holes were created. Many ancient trees were struck down. Rocks were smashed. There were even thousand-meter deep ditches drawn on the island.

The onlookers were frightened. They couldn't help but activate their power Upanishad. Then, many colored light protections appeared.

Gu Mo discolored. She cursed under her breath. Her eyes sparkled as she grabbed Shi Yan.

A dark green light cage made of pure energy covered Shi Yan like a big green bowl. It sheltered him from the shockwaves of the other two's attacks.

Shi Yan was surprised and he discreetly looked at her.

It seemed like Gu Mo and McGee were close. She gave McGee face by protecting Shi Yan. This meant that Gu Mo did respect McGee. She wasn't as rude as she had treated him.

The dark light cage was like a rainbow partition. Flows of green energy weaved with each other, creating a thick mesh net. The energy in this net was incredibly dense. When Shi Yan released his Soul Consciousness, he felt like he had sunk into a muddy puddle. He couldn't hear anything.

McGee and Ghost Hunter were still bumping and attacking each other in the void. They presented Black Stone Island a fantastic firework party with tens of thousands of magnificent lights.

McGee wasn't an impulsive person. While he was fighting Ghost Hunter, he intendedly left Black Stone Island, moving further to the South Sea.

Shortly after, McGee and Ghost Hunter had left Black Stone Island, floating and sinking in the endless sea. They didn't turn back to their monster forms as they were still fighting using their humanoid forms. They were like two mighty war chariots barging into each other. They made the seawater boil, raising a tsunami, which was thousands of meters high.

"McGee has made progress," Gu Mo agreed quietly. She looked at Shi Yan next to her. "He didn't focus on his cultivation. He had a lustful head. He often messed around. I didn't expect that after dozens of years, his application of power has reached this subtle level. Hmm, hasn't he had secluding cultivation lately?"

Shi Yan was amazed, but he just smiled and said nothing.

Only he knew that McGee's progress wasn't because of his ascetic cultivation but his soul being cleaned by Soul Refining Fluid, which had made his understanding of power much better.

"Well, it won't affect us anymore," Gu Mo looked around and then parted her lips, drawing.

The dark green light cage covering Shi Yan turned into a flow of green liquid, disappearing into her cherry lips. Gu Mo's eyes brightened when she suddenly flew towards the South beach of Black Stone Island. She landed firmly on a big rock.

Shi Yan hesitated for a while. Eventually, he flew up, standing by Gu Mo and watching.

Shortly after, the other warriors gathered from the previous battle site. They stood on the rocks scattered around the place to discuss. All were curious, watching the battle between McGee and Ghost Hunter.

They were all excited, debating with each other to see who would be the winner. Some thought Ghost Hunter was stronger while others assumed McGee's power was fiercer. They had so many different opinions for their furious debate.

Anyway... none of them were curious to know why McGee and Ghost Hunter had that fight.

This surprised Shi Yan a lot. "The battle between the members of the Monster Clan doesn't need any reason to occur? You don't have any rules?"

Gu Mo nodded, talking deliberately. "Of course! Our Monster Clan refers to fight. Not only to foreigners but also to our own kinds. The method we apply to select the commander for each troop is only fighting. The stronger is the winner. If you think you're stronger than your captain, you can challenge him. If you succeed, you will take his place immediately."

Pausing for a while, Gu Mu smiled tenderly yet arrogantly. "When we select the Chief of the Tribe, we also use this method. In both the Evil Dragon and Brutal Dragon Tribes, the Chief is always the strongest. There's no exception! Monster Clan uses this challenging system without any rule to maintain intimidation and welfare of the tribes. That's how we earned our position in Agate Star Area."

Shi Yan nodded silently, "Special, indeed."

The Monster Clan had used a savage method, indeed. However, all the members of the clan respected this method and they lived up to it. Unlimited challenging combat could promote their physical strength. Although the Monster Clan had many disputes, this method could keep this clan thriving unceasingly as their warriors could earn position, status, and wealth through their real competences.

From some aspect, this kind of encouragement was wise and it was the method to protect the foundation of a prosperous tribe.

"Young Lady," a low, grumbling roar arose. They then saw a member of the Monster Clan come to them. He didn't look at Shi Yan. He asked Gu Mo directly. "You stimulated McGee, didn't you?"

Gu Mo smiled and admitted it. "Yeah, I asked McGee to battle against Ghost Hunter. I wanted to see how strong Ghost Hunter was!"

Shi Yan turned to see this Monster expert. He was three meters tall with a spiky tail growing from his waist. His white hair draped his shoulder. He wore a set of heavy armor, which gave people a feeling of looking at an imposing mountain. This man was one of the warriors on the flying bird battleship who had sat right behind Ghost Hunter.

He seemed to be a member of Ghost Hunter's squadron.

"Master Ghost Hunter came to Black Stone Island this time as ordered by our Patriarch. He has an important mission. Young Lady, you have a temper and you acted unreasonably. As Ghost Hunter and McGee are fighting, I'm afraid that it will cause a dispute." The man wore a cold face. He wasn't intimidated by Gu Mo, the daughter of the Patriarch of his tribe. He said in his low tone. "McGee is from the Evil Dragon Tribe and Master Hunter is our Brutal Dragon Tribe's warlord. No matter what happens to any of them, it will cause a conflict between our tribe and the Evil Dragon Tribe."

"McGee does have a sense of propriety. He won't escalate the battle to a critical point where one of them would die." Gu Mo smiled, waving her hand casually. "Werther, you worry too much. Nothing will happen unexpectedly."

The Monster expert called Werther darkened his face, snorted and then said, "McGee knows how to behave, but I'm not sure if Master Ghost Hunter does!"

Gu Mo was surprised, looking at him bewilderedly.

Werther took a deep breath. A gleam of fear flashed in his eyes, which were really big like two bells. His iron-armored tail wagged uneasily on the ground, which crushed the rocks there into powder. "Young Lady, you're not close to him, so you don't know his characteristics. If he's enraged, he won't show mercy even if McGee is the son of the Evil Dragon Tribe's Patriarch. He... he will kill him for sure!"

"Really?" Gu Mo's smile froze. She looked panic-stricken.

Werther looked at Shi Yan with cold eyes. He lowered his voice, hissing. "Our Master! He used to quarrel with a troop of the Evil Dragon Tribe because they provoked him... saying that he was cross-breed. And... and..."

"What was the result?" Gu Mo felt uneasy.

"The result was that Master had chased that Evil Dragon Troop for tens of thousands of miles and killed them. When we arrived at the scene, we saw no intact corpses. All of them were ripped apart. The scene was so haunting and nauseating." Werther stooped. His body shivered as if he didn't want to remember such a nightmare. "Our Master is very extreme. He doesn't have good feelings for the Evil Dragon Tribe. It's possible that he could kill McGee in front of many people! Young Lady, your unreasonable deed could initiate a war between the Evil Dragon Tribe and us!"

Gu Mo was scared. She suddenly realized how stupid she was to create this mess. She felt so worried, jabbering. "I'm going to talk to McGee and you talk to Ghost Hunter. We should stop them."

"I can't dissuade Master," Werther beamed a forced smile, shaking his head. "You can't, either. I came here to ask you to notify our Patriarch. He must come here personally to solve this. Or else, when Master Ghost Hunter gets mad and kills McGee, the alliance that has been established tens of thousands of years between the Evil Dragon Tribe and us will be smashed from that moment."

Gu Mo's small face paled. She bit her lower lip as she was worried and uneasy.

She looked at the vast sea of Black Water Star. She found that the battle of Ghost Hunter and McGee had come to the critical moment of life and death. Possibly, in the next moment, one of them would be hurt badly, and then one of them would be killed savagely.

Gu Mo was frightened. She knew that if the Brutal Dragon Tribe and the Evil Dragon Tribe tore their treaty and turned their backs to each other, what will happen to the entire Monster Clan. It means that the Monster Clan will be divided too, right?

Her small, soft hand shivered as she was about to take something from her clothes. She wanted to contact her father so he could solve this matter quickly.

"Don't need to be hurried." However, at this moment, Shi Yan spoke up after keeping quiet for a long time. "I guarantee Ghost Hunter won't act unreasonably."

Gu Mo and Werther were baffled, looking at him oddly.

Chapter 971: Stop there!

"Young Lady, who's he?"

Monster Werther frowned and snorted disdainfully, his face cold, "Heavy words!"

Gu Mo was baffled as she looked at Shi Yan skeptically. Her bold brows furrowed as she didn't know what was going on.

"Even our Chief has to use affection to persuade Master Ghost Hunter and use a soft voice. Only then will Master consider if he likes it or not. What are you? How dare you assure Master Ghost Hunter won't do things rashly? Kid, you don't want to live anymore, do you? How dare you brag with such haughty words?"

Werther felt so angry that his face was reddening. It looked like he would take action at any minute.

He had followed Ghost Hunter for around ten years, and had wholeheartedly supported the latter. He had a strong belief that Ghost Hunter would become the future leader of Monster Clan, who would bring the clan into a whole new era.

His worship didn't have a logical reason. However, in Werther's mind, Ghost Hunter was unique. He admired and respected his leader's bloody and cruel deeds. Sometimes, he thought that Ghost Hunter's bloody way was tougher and manlier than the Patriarch of the Brutal Dragon Tribe!

Ghost Hunter was his God!

"You don't know about the situation, so don't babble." Gu Mo told Shi Yan off, talking seriously. "Even if your friendship with McGee isn't shallow, you can only advise him. Ghost Hunter isn't someone you can talk into doing something. You can't, and neither can I. I think my father can subdue the Ghost Hunter a little bit."

The great ally of the Brutal Dragon Tribe and the Evil Dragon Tribe was the pillar of the Monster Clan in Agate Star Area. If the

two tribes had a war, it would be a badly unpredictable catastrophe.

Brutal Dragon Tribe and Evil Dragon Tribe had many other members of the Monster Clan depending on them. Many smaller branches of the Monster Clan had submitted to the Brutal Dragon Tribe and Evil Dragon Tribe. If the two clans became opponents, the Monster Clan would be divided into two forces. If they had a civil war, Monster Clan would move towards a decline eventually.

This wasn't something Gu Mo could take the responsibility of!

Werther was so angry he wanted to kill Shi Yan. In his eyes, Shi Yan was now the biggest enemy of the Monster Clan. He was the trouble-maker with the purpose of dividing the Monster Clan. He even thought that Shi Yan was the reason why McGee provoked Ghost Hunter.

"I don't care who you are. You must die anyway!" Werther took a deep breath as he prepared his lethal attack. He wanted to kill Shi Yan at any cost.

Gu Mo discolored, hurrying to stop him. "Don't! It's not because of him. He's McGee's friend, and he likes him a lot. Werther, you shouldn't interfere. I'm going to tell my father!"

"I said I can stop this. You can choose to believe me or not." Shi Yan frowned, but he was actually happy inwardly.

He had never thought that Ghost Hunter could have excellent achievements in Agate Star Area. He had earned the Brutal Dragon Tribe's trust, who considered him as their future leader.

After that, he flew towards Ghost Hunter and McGee, talking without turning his face around to look at Gu Mo and Werther, "Ghost Hunter and I are old acquaintances."

Werther and Gu Mo were bewildered. They were still perplexed, looking at his back skeptically. However, they didn't know what was going on.

"Go! We should go there and talk to them!" Gu Mo hesitated for a while before deciding quickly. She flew up quickly, passing Shi Yan and heading towards the battle site.

Werther wore a cold face as a fire of anger rolled in his eyes. He soared up into the sky, and glared at him maliciously when he passed Shi Yan. "Kid, if you dare deceive us, I will show you what I have got!"

Gu Mo and Werther shot rapidly towards Ghost Hunter and McGee, who were crazily attacking and wreaking havoc. They felt restless and anxious.

Many warriors from the other areas saw the three of them and were surprised, starting to discuss boisterously.

Over there, the battle between McGee and Ghost Hunter had come to its climax. The two of them now used their real abilities. While they were mobilizing energy, a tremendous amount of heaven and earth energy of Black Stone Island rose like a torrential tide, pouring into the two of them. The supplied energy made the two new talents of the Monster Clan seem like furious, erupting volcanoes. They seemed about to destroy the whole Black Water Star.

McGee seemed to be falling into a disadvantaged situation. Ghost Hunter punched him, blowing him to the seabed. However, every time McGee soared up back from the sea, he could gather a stronger power.

Their battle had come to a critical stage. It was time of life or death.

"McGee, it's enough!" Gu Mo suddenly screamed, her beautiful face icy cold. "I told you to try a bit. I didn't tell you to risk your life! Stop here! I don't need your support anymore!"

"You said enough, so you think it's enough?" McGee thundered angrily. He didn't give Gu Mo face, wiping the blood trickle on his

mouth. "I have suffered a loss, and I want to take it back! F*ck! I'm this big, and I've never been hurt by anyone whose realm's lower than mine! If I can't make him pay a big price for that, I will feel annoyed for the rest of my life!"

McGee roared, storming towards Ghost Hunter again.

Gu Mo was so worried as if she had a flame burning her heart.

Werther hovered behind her, his face begging. He didn't have the bearings like when was talking to Shi Yan. He stooped his head while screaming, "Master, please stop. I'm begging you. McGee's the son of Evil Dragon Tribe's Patriarch. If you kill him, the Evil Dragon Tribe will turn their back on us. Master, for me who has been following you for years, please, do me a little favor. Please spare McGee."

Ghost Hunter acted as if he didn't see or hear Werther. He didn't even give him a glance. He still gazed at McGee, striking crazily. Each blow of his was enough to smash the whole world. He made the seawater boil, shaking the entire Black Water Star.

Werther seemed to know what would happen. He sighed and screamed continually.

"You motherf*cker! You're too haughty. I have just left for a few decades. When did I fall into that low a situation? Asking him to spare my life? The one whose realm's lower than mine? I can't stand such humiliation!" McGee shouted, becoming even more enraged.

Both Ghost Hunter and McGee didn't listen to Werther and Gu Mo. They started to attack each other again, their battle becoming fiercer.

Gu Mo and Werther's advice didn't work. It couldn't bring the desired result; instead, it was more like pouring oil into a fire as the battle reached the most dangerous point.

Ghost Hunter and McGee had their body covered in blood while

fighting against each other. Suddenly, they all roared, returning to their monster form. The two terrifying and intimidating monsters appeared in the sea.

Evil Dragon McGee was several thousand meters long, his body covered in scales. The horns on his head were sharp and shiny like metals, with beautiful lights moving around. Each scale on his body started to absorb heaven and earth energy, giving him an imposing aura that could threaten people.

Ghost Hunter's real form was just several meters long. However, he had spikes and thorns all over his body. His body was covered in some kind of thick and rigid bone shells that looked like quenched metals. At first glance, people knew he had annealed his body for many times.

It was obvious that his true form was also a dragon. Beams of energy murmured like small flowing streams on his body. Energy fluctuated from him immensely and earth-shakingly. It felt like his body hid many volcanoes that could erupt at any minute, giving him the intimidating and brutal energy.

When the Monster warriors turned back to their true form, it was a sign of a life or death battle. As McGee and Ghost Hunter had transformed, they were prepared to release their strongest attack.

Boom! Rumble! Rumble!

The two giant bodies barged into each other, entangling and wrestling. Their powerful and fierce energy impacted, sending sparks and lights everywhere. This sea area was stirred up formidably. Vortexes started to appear in the sea, and tsunamis rose high in the sky.

These two warriors of the Monster Clan seemed ready to destroy the Black Water Star. Their formidable auras had scared people out of their wits. The onlookers all admired and respected their power no matter what.

Watching the two of them change to their monster form and attack each other wildly, Gu Mo and Werther were frightened out of their wits, their hearts beating anxiously.

Gu Mo's small face was as pale as white paper. She was so panic-stricken at this moment, hurrying to report this to her father. She hoped her father could come and advise Ghost Hunter. She also cursed McGee for not giving her face.

Werther was so flurried that he didn't know what to do. Suddenly, he looked back and saw Shi Yan sauntering as if he were taking a walk in the park. With a ferocious face, he seemed to find a place to vent out at, shouting, "You caused all of these! I'll kill you first!"

Gu Mo hated Shi Yan because he had stopped her from reporting to her father in the first place. Seeing Werther about to kill him, she didn't bother to interfere, as she thought that Shi Yan deserved it.

"McGee, do me a favor. Stop here." Suddenly, Shi Yan pitched his voice and screamed before Werther attacked him.

McGee and Ghost Hunter were still wrestling. Hearing Shi Yan's voice, McGee struggled in his mind for a while before shouting, "Bro, I want to give you face, but... But, if he doesn't want to stop here, I have no choice."

Gu Mo and Werther were bewildered. They were so confused.

Since when had McGee become that easy to talk into things? That hot-tempered fellow was famous for his annoyance. Besides his father, he had never submitted to anyone?

What scared them the most was still to follow...

"Ghost Hunter, stop here," Shi Yan said the second time.

While entangling with McGee, Ghost Hunter turned around to look, perplexed. Dazzling lights shot out from his monster eyes as he gazed at Shi Yan without blinking. He halted as if he had turned

into a rock.

McGee and Ghost Hunter both stopped. The atmosphere was oddly quiet, and people could only hear the two Monster experts panting.

Gu Mo and Werther gawked, dropping their jaws. They looked at Shi Yan, then at Ghost Hunter, who was held as if he had turned into a fossil.

The bone-chilling, clear green eyes of Ghost Hunter reflected Shi Yan's image. His eyes flashed, turning watery. The mouth with many teeth opened as he stopped panting, still looking baffled.

Energy stopped impacted above the sea, as a result of which, the water slowly calmed down and the vortexes disappeared. The whole place was so quiet they could even hear the sound of a needle falling.

Ghost Hunter looked at Shi Yan like that, as an unknown, fierce affection appeared in his eyes. After a long moment, he got rid of McGee, flying anxiously to Shi Yan. He proactively lowered his body and floated beneath Shi Yan's feet. He slowly adjusted his body until his back touched Shi Yan's feet.

He had let Shi Yan put his feet on his back, so he could be Shi Yan's mount.

This was the gesture of the humblest submission of the Monster Clan's members.

The entire sea area was quiet. Onlookers from different clans in the Black Stone Island were petrified. The glass of wine fell on the ground from someone's hand, but he didn't realize it. Time seemed to have paused at this moment.

Chapter 972: After all, who is he?

Werther was astounded. He couldn't help but rub his eyes, wanting to confirm what he was watching was real or not.

'Is that our Master Ghost Hunter?' He instinctively asked himself. His face was bitter, as he shook his head.

Werther had followed Ghost Hunter for around ten years. In his eyes, Ghost Hunter was mighty and bloodthirsty, who would never bow to anybody, including the Chief of Brutal Dragon Tribe.

However, today, the Master he worshipped was humbly submitting under Shi Yan's feet. His Master had used the modest attitude to respect the other. His Master had proactively given his back under Shi Yan's feet. This was a sign of submission that came from the heart.

A Ghost Hunter like that was strange to him.

Gu Mo's small face was stiff. She thought she was in a dream, so she bit her lower lip. When the pain came through her nerves, she finally confirmed she was in the real world.

'What's going on?'

Gu Mo hadn't known Ghost Hunter for a long time. However, she idolized his performance and all sort of savage deeds in the Brutal Dragon Tribe. She was keen on thinking that he was her best match. She had never thought that Ghost Hunter would submit to anyone wholeheartedly.

In her eyes, an imposing and domineering man like Ghost Hunter was predestined to step on the highest peak. He wouldn't let any force bind him.

Crawling under a man's feet was impossible to her. However, it happened right in front of her, which gave her a bitter feeling. She felt sorry because of Ghost Hunter.

'A formidable existence like you should never submit to anyone! Absolutely never!'

Gu Mo screamed crazily in her mind.

McGee slowly transformed into his human form, with blood streaming down his body. He wiped the blood trickle on the corner of his mouth, standing by Gu Mo and Werther. Lights weaved in his eyes, his face confused and complicated.

The fierce battle with Ghost Hunter made him believe in Gu Mo's vision. He knew Ghost Hunter did have fame and power. This newly-emerged foreign Monster warrior did have the power to reach the peak of glory.

Towards Ghost Hunter, he had a subtle feeling between strong warriors. Although Ghost Hunter's realm was one level lower than his, he wasn't weaker than McGee in that fight.

McGee had no prejudice towards Ghost Hunter. After this battle, he had considered the latter as his fiercest rival.

However, when the rival he respected submitted beneath Shi Yan's feet wholeheartedly and freely, this kind of humble head-down posture somehow shamed him.

Experts living in Black Stone Island and the other life stars around became baffled. They looked at the site with confused eyes. They had no clue of what was going on.

Staying on the flying bird battleship, the Monster troops under Ghost Hunter's commands were outraged. They looked at Ghost Hunter as if he had become a strange person to them, all having an odd countenance. They didn't know what had happened back there.

Shi Yan stood on the spiky neck of Ghost Hunter, his face as calm as water. He instinctively patted Ghost Hunter's massive head and sighed distantly. "I thought you had forgotten me."

"A servant for one day, a servant for a lifetime."

Ghost Hunter's voice was husky and cold. It felt like someone rubbed a stone on a piece of metal. His voice was sharp and unpleasant to the ear. However, in Shi Yan's ears, it was so comfortable.

He didn't talk loudly, but McGee, Gu Mo, and Werther could hear him clearly. They were so shocked, light sparkling in their eyes as they were outraged.

Swoosh!

Ghost Hunter opened his mouth and spat out something. A jade token with the Brutal Dragon carving of the Brutal Dragon Tribe flew out of his terrifying mouth, floating in front of Gu Mo and Werther.

"This is the War Token. Please return it to the Chief. From now on, I'm not a member of the Brutal Dragon Tribe anymore. I will no longer be the captain of this squadron. That year, the Chief and I had an agreement. I can leave the Brutal Dragon Tribe whenever I want. Please explain to him." Ghost Hunter's voice was as cold as ice. It was a little bit harsh and bone-chilling.

That jade token was the Captain's Identification Card in the Brutal Dragon Tribe's force. It was also the sign of a future elder. There were only seven of them in Brutal Dragon Tribe, which was significant indeed.

The Jade Tokens in the Brutal Dragon Tribe were the insignia of power and status. Every single one of them was so precious. People who held the Jade Token were all influential members of the Brutal Dragon Tribe, and they did have real powers. Their status was high also for the other clans living in the life stars around. They could access the great star areas freely and enjoy the privileges of Brutal Dragon Tribe.

Werther and Gu Mo were startled, their face grimaced.

As Ghost Hunter returned his Jade Token, he had decided to

separate from the Brutal Dragon Tribe. He had helped Brutal Dragon Tribe destroy their enemies for years. He had killed so many brutal and powerful opponents, which granted him the Jade Token after rounds of discussion among the Elders of the Brutal Dragon Tribe last year.

This Jade Token represented his official admission in the Brutal Dragon Tribe. He had finally received the approval of this strongest tribe of the Monster Clan.

To bestow him this Jade Token, the Chief of Brutal Dragon Tribe had spent a lot of his efforts to eliminate the troubles that came from the majority of the tribe's Elders. He didn't hesitate to use bloody methods to suppress them. Later on, Ghost Hunter earned this special glory.

However, after seeing Shi Yan and talking not even two sentences to the man, he had returned the Jade Token, which he had earned through bloody difficulties. He declared his wish to separate from the Brutal Dragon Tribe, which was like a slap on Werther's and Gu Mo's face. They now had an everlasting bitter grievance in their minds.

"Sir!" Werther shivered as he hastily kneeled down in the air and lifted his face to look directly into Ghost Hunter's eyes. He said stubbornly, "The Jade Token represents the supreme glory of the Brutal Dragon Tribe. You Sir, you have experienced countless bloody battles, stepping on piles of bodies to get it. How could you give it up that easily?"

Gu Mo's face changed. She was outraged looking at Ghost Hunter. Her usual soft voice was gone as she talked sharply, "Ghost Hunter! What are you doing? You know what the Brutal Dragon Token represents? It's the supreme glory of our Brutal Dragon Tribe!"

Ghost Hunter's deep green eyes were as calm as water. He looked at Werther and Gu Mo, talking deliberately, "I'm not a member of

the Brutal Dragon Tribe. Before I joined the tribe, I've made it clear to the Patriarch that I may leave at any time. Today, the one I had been waiting for has come. Naturally, I won't stay in the Brutal Dragon Tribe anymore. Please tell the Chief that Ghost Hunter has failed his expectations."

McGee frowned tightly, looking at the Jade Token hovering in the air. His eyes seemed so strange.

Taking a deep breath, McGee talked to Shi Yan seriously. "Bro, there're seven Brutal Dragon Tokens. It's like the identification card of the strongest warlords of the Tribe. It represents power and glory of Brutal Dragon Tribe. Do you understand?"

The monster eyes of Ghost Hunter sparkled ferociously as he gazed at McGee coldly while hissing, "Shut up!"

McGee discolored, snorting. However, he was looking at Shi Yan.

Werther and Gu Mo couldn't help but also look at Shi Yan.

At this moment, they understood that an arrogant fellow like Ghost Hunter would never mind their opinions. Only Shi Yan's words seemed to be able to bind him.

This man who came out of nowhere had made Ghost Hunter submit to him. He could control Ghost Hunter's will and decision. It was unimaginable!

Even the Chief of the Brutal Dragon Tribe couldn't restrain Ghost Hunter that way.

Under the gaze of McGee, Werther, and Gu Mo, Shi Yan contemplated for a while. He chuckled and extended his hand to pull the air. He grabbed the Brutal Dragon Token, which represented the high-rank captain of the tribe, and studied it. He then tenderly put it on Ghost Hunter's spiky neck, speaking softly, "Ghost Hunter and I want to talk a bit."

McGee, Gu Mo, and Werther were surprised. They looked at him, but said nothing else, proactively flying away.

Shi Yan frowned, patting Ghost Hunter's head.

Ghost Hunter faced the sky and roared. His roar was like a lightning strike that could clean up and level the place. His voice shook the sky as he rocketed immediately, disappeared from people's sight.

McGee, Werther, and Gu Mo went down to the shore of the Black Stone Island. Gu Mo was so irritated. Looking at the crowd around them, her eyes became savage, shouting angrily. "Get the f*ck out of here!"

Werther and McGee couldn't stay calm. Murderous auras twinkled in their eyes, looking at the onlookers with obviously evil intents.

Members of the other tribes from the surrounding life stars discolored. They stooped, fleeing away like the low tide. In a short while, no one stayed.

Only Ghost Hunter's troopers started to gather from the flying bird battleship, looking at Werther and Gu Mo anxiously. They wanted to say something but didn't know how.

Gu Mo took a deep breath. Her generous breast bounced slightly as she gritted her teeth while looking at McGee. "After all, who is he?"

Werther also looked at McGee.

"I don't actually know." Under the others' gazes, McGee smiled reluctantly, "I met him by chance in the space crack. He's saved me twice. This man... is really dangerous. He's mysterious indeed. Seems like he's somehow related to Blood Devil."

"Blood Devil?" Gu Mo, Werther, and the others discolored in fright. They felt even worse as the situation had developed out of their reach.

This star area had many prominent clans. The Monster Clan, Demon Clan, and Ice Clan lived here. Brutal Dragon Tribe and Evil

Dragon Tribe were the two strongest Tribes of Monster Clan. Blood Devil was the overlord devil of Demon Clan, so his status and power weren't less than the Chiefs of the two dragon tribes. And, his personal relationship with the two tribes was always good.

Blood Devil was the great character of Demon Clan. In Agate Star Area, he was famous indeed. And, he liked to cover for his fellows. He would take revenge for even the smallest grudge.

Hearing that Shi Yan and Blood Devil were related, Gu Mo was so worried that she pulled her hair instinctively, her face dark. "It's really troublesome!"

"Even if it's Blood Devil, he has no right to make Master separate from Brutal Dragon Tribe!" Werther clenched his jaw, talking indignantly. "My Master will surely be the new shining star of the Monster Clan. He's one of the future leaders of Monster Clan. Since he got the Brutal Dragon Token, he's the hotshot of our Brutal Dragon Tribe. What does that kid have to make my Master submit to him?"

Gu Mo agreed as she nodded to him, talking firmly, "Yeah! It's true! Blood Devil doesn't have this right!"

McGee was bewildered for a while. He looked at the other two with an odd countenance. "It's not my bro who subdued him. He's done that on his own, hasn't he? He requested to leave the Brutal Dragon Tribe. He said that you guys have an agreement. I think you should talk to Uncle clearly."

"... It's..." Werther was petrified and baffled, unable to answer.

Gu Mo hesitated for a while, and eventually took out a Sound Stone. She took a deep breath to force herself calm down before connecting with her father.

McGee and Werther looked at her, their faces respectful. They proactively stepped back, giving her space. That was how they

showed respect to the Chief.

However, their eyes hadn't left Gu Mo. They observed her facial expression to see what the Chief of the Brutal Dragon Tribe would direct.

Chapter 973: Master and Servant

Deep inside the black ocean, a massive light cage made of star energy covered Shi Yan and Ghost Hunter, who had transformed into his humanoid form. Ghost Hunter slight bent his head, telling Shi Yan what he had experienced throughout those years in a low and cold voice.

After Ghost Hunter, King of Demonic Insects, Holy Spirit God, and Devouring Gold Silkworm separated from Shi Yan, they came to Heavenly Demon Mountain Range in the Vault of Heaven Sea Area, and received the mysterious inheritance of the Monster Clan. They escaped the space barrier in that demonic formation, which led them to the Shadow Ghostly Prison in Agate Star Area.

Shadow Ghostly Prison was the most chaotic and peculiar area of the Agate Star Area. Rumors said that it was the space hub that connected the Agate Star Area to other star areas. It had many space channels.

They had crossed one of such space channels and landed in the Shadow Ghostly Prison.

Shadow Ghostly Prison was established by many primitive races of Agate Star Area. Later on, many other races had joined the area from other star areas, which mostly got through the space channels. Shadow Ghostly Prison was rich, having various resources. It had many rare cultivating materials that were hard to find in the Agate Star Area.

Warriors had battled for heaven and earth energy and magical natural resources. Since Shadow Ghostly Prison had many strange and precious products, wars never ended there.

The four peculiar existences of Ghost Hunter's group had to struggle hard to survive in the Shadow Ghostly Prison. After many difficult fights, King of Demonic Insects, Holy Spirit God, and Devouring Gold Silkworm were killed. Only Ghost Hunter was

lucky enough to survive until now.

Eventually, he escaped the Shadow Ghostly Prison, coming to this place where Monster tribes were gathered, and thus made his debut in Monster Dragon Star.

Monster Dragon Star was the central star of the Monster Clan in Agate Star Area. Members of the Brutal Dragon Tribe and Evil Dragon Tribe lived in the massive Monster Dragon Star. Many other powerful tribes of the Monster Clan also stayed and cultivated here. After Ghost Hunter arrived here, he raised a bloody rain in Monster Dragon Star.

Eventually, Gu Te, Chief of Brutal Dragon Tribe, recruited Ghost Hunter with his keen eyes, making him the warlord of the Brutal Dragon Tribe. He conquered many areas for the Brutal Dragon Tribe.

Gu Te and Ghost Hunter had an agreement that year. He agreed to help Ghost Hunter take revenge. He would support Ghost Hunter to invade the Shadow Ghostly Prison and uproot the force that had killed King of Demonic Insects, Holy Spirit God, and Devouring Gold Silkworm.

The condition was that Ghost Hunter had to join the Brutal Dragon Tribe.

As Ghost Hunter wanted to take revenge for his comrades, he agreed with Gu Te's condition. After around ten years of fighting from North to South. He had earned merits for the Brutal Dragon Tribe. Gradually, he got the approval of the entire Brutal Dragon Tribe. That was how he received a Brutal Dragon Token, which represented his high status in the tribe.

Ghost Hunter came to Black Water Star this time to destroy one of the Brutal Dragon Tribe's enemies. He was about to attack a branch of the Sea Clan, which had unilaterally broken the treaty while trading with Brutal Dragon Tribe.

King of Demonic Insects, Holy Spirit God, and Devouring Gold Silkworm were all dead, hearing which, Shi Yan felt totally absent-minded. A bitter grief rose from the bottom of his heart. He gritted his teeth until it generated squeaking noises, his face turning ferocious.

Different images crossed his mind. He met the King of Demonic Insects, and befriended the Holy Spirit God and the Devouring Gold Silkworm... All old stories suddenly emerged deep in his soul, and he couldn't get rid of them...

Hearing that his old friends were all dead, Shi Yan felt like a nerve of his was pinched. His eyes became as cold as ice.

This made him more placid in recognizing himself. This place was the Agate Star Area, with countless clans and experts, and he wasn't the strongest.

In this place, he didn't have the powers to protect his fellows yet.

He was crying inwardly. The Immortal Demon Blood in his body was boiling as if it were burning. His eyes turned garnet like an enraged beast, and he looked lunatic indeed.

"I will take revenge for them!" Shi Yan stressed each word.

Ghost Hunter nodded heavily.

"Master, I met your lady in the Shadow Ghostly Prison. She helped me escape the Shadow Ghostly Prison that year." Ghost Hunter hesitated for a while, his eyes cold and dark. He slightly bent his head, talking, "Master's Lady has become a noble of a force. She has power and force, and has also earned a title."

Shi Yan's pupils shrank. "My lady?"

"Lady Xia," Ghost Hunter lowered his voice, explaining.

Shi Yan was shaken.

Ghost Hunter stooped and said nothing as he looked at Shi Yan, silently waiting for him to digest the news.

'It's Xia Xin Yan!'

Countless vehement memories flooded his mind. Shi Yan felt a strange and unknown pain. It was like someone had knocked down some bottles of different ingredients in his heart, as he felt so many feelings mixed together.

It had been so many years. When he got the news of that person the second time, he didn't expect she would be in the Shadow Ghostly Prison... She had a force, and she had become a noble. Sweet and bitter memories appeared in his heart as he felt so low.

Sitting indifferently for a while, Shi Yan took a deep breath, his face becoming maliciously resolute. "For the time being, you shouldn't separate from the Brutal Dragon Tribe. You have your world, and Brutal Dragon Tribe can make you thrive. When you've reached a higher level, you will become the leader of the Monster Clan!"

Ghost Hunter looked at him bewilderedly.

"We will fight shoulder to shoulder in the Agate Star Area. But, we don't need to be together every moment. I'm not sure if you can grow better by following me than right now." Shi Yan pondered for a while and then explained, "We will make efforts to take revenge for the three of them. You use your way, and I will use mine. Don't worry! We won't be far from each other. I'm going to the Devil Blood Star. If nothing unexpected happens, I'll stay in Devil Blood Star. I have some relation with... Blood Devil."

Ghost Hunter's green eyes brightened slowly.

As he had been in the area for years, he knew Blood Devil. He was surprised and happy on hearing that his Master and Blood Devil had some relation.

"At this moment, you should stay with the Brutal Dragon Tribe and accumulate your force. You should make efforts to gain the powers of the Monster Clan." Shi Yan face was calm and cold like

water. "I will go my way to accumulate force. In the future, we will be the main forces of the Agate Star Area. I strongly believe that we can swagger here and there in this high-level star area in a not so distant future!"

"I'm on it, Master," Ghost Hunter nodded quietly.

"You continue to stay and work for the Brutal Dragon Tribe. I'm heading to Devil Blood Star to arrange stuff. It's the best if you can conceal our relationship. Since the Chief of Brutal Dragon Tribe trusts you, he won't change his mind," Shi Yan contemplated and continued, "McGee and I have a good friendship. Evil Dragon Tribe is also one of the strongest forces of the Monster Clan. If you can become the leader of Monster Clan in the future, Evil Dragon Tribe will be one of your powerful hands. You should try to get them on your side."

Ghost Hunter nodded again.

The two of them discussed undersea. After a long time, they came up with an agreement.

Before Shi Yan left, he had a premonition. He thought, then flickered his mind. Drops of scarlet Immortal Demon Blood flew out like jewels, filled with pure soul energy.

A magical connection that could cross all space distances strongly elongated towards Shadow Ghostly Prison.

A familiar aura transmitted from Shadow Ghostly Prison fell into his Sea of Consciousness, heading towards the deep area of his soul...

In the Shadow Ghostly Prison, several hundred massive battleships were anchored above a giant asteroid. Sitting on a pink crystal throne atop one of those gigantic battleships was a woman in a brilliant gown. She was holding a glass, her deep and beautiful eyes looking at the endless star sea while being absorbed in her thoughts.

Her gorgeous long dress was beautified with jewels. Exquisite and precious flowers were embroidered at the hem of her dress. She let her flawless legs bare, wearing only two blue crystal anklets. The energy from her anklets had a tremendous fluctuation, adding to her elegant beauty.

Three pagans kneeled by her, reporting with the logbooks they were holding. They all looked humble.

The beautiful woman took a sip from her blood-like wine glass. The red color of the wine gave her pink lips moisture, making her look like the most beautiful blooming flower. However, her crystal clear, diamond-like eyes were hiding some sadness. Yet, her indifferent and cold bearings had subdued the three alien clansmen in front of her. They didn't even dare to look up at her. They were modest, trying to explain her furthermore.

Suddenly, the beautiful woman seemed to feel something. Her gorgeous eyes sparkled dazzlingly while her flawless body shivered. She couldn't help but jolt up from her seat. Her jade-like feet stepped on the precious pink throne, alluring people's souls.

She looked in the general direction of the Black Water Star far away as the cold intent on her face vanished slowly. The red wine in her glass swirled for a while. After a long moment, she was thrilled, bowing her head and whining, "You... you have finally come... I've been waiting for you for so long..."

The joy she couldn't hide in her face had baffled the other three. They were indeed surprised.

Drops of Immortal Demon Blood evaporated in the light cage as Shi Yan opened his eyes. He was stirred up, mumbling to himself. "You're here..."

Ghost Hunter sat quietly and indifferently like a rock next to Shi Yan. He just looked at his Master, saying nothing.

"Let's go." After a while, Shi Yan got up, wiping out the light

cage. Both of them shot out of the seabed, heading North of Black Stone Island.

On Black Stone Island, Gu Mo, Werther, and McGee were longing for them, their faces all odd.

"Sir," As soon as Werther saw Ghost Hunter, his straight back bent while he lowered his head to show his respect.

"Ghost Hunter, my father sent a message saying that he doesn't want you to separate from Brutal Dragon Tribe. He said that no matter what old stories you have, he won't ask a thing. As long as you stay with the Brutal Dragon Tribe and keep the Brutal Dragon Token, you're a warlord of our tribe." Gu Mo's small face was serious as she continued, "My father said that this time when you go back to Monster Dragon Star, he would give you a life star. You will have the complete authority over it."

Ghost Hunter wore an impassive face. Facing these people, he was as cold as the rigid ice. He seemed to not have any emotion. After Gu Mo finished, he just nodded.

Gu Mo and Werther were cheered up.

"Thank you, Sir. You didn't abandon us."

"Thank you for your favor!"

The Monster soldiers under Ghost Hunter's command kneeled down, shouting crazily. Their voices shook the Black Stone Island.

Ghost Hunter was still indifferent.

"McGee, I want to go to the Devil Blood Star. See you later." Shi Yan nodded to McGee while chuckling. "Do me a favor. Do not compete with Ghost Hunter. He's the closest friend of mine."

"How dare I quarrel with him?" McGee smiled miserably. However, he became cheered up all of a sudden. "Our Monster Dragon Star and the Devil Blood Star aren't far from each other. I'm going to find you later. If you need me, you can always come to

Monster Dragon Star to find me."

"Sure," Shi Yan agreed seriously. He smiled at Gu Mo, Werther, and then gazed at Ghost Hunter for a while. Then, he soared up into the sky, tearing the atmosphere like a lightning strike while heading to Devil Blood Star.

Ghost Hunter lifted his head looking at Shi Yan disappearing. Afterward, he shouted at his troopers with a brutal face. "Work!"

Werther and many soldiers of Monster Clan replied to him grumblingly. Their murderous aura rose violently as they were about to jump into the sea to eradicate a branch of the Sea Clan that had deceived the Brutal Dragon Tribe.

Chapter 974: Potion and Tool Pavilion

The vast galaxy had countless shining stars. The star areas opened infinitely. Sometimes, battleships flew rapidly like shuttles or lightning.

Shi Yan sat cross-legged on a small meteorolite, closing his eyes to feel earth and heaven energy changing.

His meteorite was moving like an electric light towards the general direction of Devil Blood Star. Rolling energy transmitted to this asteroid through his feet made it move forward.

Shortly after, Shi Yan opened his eyes and exhaled slightly.

Touching the Fantasy Sky Ring on his finger, an old, yellowed book flew out. It was the ancient book that they found from the mysterious city in Old Orchid Star. It wasn't rotten after being buried for tens of thousands of years with the city. This book was written in unknown, tadpole-like characters. Shi Yan didn't know if this kind of language belonged to any race.

He used to spend time studying this book. However, he couldn't figure out any mysteries of these ancient tadpole characters. He had kept this book in his Fantasy Sky Ring for a long time afterward.

Lately, when he was trying to sense the changes of earth and heaven, he suddenly felt the tadpole words in the book seem to revive.

Opening the book and holding it in his hand, Shi Yan focused and observed.

Shi Yan saw the tadpole scriptures and they seemed like living creatures. They slowly wiggled on the cover of that ancient book. It looked strange and mysterious, indeed.

Deep in his eyes was astonishment. Shi Yan quietly released a beam of energy, sending it to the cover of the ancient book to see if

he could find something.

However, as soon as he had sent his energy into the book, the tadpole characters stopped moving. They quieted down and stayed still like they were dead.

Shi Yan let out a low scream in surprise. He pulled himself together, frowning and pouring more Soul Consciousness into the book.

His Sea of Consciousness was suddenly disordered. Flows of his Soul Consciousness entangled chaotically, numbing his brain. Looking at the ancient book, he saw the tadpole words move quickly. They looked like many lightning strikes crossing the page.

Staring at the ancient book, Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness became more chaotic and his consciousness blurred.

After changing his face slightly, Shi Yan retrieved his Soul Consciousness. While his mind flickered, he put a flow of confining space power into the book.

The book was sealed for the moment with space power. All the tadpole characters were blocked. They couldn't move anymore.

He was skeptical, retrieving the ancient book into his Fantasy Sky Ring. Shi Yan lifted his face to watch the immense star sea. He closed his eyes and was absorbed in his thoughts.

A massive battleship around five thousand meters long was moving not far from him. It was entirely black and it seemed to be made of some black ink metal. This battleship had several hundred barrier layers. On two sides, it had many flagpoles with silk banners drawn with various types of utensils like swords, sabers, containers, or war chariot.

The massive battleship moved forward inaudibly in the dim lit star sea. It had no beam of extra energy sent to the environment. It was also heading to Devil Blood Star like a ghost.

Inside a secret chamber in the battleship was an elegant lady in

her loose and long dress. The sleeves and legs of her green garments were all extra loose to hide her mesmerizing body.

She was clapping her hands in front of her chest, her slender fingers like scallion making hand seals. Her eyes were deep blue and calm like the ocean. Her long brown hair was pinned up into a gorgeous bun, held by an emerald hairpin. She looked elegant and noble, indeed.

She had a pair of crescent moon crystal earrings. She wore five-colored jade rings around her delicate wrists, which looked like lotus roots. She also had some small but delicate accessories hung on her waist. All these ornaments made her lively and incredibly charming.

A corner of the yellowed sheet of paper she was holding was revealed, which had scriptures with characters that looked like tadpoles. Her willow-like eyebrows above her deep blue eyes furrowed as if she was mulling on something.

A white light seeped from her fingers as she concentrated her soul to recognize something.

After a while, she stooped and sighed, shaking her head and whining, "... I'm afraid it was just a hallucination. The Canon had been lost for tens of thousands of years. How could I sense it for that glimpse of time?"

"Thump! Thump! Thump!"

Someone was knocking on her chalcedony door, which was inlaid with many strange symbols. The one who was knocking seemed to be very careful not to bother that woman.

The woman was still calm and natural. Her flawless hands retrieved the light and carefully put the sheet of paper away. She relaxed and then called, "Come in."

An old woman with ditch-like wrinkles throughout her face bowed and went to the center of this battleship. "Young Elder, we

will arrive at Devil Blood Star in three months. Do you want to stop somewhere along the way?"

The woman shook her head with a smile. "No, we shouldn't stop. We've delayed a long time already."

The old woman nodded. She immediately excused herself.

"Wait a moment," the woman wanted to say something, but she didn't. Instead, she whispered, "Aunt An. Lately, I seemed to sense a gleam of..."

"What?" the old woman looked at her with surprise.

The lady shook her head. "Nothing."

The old woman smiled lovingly. She didn't mind and just bowed before carefully leaving the place. She seemed afraid of accidentally making noise. She also closed the door with extra care.

The woman in the room ridiculed herself. How could I sense the Canon, which was lost for tens of thousands of years? It's just a hallucination then. She instinctively assumed.

...

Shi Yan was riding a meteorite, flying towards the general direction of Devil Blood Star. All of a sudden, he lifted his head, looking forward with a surprise in his eyes.

In front of him was a battleship inaudibly moving at breakneck speed. If it hadn't come close enough to be visible, Shi Yan wouldn't have known that a battleship was close to him.

Usually, the battleship would use high-quality divine crystals as fuel. Hotshots would guard and patrol the battleship. Both the divine crystals and warriors had energy fluctuate from them. Within a specific distance, the other warriors could sense them easily.

However, this battleship emerged in his sight while his Soul

Consciousness reported nothing to him. It was indeed magical.

Frowning, he released a beam of Soul Consciousness, extending towards the battleship.

Spark!

A fire sparked from the barrier covering the battleship. Although it was dim, it had stopped Shi Yan's sensing.

Shi Yan's eyes brightened. He looked at the battleship with astonishment.

Evidently, that battleship wasn't normal. It was several times bigger and had barriers that could prevent Soul Consciousness. The barriers had shut the entire battleship including people inside. This protection made the ship move inaudibly without noise caused by the engine or energy fluctuating from warriors. It was like a spooky ghost drifting in the dim lit universe.

This was a high-class battleship, indeed. In the case of war between star areas, this kind of invisible battleship could perform extraordinarily.

At the moment fire sparked from the barrier outside the battleship, a vague silhouette came out from a dark area of the ship. He looked at Shi Yan from a distance as if he was assessing the man.

After a while, that person crossed the barrier and emerged visibly from the ship. He was a lanky, middle-aged man with a lot of disgusting smallpox-like filled bumps on his face. He was a little hunched, squinting to observe Shi Yan better.

The meteorite under Shi Yan's feet was still moving quickly. It slowed down and approached the battleship. While the lanky man observed Shi Yan, Shi Yan also watched him.

First Sky of Ethereal God Realm – Cultivates Thunderbolt power
Upanishad – Newly formed Ethereal Extent.

Information regarding this man's competence emerged in Shi Yan's head. He didn't know why but after his soul altar was refined and became crystal clear by the effects of Soul Refining Fluid, he was able to easily understand the realm and kinds of power Upanishads of the warriors around him.

The middle-aged man whose face was filled with smallpox bumps stared at Shi Yan for a while before asking proactively. "Little brother, where do you want to go?"

Shi Yan was surprised as he didn't know what the other had in his mind. He hesitated for a while and then smiled casually, "I'm heading to Devil Blood Star."

"Eh?" The middle-aged man was surprised. He smiled, waving at Shi Yan. "We're going there, too. Do you want to take a ride with us?"

Shi Yan was touched. He considered for a while.

After he had left Black Water Star, he had been racing like a lightning strike, which had consumed a lot of his energy. At this moment, he had used half of his accumulation to fly. If he could have a place to rest and recover his energy, it would be much better.

However, since Shi Yan couldn't identify the other's intention or identify, he was a little bit hesitant.

"We're from the Potion and Tool Pavilion." As he could see Shi Yan's hesitation, he explained.

Shi Yan's eyes brightened.

The Potion and Tool Pavilion was a unique force in Agate Star Area. It was established by top alchemists and blacksmiths of Agate Star Area. Most of the pellets, war chariots, battleships, and various kinds of containers were manufactured and sold by this organization.

Potion and Tool Pavilion had never participated in racial battles

between forces of Agate Star Area. They were the simplest businessmen and businesswomen who had focused only on refining medicines and weapons. They had maintained good relationships with great clans everywhere.

Battleships and war chariots that Ai Fu got in Broken Star City were manufactured by Potion and Tool Pavilion. Divine Light bought them and transported them to Broken Star City in Far West region. They earned profits from the price difference.

Potion and Tool Pavilion had only cooperated with the strongest clans in Agate Star Area. They wouldn't bat an eye on the small forces. Although Ai Fu of Broken Star City was famous in the Far West region, he wasn't strong enough to do business with Potion and Tool Pavilion. Businessmen like Ai Fu could only buy battleships and war chariots made by Potion and Tool Pavilion through bigger traders like Divine Light.

This special force always stayed neutral. Since they had never engaged in any competition besides doing business, no one had ever known its real competence.

However, no strong forces or clans in Agate Star Area dared to offend the Potion and Tool Pavilion since medicine, containers, and other products of this organization had taken account of almost all goods sold in the entire star area. At the same time, it had maintained good relationships with big clans. Once any clan broke this relationship, even if they were so rich, they wouldn't be able to purchase any medicine or battleships.

The Potion and Tool Pavilion had a good reputation. They always kept a good relationship with their customers. Even the most fiendish pirates of Agate Star Area would never initially provoke them.

Their battleships could travel safely between star areas. Even in the Shadow Ghostly Prison which was the most chaotic area, they could cross it smoothly and safely.

The Potion and Tool Pavilion was indeed a unique organization in Agate Star Area. The other forces always liked them the most.

Hearing the other say that he belonged to Potion and Tool Pavilion, Shi Yan, who was about to move alone, relaxed, nodded and smiled friendly. "Oh, thank you very much."

Then, when the middle-aged man opened the barrier, Shi Yan jumped with him onto the massive battleship and landed on the main deck.

The ship's deck was cold and firm. It was built of blocks of strange metal. Each block was about ten square meters. Many security guards of Potion and Tool Pavilion scattered here and there, controlling powerful energy artilleries. Although they saw Shi Yan landing, they didn't change their faces and continued guarding their positions.

"Brother, you are cultivating space power, right?" The middle-aged man smiled, inviting, "Are you interested in joining our Potion and Tool Pavilion? We always welcome warriors with space power."

Shi Yan was astounded. He now understood why this man invited him onboard. He knew that Shi Yan cultivated Space power Upanishad.

Chapter 975: Fu Wei

"Oh, I'm sorry. Currently, I have no intention to join any force."

Shi Yan shook his head and denied resolutely. However, he asked earnestly, "How did you know I was cultivating Space power Upanishad?"

Agate Star Area was a high-class star area. It had an explicit category for powers Upanishads. According to their description, they had hundreds of power Upanishads, which could outnumber the number of clans in Agate Star Area.

Space power Upanishads could be deemed a heavenly one. It was hard to obtain and cultivate. Warriors couldn't find any scripture or Inheritance Source related to this power Upanishad in big auction houses.

Warriors who could obtain Space power Upanishad all had it by lucky chance. There was no school that taught this power. Also, no precedent of taking this power from a Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance was recorded.

It was not easy to recognize the special powers Upanishads even when a higher-realm warrior tried to sense the lower-realm warrior.

"Oh, it was when your Soul Consciousness contacted our barrier. Haha, our barrier is a bit special. It can distinguish kinds of power." The middle-aged man explained, "That barrier can identify the nature of power in Soul Consciousness and the real realm of the warrior. Little brother, you're at Second Sky of Original God Realm, but you're still pretty young. Your innate endowment is rare and excellent, indeed."

Shi Yan was shaken as he had another level of understanding of Potion and Tool Pavilion's awesomeness.

"Brother, you may want to consider my offer a bit more. People

with space power are rare. It's the same in Agate Star Area. Brother, warriors at your level are also extremely rare and precious." Pausing for a while, he continued, "Anyway, our Potion and Tool Pavilion has an Elder cultivating Space power Upanishad. He has reached Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm. Ah, our Potion and Tool Pavilion also has many books and scriptures about Space power Upanishad. We got them through our channels."

Shi Yan's eyes brightened.

. . . Space power Upanishad books were extremely rare and precious. It meant nothing to other warriors, but to warriors who cultivated space power, it was hard to describe how precious they were to them.

At least in Grace Mainland and Raging Flame Star Are, he had never seen any book about Space power Upanishad. Shi Yan knew the value of those books to him.

"How much do you want for them?" Hesitating for a while, his interest was aroused. He was a little excited.

Shaking his head with a smile, the middle-aged man with smallpox bumps looked at him deep in the eye and explained, "No, we don't sell them. No matter how much you pay, we won't sell them. If you didn't cultivate space power, I wouldn't babble about it. Of course, if you join us, little brother, we will let you assess them when you have a specific position."

Shi Yan was surprised and he frowned in silence.

"Well, you can consider a little more," the middle-aged was generous. He said seriously, "Our Potion and Tool Pavilion has strict rules in recruiting. It's not easy to join us anyway. Once you've entered Potion and Tool Pavilion, you are aloof to other forces in Agate Star Area. No other forces can threaten you. You can focus on your cultivation and you can use our materials and resources freely. To many warriors, joining Potion and Tool Pavilion is always a big dream. Brother, think about it. You don't

need to make a rash decision immediately."

After he said that, he nodded and smiled at him before leaving. Shi Yan sat down quietly. Looking at the immense star sea, he kept silent.

In the center of the battleship, the ring of the beautiful lady radiated strangely and unceasingly. Ancient and shattered books were lined up in front of her. She was holding one of them and reading it dedicatedly.

The old woman hunched, standing by her and looking at her with a loving countenance. She didn't disturb the young girl.

Chirp! Chirp!

A series of low chirping sounds came from a small octagonal formation on the left side of the young woman. That octagonal formation was made of unknown materials. However, it looked like a cattail leaf cushion. At this moment, it was emitting white light.

The woman dropped the book she was reading and frowned at the octagonal formation. A thought shot out, pouring into the eye of the formation.

Quickly, many books flew out of that formation. Those books were written in many languages. Apparently, they weren't from the same race. Her delicate fingers flickered and gathered some books.

The octagonal formation dimmed out, resuming its original state.

"Young Elder, all the books you've required to be sent from the headquarter are related to the Canon. Are you going to find it?" The old woman kept silent for a while. Seeing her master stop reading her books, she said softly, "The Canon has been lost for tens of thousands of years. There are many rumors about it.

Records of the Canon are vague. There is no direction that leads to it. Many Elders of our pavilion have tried for many years. Young Elder, if you invest your effort into this, I'm afraid... you're doing things in vain."

The woman arranged her shattered books neatly. She sighed reluctantly. "Right, I have no clue. I've read thirty-two documents related to the Canon. Anyway, each of them is vague. They say that the Canon is mysterious, but none of them mention the mysteries of its or why it has gone missing. Aunt An, you've been in the Pavilion for thousands of year. Do you know anything related to the Canon?"

The old woman named Aunt An frowned, sinking in her memories. After a long time, she said softly, "Tens of thousands of years ago, our Pavilion Master appeared in Agate Star Area. With the Canon, he established Potion and Tool Pavilion, gathering alchemists and blacksmiths from Agate Star Area. He set up rules and made Potion and Tool Pavilion a neutral force that stayed aloof from other forces. After the first Pavilion Master established Potion and Tool Pavilion, he grew old and deceased after hundreds of years. His soul vanished. After his death, people started to fight each other for the Master position. The Canon went missing in that chaotic time. Rumor says that one of the Elders took risks and took it away. That Elder disappeared from that time. We have never figured out where he had gone."

"Although the second Pavilion Master won and claimed the throne in glory, he had used all his means and efforts to search for the Canon in vain. It has been dozens of thousands of years and we now have the Fourth Pavilion Master. Potion and Tool Pavilion has earned a special position in Agate Star Area. We have insiders in every corner of the star area, but we still have no clue of the Canon. Our pavilion has spent tens of thousands of year fruitlessly. I think Young Elder shouldn't waste your effort in this. There is no guarantee that you can find it if you invest more efforts.

Everything depends on fortune."

Aunt An looked at the young woman gingerly. She had kindly advised her as she was afraid that the young woman would spend time in this hopeless matter.

She had watched this young lady grow. She knew her innate talents and competence. She was a candidate for the position of the Fifth Pavilion Master. If she focused, her party could reach the peak of glory through this young lady. They would have supreme power in the pavilion.

But if the girl had set her mind on something vague like the Canon, it could be a flame that burns down the hope of precursors in their party.

"The First Pavilion Master said in his will that the one who had the Canon would become the new Pavilion Master. If we found the Canon, it'd be much easier," said the young lady softly.

Aunt An shook her head miserably. "It's not that easy. If we could find it effortlessly, the Canon would have been found already."

The young woman kept quiet, sighing inwardly. She said nothing else. Looking at the shattered books, she suddenly felt bored.

"Young Elder, Feng An invited a junior onboard. Feng An said that he cultivates Space power Upanishad. His attainment is quite remarkable."

". . . A warrior with Space power Upanishad?" The woman's brow twitched. She seemed interested in the newcomer. "Uncle Duo asked us to pay attention to warriors who cultivate space power. If we meet someone like that, we must try to recruit him. Uncle Duo is at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm and his attainment in Space power Upanishad is high. However, he can't cover all the small formations. He needs an assistant. Does that man... meet Uncle Duo's requirements?"

"According to Feng An, he's suitable for this position," Aunt An

noded, "but he said he wasn't interested."

The young woman was surprised, "Our offers aren't good enough? Did Feng An tell him we have books of Space power Upanishad and that we have Uncle Duo, a Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm warriors who cultivates space power?"

"He told him," Aunt An beamed a forced smile.

"I'm going to talk to him myself." The young woman stood up. Her hand drew a curve in the air and the books disappeared into the ring on her bright-skinned wrist. She got out of the center cabin of the battleship, sauntering towards Shi Yan.

In a remote corner of the battleship, Shi Yan was closing his eyes, concentrating on recovering his energy. Energy in the divine crystals he was holding was drawn gradually.

He suddenly retrieved the divine crystals and lifted his head to look.

A lady wearing a loose dress, which dragged along on the ground, and small accessories, was walking towards him as if she was a fairy gliding in the air.

His eyes suddenly sparkled with bright light as he observed the small accessories on her body. He was astounded, indeed.

Shi Yan was also a blacksmith. His level in forging things could save him from embarrassing himself. So he had some keen eyes in this aspect. The young lady wore dozens of small items such as jade hairpins, rings, some pieces of jade embroidered on the hem of her dress, and more. Each of them had hidden energy moving inside. Shi Yan was sure that they were fabricated exquisitely with complex formations and barriers.

Sensing for a while, Shi Yan was sure that the dozens of small accessories on her body were all secret treasures at Divine Grade!

This discovery frightened him. He became stern. He didn't know what status this wealthy woman held in Potion and Tool Pavilion,

but the guards along her way had shown her respect as if she was the commander of this battleship.

Shi Yan became more cautious.

"I'm Fu Wei, the youngest among the twelve Elders of Potion and Tool Pavilion." The woman came agilely. She introduced herself tenderly. While she was walking, her accessories jingled like a murmuring stream in the mountain. Her eyes were as deep and blue as the ocean.

Shi Yan stood up quietly and nodded to her. "I am Shi Yan."

"On behalf of Potion and Tool Pavilion, I officially invite you to join us. As long as you nod your head, I'll arrange everything properly for you. I'll appoint you an assistant to a warrior who is at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm and cultivates Space power Upanishad. You will be able to access all books and scriptures about space power. Lord Duo will also teach you the essence of Space power Upanishad. What do you think?" Fu Wei extended her olive branch to him. She was speaking softly but seriously to him. She was confident that Shi Yan wouldn't turn her down.

"I'm sorry. I don't want to join Potion and Tool Pavilion," said Shi Yan calmly, shaking his head.

Fu Wei was astonished.

Chapter 976: Devil Blood Star

The center of the unknown, mysterious power Upanishad had many different bright currents of powers Upanishad. They looked like energy rivers crossing and flowing around the world as they followed some kind of movement principles.

Two souls were wandering in there like ghosts. They swayed and moved unconsciously and aimlessly. One of the two souls would stop by an open space door. Then, it would inch forward strenuously between the currents of fierce space energy.

They were Shi Yan's host soul and co-soul.

Since he had escaped the space crack, every time he meditated to understand his powers Upanishad further, his co-soul would be directed to that strange area.

A warrior who was fused with heaven flames and occupied the Origin could enter that place to study the true essence of his or her powers Upanishad.

Thus, after his soul had been washed crystal clear, he could go to this place simply as long as he flickered his mind. He could stay in the center to perceive a deeper understanding of his powers.

However, his body was still sitting on the deck of Potion and Tool Pavilion's gigantic battleship. He sat impassively as if he didn't have a soul. No soul energy rippled or fluctuated from him.

Fu Wei was the owner of this impressive battleship. She was the youngest Elder of Potion and Tool Pavilion. Shi Yan's objection had failed her, but she didn't keep it in her mind.

However, she was curious about Shi Yan.

Potion and Tool Pavilion was the most special force of Agate Star Area. It stayed aloofly from other forces. However, it was welcomed and favored by dominant forces and mighty clans. This organization had accumulated an enormous fortune that even Fu

Wei didn't completely know. The status of Potion and Tool Pavilion in Agate Star Area made countless warriors try their best to find a way to join them.

Fu Wei always thought that no one would reject the Pavilion's invitation.

Especially a warrior cultivating Space power Upanishad.

They had books of Space power Upanishad in their library. They had the strongest warrior who cultivated Space power at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm. They had all sorts of support to help warriors cultivating this power.

Shi Yan denied her offer.

Fu Wei couldn't understand it at all. She didn't know Shi Yan's identity either. Potion and Tool Pavilion had ears and eyes everywhere. They knew everything that happened in every corner of Agate Star Area.

Potion and Tool Pavilion had a detailed list of hotshots of all clans and forces, even the list of potential experts. Since Fu Wei was skeptical, she used the satellite eyes of her Potion and Tool Pavilion to search. However, she couldn't identify Shi Yan.

This discovery had baffled Fu Wei even more.

A bright blue mirror hung on the central cabin of the battleship that projected Shi Yan's image. He was idly sitting cross-legged. There was no sound or energy fluctuation around him.

Fu Wei's crescent moon brows furrowed. Her beautiful face mulled on her thought, but still, she looked mesmerizing.

The old woman she called Aunt An was standing by her. She was a little hunched. She also looked at the cold, stern, young man in the mirror skeptically. After a while, she whispered, "This man came from an unknown origin. Even our 'Satellite Eyes' couldn't identify him. It's a bit over our estimation. Young Elder, do you think he's from another star area?"

Fu Wei woke up from her contemplation. Her blue eyes twinkled magnificently. She cried tenderly, "It's possible."

Aunt An looked a little shocked. "Shadow Ghostly Prison is the space hub. It has many unstable space channels. If he comes from another star area, it's possible that he came here through Shadow Ghostly Prison." Pausing for a while, she smiled and suggested, "Do you want to start from there?"

Fu Wei shook her head. "No, it's not necessary. Although Lord Duo wants to find an assistant quickly, he has rejected our offer. We don't need to force him. It's tough to deal with unidentified people. If he does come from another star area, it may be harmful to us if we offend him."

"Yes, right," Aunt An nodded. "But it's regretful anyway. It's hard to find a suitable candidate. But he doesn't put our Potion and Tool Pavilion in his eyes. Sigh, I don't know when we can meet another warrior using space power."

"We're about to arrive at Devil Blood Star." Fu Wei rose one of her delicate fingers, touching the void.

The bright mirror floating above her head shrank into a piece of broken jade. It was hung on her generous hip. It became an everyday accessory.

"Oh right, we're about to reach Devil Blood Star." Aunt An smiled and bent her body slightly. "I'm going to arrange things." She immediately left with caution.

Fu Wei didn't answer. She mulled over her thoughts that the other didn't know.

Boom!

A violent shake came from the bottom of the battleship. The ship trembled hard before it could steady.

Shi Yan woke up from his fairyland-trip-like cultivation. The two souls returned to his soul altar. He looked at the guards but said nothing. He stood up and went to one side of the deck to take a look.

In front of him was an endless forest with towering, ancient trees. Earth and heaven energy here was as thick as cotton clouds that naked eyes could see. They drifted in the sky, creating a sea of energy.

The dense Demon Qi that the soul could recognize fluctuated everywhere in this forest. It swayed continually like the seaweed in the sea.

The gigantic battleship landed stably. The wet ground suddenly cracked and members of Demon Clan living underground emerged. They seemed to have received the news earlier. They were calling and cheering to welcome Young Elder Fu Wei of Potion and Tool Pavilion.

War chariots about a few dozens of meters long flew out from the massive battleship. Their engines hissed in the void. They aligned like asteroids in the sky, operating in a general direction. Each war chariot was filled with piles of exotic cultivating materials.

Potion and Tool Pavilion came to Devil Blood Star this time to transport cultivating materials that they had ordered. Since the quantity was enormous, Fu Wei had delivered the order personally to show respect to Blood Devil.

Besides her massive delivery, Fu Wei also came to do accounting and further discuss with Blood Devil for their future business.

Potion and Tool Pavilion had a cumbersome structure. The Elders of the pavilion had followed different forces. Fu Wei was the representative for one of the forces. Blood Devil was one of their important customers. If they could form a good relationship with Blood Devil, it would be critical to their force.

Looking at the war chariots flying away, Feng An with his smallpox bumps came to Shi Yan. He beamed a professional, business-like smile. "Little brother, our Young Elder has advised us. If you change your mind, you can contact Potion and Tool Pavilion at any time. We will treat you well."

Shi Yan didn't change his countenance. He smiled, nodded, and said, "Thank you." He jumped up, flashed, and left the battleship to another area of the forest.

Feng An looked at Shi Yan disappearing and sighed reluctantly. "Oh, he was such a good seed."

A huge meteorite was flying quickly toward the border of Agate Star Area.

The Giants, Fei Lan, and Leona's team were based on two sides of the rock. In the vast universe, this rock was moving fast unceasingly like a meteor.

In the center of the meteorite sat the Mother formation of the Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation that Na Xin had brought from Broken Star Field. Next to the formation was a pool where Thousand Fold Lotuses were floating. This pool was covered by a beautiful five-colored cage.

The meteorite didn't have earth and heaven energy. The Giants, Fei Lan, Leona, Long Zhu, Yun Hao, and the others had to use divine crystals to cultivate.

Until now, they had used up almost all the divine crystals that they had traded that year. If they used up all the divine crystals and didn't find a suitable life star to stay, their cultivation had to be suspended.

Divine crystals on the Mother formation still had a moving halo. Zhen Gu, the current Patriarch of the Giant Tribe, Ka Tuo, Yun Hao, Long Zhu, and the others were looking at several dozen

divine crystals inlaid in the Mother formation, their faces complicated.

"We can't touch these divine crystals!" Ka Tuo wore a cold and harsh face, gazing at Zhen Gu, Yun Hao, and the others. He said, "When my senior escapes, he will definitely contact us. Without these divine crystals, we will lose the connection with him utterly!"

"But we're about to use up the divine crystals. There is no life stars around or earth and heaven energy. We can't continue our cultivation. Our realm and power will decrease." Zhen Gu sighed and then said, "These dozens of thousands of divine crystals here are our last hope. Shi Yan hasn't contacted us for dozens of years. Perhaps, he has fallen. How can we count on him?"

"Thirty-two years," Long Zhu shook his head miserably. "If he's been alive, he should have contacted us a long time ago."

"He's alright," Yang Zhuo of the Yang family said with a dark face. "Wait for him more. If we use the divine crystals of the formation, we will lose contact with him. Without him, we will lose our hope of living in Agate Star Area."

"We Giants don't object if you want to wait for more," Zhen Gu frowned, "But we don't want to wait in misery for an endless amount of time. We want to use the divine crystals on the Mother formation. We can break through and then we can find a suitable life star to stay."

This rock came from Broken Star Field. When they escaped Old Orchid Star, they found this meteorite moving toward a remote area of Agate Star Area. All of them then got on the rock.

This meteorite was big enough to carry all of them. It was flying away from the Far West region and even Agate Star Area. It was still heading to the other end of the star area.

In the beginning, they felt very lucky. They were lucky that the

forces of the Far West region couldn't chase after them.

However, as time went by, this rock had moved further to the most rural and remote area of the life star. They didn't see any life star, mineral star, or even a dead star on the way. Gradually, they couldn't even see asteroids when there should have been a lot. This rose reluctance and despair in their hearts.

Until they had finally recognized the situation, they were somewhere at the edge of Agate Star Area where there were no residential areas. They didn't know where they were, either.

At this moment, their divine crystals had almost run out, which made them restlessly terrified.

Ka Tuo and Zhen Gu had started to quarrel whether to use the divine crystals on the Mother formation or not. Many warriors from Grace Mainland and Bi Tian's group of Raging Flame Star Area thought that Zhen Gu's idea was logical.

They didn't have any news from Shi Yan for thirty-two years. He didn't contact them through the Mother formation. They thought Shi Yan had bad fortune and might be gone already.

Compared to waiting in vain, it was better to use the divine crystals to secure their powers and find a life star to stay.

When their quarrel was fiercest, Feng Rao standing by the Mother formation suddenly shivered. Her voice trembled as she said, "It... It works! It has activated!"

Feng Rao's eyes became watery.

Chapter 977: Reunion

Looking at the muscular creature slowly walking out of the Mother formation, tears rolled down on Feng Rao's face uncontrollably. She felt her bitter sorrow that had accumulated over the years burst out all of a sudden.

Thirty-two years had passed. To some people, it was just a moment, but to others, it was like the eternal night without a beam of light, sinking people in only pain and sorrow.

Feng Rao thought Shi Yan had fallen, and his soul seal was eradicated. She thought she would never meet him again. But when she felt the most helpless, the Mother formation was activated, and Shi Yan walked out of the formation alone.

The familiar face, his familiar aura, his body... Everything was just like yesterday.

Feng Rao stooped and cried.

Zhen Gu of the Giant Tribe quieted down. He used his soul message to call Tribal Oldie Na Xin.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo got up, focusing on the man who had just arrived without moving.

Yang Zhuo of the Yang family, Long Zhu, Yun Hao, Bi Tian, alchemist Jester, Cao Qiu Dao, and Tang Yuan Nan were all shocked. They all gazed at the man who had just come through the formation.

At this moment, they knew how important this young man was to them.

No one could compare with him!

Shi Yan looked at the vague, vast universe, sending his Soul Consciousness around. He nodded tenderly. "You're all here. It's good. It's really good."

People then smiled.

Shortly after, Giant Na Xin came hurriedly, his face excited. "I didn't think you would still be alive."

"Of course, I'm alive," Shi Yan smiled casually, "Do I look like someone who would die young?"

Na Xin was a little embarrassed. "It's good that you're alright. Yeah, I feel so happy."

People started to gather. They were from the Raging Flame Star Area and the Grace Mainland, together with the Giants. Arriving from different corners of the meteorolite, they didn't say anything and just looked at him as if they were looking forward to seeing a new life.

Thousands of people had gathered. They all studied Shi Yan, who smiled naturally. "Much better than what I had imagined."

Shi Yan thought that after the catastrophe burst out in the Far West region, his friends and family in Old Orchid Star wouldn't be able to escape. At the moment he activated the formation, his hands had shivered as he expected the worst situation.

He hadn't expected everyone to still be alive. Although their current condition wasn't good, as long as their souls were still there, they could overturn any bad situation.

Staying alive was more important than anything else.

Yang Zhuo came over, patting Shi Yan's shoulder. Then, he told him things they had experienced throughout those years.

Shi Yan listened to him. When Yang Zhuo finished, Shi Yan smiled happily. Then, he looked at the Thousand Fold Lotuses which had moved here with their own pool. He frowned, extending his hand to collect them.

Each flower flew out of the pool, disappearing into the blue jar.

Everybody looked at him in silence, not disturbing him.

After a long time, he handed Na Xin several jars while smiling. "As our deal, these Thousand Fold Lotuses belong to the Giants."

Na Xin didn't refuse as he stashed them away and asked, "What should we do now?"

This place was a remote area by the edge of the Agate Star Area, without life stars or earth and heaven energy. It wasn't a place suitable for warriors. If they couldn't get rid of this place, they would have to use their energy to endure day after day. After a while, their realm would even decrease.

"We're getting out of here. I've found a new place for you to stay and cultivate at." Shi Yan pondered for a while and then advised, "We'll move all people and things."

While he was talking, divine crystals flew out of his ring, flying like raindrops on the Mother formation.

The Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation needed divine crystals as fuel. It would require a significant amount of divine crystals to move all people here. The divine crystals inlaid on the formation now wasn't enough to endure until their immigration finished.

Na Xin and Leona nodded. Yang Zhuo immediately ordered his fellows, asking them to gather with their properties.

Shortly, thousands of people gathered by the Mother formation, as Shi Yan directed them to move through the light door.

Divine Crystals energy was soon drained as time flew by slowly.

After an unknown time, most of the people on the meteorolite were gone. Now, only Na Xin, Leona, and Fei Lan were standing by Shi Yan.

"What do you want to do to this Mother formation?" Na Xin frowned.

At this moment, Na Xin had reached the Third Sky of Ethereal

God Realm. The inheritance he got from the Grace Mainland and the cultivating materials from Ai Fu in Broken Star City had helped him break through again after thirty-two years of ascetic cultivation.

Fei Land had also reached the Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. She had made new achievements in condensing her Ethereal Extent. Leona was at the First Sky of Ethereal God Realm, while Ka Tuo was at the Third Sky of Original God Realm. After thirty-two years, they had all advanced thanks to the benefit they received from Shi Yan.

"... Hmm, what to do with it...?" Shi Yan pondered for a while and then said, "You guys should go first. I'm going to seal the Mother formation, so other people can't use it to track us down."

This place was already isolated. It was far away from the Agate Star Area, and the meteorolite was still moving at breakneck speed.

The Mother formation could connect to the Child Formation. When they all left, the Mother formation would stay in this meteorolite. It was hard to tell if the rock would move to somewhere and someone would find it. That person could then use the Mother formation to come to Devil Blood Star and find Shi Yan's group.

It was hard to predict indeed!

Only warriors who cultivated Space power at Shi Yan's level could seal the Mother formation. To ensure their safety, Shi Yan would use space power to seal the Mother formation.

Na Xin and the others nodded, then entered the center of Mother formation one by one under Shi Yan's watch. Eventually, besides Shi Yan, there was no aura of living beings on this huge meteorolite, which was still moving fast in the infinite universe

This rock had detached from the Broken Star Field. Being blown

away by some unknown force, it headed to somewhere no one knew of. Perhaps, it would impact the barrier between star areas, being crushed into pieces of stone. Probably, it would become a smaller meteor, piercing through the star area barrier and turning into a meteor that fell into another star area.

Shi Yan quietly watched the stars around him and contemplated for a while before entering the Mother formation.

The light on the Mother formation shrank as the entire formation was sealed. It looked like it had disappeared from this massive rock, becoming a part of it without any distinctive energy fluctuation that people could sense.

Once this meteorolite exploded, the Mother formation would be obliterated.

However, if this meteorolite were still intact, one day when Shi Yan was backed into a corner, he could use the Child formation to escape a deadly pursuit.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

The light expanded on the Child formation. Shi Yan got out and then waved his hand to retrieve the Child formation into his Fantasy Sky Ring.

Giant trees with big branches towered the place, shielding off the light. However, there were still some sunbeams stubborn enough to pierce through the thick leaves and branches, shining on the wet ground of the forest. Tens of thousands of warriors gathered, looking at Shi Yan. They saw him retrieve the formation and then close his eyes, sinking into his thoughts.

After a while, Shi Yan took a deep breath, giving a broad smile while talking. "This is the Devil Blood Star, the territory of Demon Clan. I've just been here lately, but I think we can stay here."

Na Xin's eyes brightened as he screamed, unable to help himself. "Devil Blood Star! It's the Devil Blood Star!"

Devil Blood Star was very famous in the Agate Star Area. It was a level 7 life star, with the thickest earth and heaven energy. This star was guarded by an expert at the Second Sky of Incipient God Realm. Although the Agate Star Area was vast, Devil Blood Star was famous for its wealth. And, Blood Devil's reputation was echoed everywhere in this star area.

It was no doubt that staying in Devil Blood Star and cultivating here was the best dream they could ever have. During the days of moving aimlessly in the infinite universe, they had wished for even a level 1 or 2 life star to take shelter. It was the best they could hope for. But today, Shi Yan brought them to Devil Blood Star, the most famous life star in the entire Agate Star Area. How could they not crack up in thrill?

"Of course, I haven't connected with Blood Devil yet. For the time being, you guys shouldn't scatter. Wait until I've arranged everything properly." Shi Yan contemplated for a while and then said, "Stay put in this forest. Don't mess around. I'm going to see if I can contact Wu Lan or not."

Leona, Fei Lan, and Ka Tuo had their eyes brightened. They knew Wu Lan was a subordinate of Blood Devil. They thought Blood Devil and Shi Yan had some lineage. And, in this vast star area, Blood Devil didn't have any fellow from his tribe. Thus, he would favor Shi Yan, his new fellow who had appeared all of a sudden.

Listening to him, the other three nodded as they could ease their mind.

But, Na Xin and the Giants didn't know of his relationship with Wu Lan. Listening to him, they were actually a bit worried.

Blood Devil was infamous indeed. His brutal name had spread even to the rural areas like the Far West region. After Na Xin reached the Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm, he had become more cautious. He was worried if Blood Devil's troops would come and

attack them.

And, his worry came true shortly after...

A troop of around one hundred Demon soldiers had sensed the commotion inside the forest. They rode the white bone war chariots, roaring in the sky.

This forest was in the North-West of Devil Blood Star, and didn't have many visitors generally. So, when the patrol team found around tens of thousands of unidentified creatures here all of a sudden, it scared the patrol leader a lot. This area was his scope of patrolling, and this sudden situation was strange. If something unexpected happened, he wouldn't be able to get rid of trouble.

The squad of one hundred Demon soldiers rode the white bone war chariots. The troopers came from different branches of Demon Clan, including Black Scaled Tribe, Dragon Horned Tribe, Winged Clan, One-eyed Tribe, etc. Those tribes used to appear in the Grace Mainland. However, there were more clansmen they had never seen before. Those clansmen had horns or rock-like skin, while some had more limbs than normal people.

The patrol leader of this squad was a Dragon Horned man at the First Sky of Ethereal God Realm, called Wu Deng.

Wu Deng sat alone on a white bone war chariot, which had a lot of broken bones hung on it. He stood up, observing the shadows in the forest. His face grimaced as he asked, "Who are you? Daring to invade the Devil Blood Star? Don't you know whose territory it is? Capture them all!"

The war chariots roared and scattered, surrounding this large group of people.

Chapter 978: The most distinguished guest

Wu Deng shouted, making his troopers scatter. The war chariots hissed and roared in the sky, ready to attack the intruders at any minute.

Shi Yan and Na Xin looked at the war chariots circling them in the sky while frowning.

Na Xin didn't know of the situation, so he discreetly released his energy. The aura expanded from him like a surging ocean, covering the entire forest. In his Ethereal Extent, which was filled with the Five Elements energy, Na Xin slowly transformed, radiating dazzling lights.

As the Giants saw their oldie preparing to attack, they roared and stood up.

As they were cautious, the warriors of the Raging Flame Star Area and Grace Mainland were also hurried, their eyes cold but anxious. They were also prepared to resist.

However, they didn't have the confidence, and they were actually worried.

It wasn't the first time they had come to Agate Star Area. They knew about the brutal name of Blood Devil, and the Devil Blood Star was his territory.

Shi Yan frowned, looking at his people who were prepared to fight. He spread his arms to stop them. "Don't act indiscreetly!"

Na Xin was surprised, but he calmed down while talking to Shi Yan. "Can you?"

Shi Yan smiled, trying to ease the Giant's mind. "Leave it to me."

Then, he flew up, floating in front of Wu Deng's chariot while smiling at him. "I'm here to find Wu Lan. Please tell her Shi Yan's here."

Wu Deng was surprised. "You know Madame Wu Lan?"

"Yes. Please report. She will arrange things properly," explained Shi Yan.

Wu Deng nodded and signaled his troopers not to act rashly, then took a token he wore on his belt and proceeded to report something.

Many war chariots were harbored by a group of grand palaces in the center of Devil Blood Star. Warriors of the Potion and Tool Pavilion were continually transporting materials, looking like a colony of hard-working ants. Fu Wei was smiling, talking to the person standing next to her. Feng An stood by her, checking the materials in his records.

Wu Lan and Fu Wei stood together, their eyes brightening as they watched people deliver goods. Sometimes, Wu Lan nodded while listening to Feng An's summary.

"Where's precursor Blood Devil?" Fu Wei waved her white wrist, making a series of clear clinking sounds. She was wearing a long and loose dress, which draped over her charming, curvy body.

"He went to Monster Dragon Star to discuss some business. I've sent him a message. He'll be back soon." Wu Lan smiled. "Fu Wei, little sister, you look prettier every time I see you. You're the youngest Elder of the Potion and Tool Pavilion. You can soon control the whole Pavilion."

Fu Wei smiled weakly but naturally. "Lan-jie, you've complimented me too much. There're many parties in our Pavilion, and our Elders are all prominently talented. I don't dare to dream for the throne of the Pavilion Master."

"Haha, it's too early to say anything. Anyway, with your potential, you can step on that precious throne in glory. I believe in your competence." Wu Lan smiled and complimented.

Fu Wei was relaxed, chatting with Wu Lan. It seemed they had a

good friendship.

Suddenly, Wu Lan frowned as she found her token vibrating. She excused herself with a smile, then picked up the token, using her soul energy to listen to it.

In a moment, Wu Lan's eyes strangely brightened. She became so happy that she even hissed. "That kid escaped alive! He made it! It's so good." Wu Lan was so joyful.

Fu Wei and people of the Potion and Tool Pavilion were bewildered, as they didn't know why she was so happy she couldn't help it.

They all knew Wu Lan was the Majordomo of the Devil Blood Star. She helped Blood Devil with mundane junks and chores, and Blood Devil appreciated her a lot. Wu Lan wasn't a fighter class expert. However, she was meticulous. Her management was neat and precise. She was also in charge of the promotion of the tribes' warriors and the division of Devil Blood Star's land.

Wu Lan's realm wasn't high, but she held a special position in Devil Blood Star. She was the most essential subordinate of Blood Devil.

"Lan-jie, Master Blood Devil's about to come back?" Fu Wei smiled tenderly, raising her hand to stop Feng An from reporting more. "If Master Blood Devil's back, I'm going to discuss the situation with him... and of course, our new contract."

Wu Lan shook his head, "No, not him. Master will come back later. It's someone our Master has been waiting for since so long. Mei-mei, please wait for me. I'm going to pick him up myself."

"Oh please, suit yourself," Fu Wei hurried to express herself, but she was actually skeptical. Who was it that had to be welcomed by Wu Lan personally? Was it one of the two patriarchs of the Monster Clan in Monster Dragon Star?

Aunt An and Feng An standing next to her were also suspicious.

They also assumed that the new guest had a high position and status. Otherwise, the Majordomo of the Devil Blood Star wouldn't need to welcome him personally.

...

Above the forest...

Wu Deng, the patrol leader of this troop, stiffened his face. He immediately put away his arrogant expression, flew out of his war chariot, and slightly bowed to Shi Yan. "Please wait for a moment. Madame Wu Lan will arrive shortly."

When Wu Deng looked at Shi Yan, he couldn't hide his fear and suspicion.

It was because Wu Lan had told him, 'That's the most distinguished guest of our Master.'

Wu Deng lowered his head, but he was looking at Shi Yan, a Second Sky of Original God Realm warrior. He had a lot of doubts he couldn't explain.

He suddenly recalled something. Slightly changing his face, he shouted at his troopers. "Get down here, y'all! This is our most distinguished guest. Treat him with respect!"

Hearing him, everybody became baffled. The members of his troop didn't have a clue. However, seeing their leader getting angry, they obediently descended from the sky. They all looked at Shi Yan bewilderedly, the young leader of this group of strangers. However, a storm was rising in their hearts.

'... This kid is that most distinguished guest?'

Na Xin, Bi Tian, Long Zhu, and Yang Zhuo were also petrified, looking at the young man with a discreet fright.

After two hours, a plump silhouette appeared. As soon as she arrived, her soft voice arose. "You! Why are you so late? Do you know our Master has been waiting for you with a lot of worries?"

Wu Lan halted, steadying her body in front of Shi Yan. While smiling, she shouted at him. "Our Master has used a lot of blood in search for you. He couldn't find your trace in Agate Star Area. He thought you were... Our Master had mourned for you for a long time."

Wu Deng and the members of the one-hundred-member troop were shocked as if they were struck by lightning.

Our Master had used blood to find this kid? Who was he?

Since they had followed Blood Devil for so many years, they knew he was haughty. He didn't put anyone in his eyes. Even when the Patriarch of the Evil Dragon Tribe or Brutal Dragon Tribe visited him, he could be mad and shout at them. They had never heard their Master favor anybody.

"I came across something unexpected. I'd been confined in the space crack for thirty-two years. I just got out of it," Shi Yan smiled reluctantly.

"No wonder," Wu Lan got it, smiling unceasingly. "I knew it. Your powers aren't ordinary. You are indeed cunning and smart. How could you die early, right? When Master couldn't find you in Agate Star Area, he said perhaps you were in some space crack. Or else, it was impossible that he couldn't have found you."

While talking, Wu Lan rose her hand, telling Wu Deng. "Take our distinguished guest to East of Devil Blood Star. Take them to the territory of the Dwarf Demon Tribe, which they have cleaned before. Our Master has arranged this place for them.

Wu Deng was frightened. He couldn't help but study Shi Yan, his eyes filled with respect.

Not long after Wu Lan's team came back from the Far West region, Blood Devil had ordered the Dwarf Demon Tribe to move out of their richest piece of lands, which was then kept available for years. The members of the Dwarf Demon Tribe didn't dare to

protest against their Master's decision, and had moved away as they were told.

At that time, Demons living in the Devil Blood Star couldn't explain their Master's deed. They didn't know why he gave such order.

The land they had spared was kept available for many years. The Dwarf Demon Tribe used to ask to take their property back. However, Blood Devil had always rejected their proposal.

No one knew for whom Blood Devil had prepared the land. Many subordinates of Blood Devil had made guesses, but they didn't have any clear idea.

But today, Wu Deng finally got it. He could clearly know how important Shi Yan's group was in Blood Devil's mind finally.

Wu Deng was so frightened that he sweated. He knew he was lucky because he hadn't attacked the others rashly. If he had hurt the distinguished guests, Master would skin him alive.

Wu Lan, Wu Deng, and his troop guided Na Xin's Giants and the other to East of Devil Blood Star. Na Xin and Yang Zhuo didn't know anything. They just looked at the sky bewilderedly.

Seeing Shi Yan nod, they became calm and smiled, following Wu Deng's troop to the territory Blood Devil had arranged for them thirty-two years ago. In their opinion, Shi Yan now had so many secrets, but they trusted him with all their hearts.

"Our Master has gone to Monster Dragon Star. He'll be back in several days. Come here, we're going to the main hall to talk and wait for him." After all of them were gone, Wu Lan invited Shi Yan.

Shi Yan nodded, "As you've arranged."

...

Fu Wei and her people of the Potion and Tool Pavilion were

standing on a black stone square. She stooped to ask her warriors, who were transporting the goods, to be careful with many fragile items like the jade products. Before being refined, they were really eggshell.

"Who is that VIP? Who's important enough to make Wu Lan leave us here and welcome him personally?" Feng An frowned. "Blood Devil and the two Chiefs of the Evil Dragon Tribe and Brutal Dragon Tribe are close to each other. He's in the Monster Dragon Star now, so it's not one of the Chiefs... Hmm, except for them, I can't really think we could have such high and noble status."

Aunt An also shook her head, "I don't know, either."

"Recently, Blood Devil has caused big commotions. I don't know what he thought when he sent a fleet, marching to the Far West region. I heard they killed so many people." Feng An frowned, "Logically, it's impossible that he would lay his eyes on a small area like that Far West region. I don't know why he was enraged all of a sudden like that. This man doesn't reason. We can't understand him."

"I'm curious whom Wu Lan's going to receive." Aunt An furrowed her brows.

"We will know shortly," Fu Wei's face was natural. She looked calm as if nothing could distract her.

However, seeing Wu Lan and Shi Yan walking together, Fu Wei, who was always placid, had her soft body shiver. Her green eyes showed that she was disbelieving. Evidently, she was frightened.

Chapter 979: Immense Wealth

Shi Yan was also startled. He looked at Fu Wei and the people of Potion and Tool Pavilion, beaming a smile. "Oh, we meet again."

Fu Wei, Feng An, and the others exchanged looks. They were all bewildered.

They had never thought that Wu Lan's distinguished guest was Shi Yan. This surprised them very much. They didn't know why Shi Yan had only Second Sky of Original God Realm but was able to make Wu Lan leave them to welcome him.

On the way to this star, Fu Wei's team had kept an eye on Shi Yan. They had even used Potion and Tool Pavilion's huge records of hotshots of different clans to search for Shi Yan.

They received nothing.

Fu Wei reacted and smiled. "I didn't know that you were Wu Lan's distinguished guest. No wonder you aren't interested in joining our Potion and Tool Pavilion."

"Oh?" Wu Lan looked at them curiously. "You guys know each other?"

"Yeah, I came to Devil Blood Star with them. They let me take a ride on the battleship."

Shi Yan explained, looking at the colorful cultivating materials that were transported to the grand palaces. He had an idea and he asked the other, "Your Potion and Tool Pavilion also buys materials, I suppose?"

"Of course," Feng An laughed, "Little brother, don't you know that our Potion and Tool Pavilion is the biggest trader of Agate Star Area? We do sell and buy many things."

"Fu Wei mei-mei has a good relationship with us. We have bought many good and rare materials, battleships, and war

chariots from them. We've done business with them for years." Wu Lan spoke to Shi Yan, her face serious. "Do you have something you wanna sell?"

"Yeah, I do. I also want to trade for cultivating materials for my friends." Shi Yan pondered for a while. His mind flickered, calling a Blue Ice Jar from his Fantasy Sky Ring.

The blue container emerged. Magical energy slowly fluctuated from it. Shi Yan extended his hand, touching the void. The Blue Ice Jar flew towards Fu Wei.

Shi Yan had harvested twenty-third Thousand Fold Lotuses and stored them in Blue Ice Jars. Giant Na Xin kept ten flowers. Shi Yan had thirteen flowers. Each Thousand Fold Lotus had many layers like an extended Sea of Consciousness. It had marvelous soul energy fluctuating unceasingly.

Fu Wei's jade-like, slender hand caught the Blue Ice Jar. Her smile froze on her face. She screamed in surprise. "Thousand Fold Lotus! Three flowers!"

Aunt An and Feng An's eyes brightened. They couldn't help but look at Shi Yan, their faces stern.

The Thousand Fold Lotus was incredibly precious. It had marvelous effects on the soul. Even Incipient God Realm warriors could use the Thousand Fold Lotus to increase their soul energy. Each flower was priceless. This kind of flower was famous in the entire Agate Star Area.

Fu Wei's team came from Potion and Tool Pavilion. They all had knowledge of precious and rare materials. Thus, they all knew the values of the Thousand Fold Lotus. All were shocked at this moment.

Wu Lan was bewildered. She pulled herself together, looking at Shi Yan deep in his eyes. "You have Thousand Fold Lotuses?"

Shi Yan smiled and nodded.

Wu Lan took a deep breath, talking all of a sudden. "Don't sell them. We can keep them. If you need divine crystals, we can give them to you."

"Don't!" Fu Wei intervened. She said with a smiling face, "We can offer you a high price! Five million top-quality divine crystals for each! What do you think?"

Wu Lan waved her hand, smiling like a flower. "We can't buy Thousand Fold Lotus that easily. Five million isn't a small number. But it's not enough to buy these flowers." She chuckled, speaking to Shi Yan. "The Thousand Fold Lotus is a great tonic to the soul. After refining, it can strengthen the Sea of Consciousness and increase soul energy. It's easy to sell, but it's tough to buy. Don't be impulsive."

"I'm grateful that you guys have accepted us living in Devil Blood Star. However, I don't want to bother you with everything. I can't use your divine crystals for free." Shi Yan contemplated and then shook his head. "We can't take advantage of you guys like that."

Wu Lan was astonished. But then, she smiled at him. "Okay, so here it is. I represent Devil Blood Star who will buy your Thousand Fold Lotuses. I will pay eight million divine crystals for each. You can use the divine crystals to buy materials you need from Potion and Tool Pavilion. What do you think?"

Shi Yan's eyes brightened. He didn't hesitate and nodded directly. "Okay!"

Fu Wei was holding the Blue Ice Jar. She was reluctant. However, seeing Wu Lan and Shi Yan seal their deal, she couldn't do anything. She handed the jar holding the Thousand Fold Lotuses and sighed... "Forget it, I won't try to get someone else's favorite objects."

Wu Lan smiled happily, clutching the Blue Ice Jar. "I'll give you divine crystals later. You can talk to them about the materials. I can arrange it for you immediately."

She called curtly.

A Demon old man wearing gray garments emerged from the palace. He replied with respect. "Madame, is there anything you want?"

"Bring me twenty-four million top-quality divine crystals," asked Wu Lan.

The old man nodded, saying nothing before leaving.

"Please help me fetch some people here. Yeah, the ones I've brought." Shi Yan smiled, looking at Wu Lan. "Na Xin of the Giant Tribe, Jester, Yang Zhuo, and Long Zhu, my fellows. Please bring them here. I'm not familiar with cultivating materials. I'll let them handle it."

"No problem." Wu Lan agreed and then shouted. She asked a troop to fetch the said people.

"Oh, so you are going to have a great shopping time." Fu Wei smiled. "I didn't expect another big business when coming to Devil Blood Star this time. Oh right, we need to stay here longer."

"Fu Wei mei-mei, Shi Yan is our Devil Blood Star's distinguished guest. You can't try to steal a deal from him."

"Nah, how could I? We never deceive people. You know it, right?" Fu Wei said seriously. "We can't finish this business quickly. We should rest for a while. We've got a long journey. I think everybody is tired now."

"Alright."

Wu Lan had arranged Fu Wei and Potion and Tool Pavilion's people to stay in an ancient black-stone building tens of thousands of square meters. After they had settled, Fu Wei and Aunt An found a quiet stone chamber. Fu Wei touched the Fantasy Sky Ring which made dilapidated books and ancient scrolls fly out.

Aunt An didn't know why Fu Wei did that she Aunt An just stood

and watched her.

Fu Wei checked each of them, her face focused. Sometimes she frowned, "No, not this one. Oh, not this one, either."

"Young Elder, what are you looking for?" Actually, this old woman was called An Yun. She couldn't help but ask. "Those books of the Canon, you've studied them all, haven't you? Why do you want to skim through them again?"

An Yun didn't want Fu Wei to waste more time searching for the Canon. She thought that seeking for the top treasure that the Elders of their Pavilion had spent tens of thousands of years would amount to nothing. It wouldn't be easy for her to find it.

"No, no, no. It's not true." Fu Wei ignored her. She was still skimming through her books. After a while, her eyes brightened and she hissed, "This one!"

Flutter! Flutter!

Fu Wei flipped the pages fast, her face extremely stern. Her slender fingers suddenly stopped, pointing at a paragraph on a page. Her beautiful eyes became bewildered. She didn't talk for quite a long time.

Throwing the dilapidated book to An Yun, Fu Wei uttered, "Aunt An, read it yourself."

An Yun was bewildered, receiving the shattered book. At first glance, she froze. "That year when that Elder ran away... he brought the seeds of Thousand Fold Lotus and the Canon?"

She understood why Fu Wei was so hurried.

"The Thousand Fold Lotus is also rare in Agate Star Area. It doesn't have many sanctuaries, either. It will take ten thousand years to form. Right after that, the flower will be picked shortly." Fu Wei took a deep breath. "As he could take three flowers at the same time, it means that the area hasn't been discovered for at least tens of thousands of years. Aunt An, do you think... it's

related to the Canon somehow?"

An Yun was startled. She contemplated for a while and then jabbered, "It could be..."

She became excited. "If we can find the Canon, our position will change greatly. Now those Elders are aggressive. They are discontent with us. If we bring the Canon back, you can get the throne of the Pavilion Master! It was unexpected to find news of the Canon! This trip to Devil Blood Star was a wise decision, indeed!"

Fu Wei's heart was shivering. Her beautiful face blushed. "We can't confirm this yet. It seems like we have to talk to that guy. Yeah, we better avoid Wu Lan of Devil Blood Star. She knows the value of the Canon. If she knows this information, we will have to pay a big price. Sometimes, information is priceless!"

An Yun nodded.

Fu Wei took a deep breath. Her breasts shivered. She gritted her teeth and said, "I'm going to find him and speak to him! As long as we have news of the Canon, we have to find it at any cost!"

"Alright!"

...

Inside a spacious palace, Wu Lan was very excited, watching the Blue Ice Jar. She smiled at Shi Yan. "You do have good fortune! You can get the Thousand Fold Lotus. Maybe you don't know the value of the Thousand Fold Lotus, but it's something that even Incipient God Realm warriors drool for. Yeah, if Master knows I got three flowers, he will be thrilled!"

Shi Yan sat on a soft couch, drinking red wine. He said deliberately, "I still have some."

Wu Lan was perplexed.

"Honestly, we have twenty-three Thousand Fold Lotuses. Giant

Na Xin keeps ten. You bought three. I still have ten," said Shi Yan with a smile.

"Twenty-three pieces of Thousand Fold Lotus! There are twenty-three flowers!" Wu Lan looked at him as if she was looking at a monster. She jolted up from her seat. "Shi Yan, tell me honestly. Where did you get these flowers? Anything else you have in that place?"

"Old Orchid Star," Shi Yan pondered for a while. He didn't want to conceal so he explained to her how they had lifted the mysterious city underground to harvest the Thousand Fold Lotus.

Shi Yan could see that Wu Lan did not have any evil intentions. This woman knew more secrets of the Agate Star Area. Perhaps she knew that mysterious ancient city. Thus, he told her.

"The mysterious city buried underground? The gravity there is more than ten thousand times heavier than here?" Wu Lan was aghast. Strange light rippled in her eyes. "A lumber of Life Ancient Tree, an evil dragon skull, and a strange book? Don't you think your fortune is too good?"

"The lumber of Life Ancient Tree of the Wood Clan was sold. Na Xin used the evil dragon skull to refine his body. Now I have only the Thousand Fold Lotuses and a strange, unknown book."

"Can you show me the book?"

"Alright."

Shi Yan touched his Fantasy Sky Ring. He took out the yellowed book and threw it at Wu Lan. "Here, this book."

Chapter 980: Refine Thousand Fold Lotus

Wu Lan held the ancient book and carefully checked it. Exquisite beams of light sparkled from her fingertips while she studied the book. Those beams of light poured into the book like many snakes. She frowned, sinking in her thoughts.

Shi Yan lay relaxed, taking sips of red wine in his glass while his eyes checked each of Wu Lan's moves.

After a while, Wu Lan shook her head, her eyes suspicious. "I've never seen this language before. The material of this book is also unique. Although I poured energy into it, I can't grasp the meaning of its writings. Hmm, I can't decode its mysteries."

Wu Lan returned the ancient book to Shi Yan.

"Forget it, I know this book is strange. Yeah, I will study it later," Shi Yan didn't bother with it. He put the ancient book into his Fantasy Sky Ring and then continued drinking.

Shortly after, the old man Wu Lan had sent away to bring divine crystals reverently and respectfully came back with a glistening green ring. This ring had some dedicate yet inexplicable carvings and beams of space energy. "Madame, here are twenty-four million top-quality divine crystals as you asked."

Wu Lan waved her hand, signaling the man to give it to Shi Yan.

Squeezing the ring, Shi Yan sent a wisp of Soul Consciousness into the ring.

It was a strange, bright space where top-quality divine crystals piled up. Each pile was several hundred meters high. Each divine crystal was pellucid with distinctive light and vigorous energy.

After his Soul Consciousness returned, Shi Yan beamed a smile and nodded to Wu Lan. "Yeah, twenty-four million top-quality divine crystals. This is my biggest fortune. I didn't expect that the three flowers could earn me this much."

"You don't know how precious Original Incipient Grade materials are." Wu Lan burst out laughing. "Honestly, the price of Thousand Fold Lotus could reach at least ten million divine crystals in the auction house. I bought it for eight million only. I'm taking advantage of you already."

Shi Yan smiled, not bothering with that. "We can't calculate too much in business. Otherwise, we would earn one but lose ten. Moreover, it's your grace that allows us to stay in Devil Blood Star. You should have some benefits. It's natural."

Wu Lan was content with his manners. She smiled at him, "I've done things to seek profits for my Master. After he absorbs these three Thousand Fold Lotuses in his Sea of Consciousness, his Sea of Consciousness could expand one-tenth. It would be a big help to my Master. I think he will be thrilled."

"Yes, it's good," nodded Shi Yan.

"Thousand Fold Lotuses still need to be refined once," Wu Lan contemplated for a while and then explained. "Thousand Fold Lotuses grow in dim-lit and cold places. They can't be exposed to the light directly. A Thousand Fold Lotus would need at least ten thousand years to grow to its full size. As it has stayed in a cold place for ten thousand years, it will have a lot of cold Qi. This kind of Qi has filled every petal of the lotus. We can't take it into the Sea of Consciousness. Thus, before we use the flower, we must clean that cold Qi. Of course, if the user's power Upanishad is the cold power, it'll be much better and the cold Qi won't harm anything."

Pausing for a while, Wu Lan continued, "I've observed your powers Upanishad. Your soul altar doesn't have the cold Qi, right?"

"Yes, seems like I have to refine them a little bit." Shi Yan smiled. His thoughts flickered and another Blue Ice Jar emerged from his palm.

Wu Lan's beautiful eyes brightened. Her red lips curved as she was surprised. "Seems like you do have more Thousand Fold

Lotuses. Your fortune is what people have yearned for."

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

Flows of scorching flames flew out from Shi Yan's fingertips. They ran like electric beams aimed at the Blue Ice Jar. His Soul Consciousness moved and his altar spun silently.

Wu Lan was bewildered, her soft body shuddering. Her eyes were glued to Shi Yan's fingers as she became stern.

"Heaven Flame?" Wu Lan pried, her face gingerly.

"Yes, Heaven Flame," Shi Yan confirmed. His eyes concentrated, using his soul to control Heaven Flame, which was moving and wiggling like snakes around the Blue Ice Jar and seeping into layers of the lotus' petals. This operation was to eliminate the cold Qi in the flowers.

Wu Lan's beautiful eyes were both frightened and regretted. She studied him, not saying anything for a long moment.

She had never thought that Shi Yan could have heaven flames. In Agate Star Area, heaven flames were very rare. Only the ancient continent or the life star with an Origin could have them. Agate Star Area also had ancient continents. However, they were broken as they exploded into pieces and made them drift away, becoming part of the infinite universe.

Wu Lan had studied descriptions related to ancient continents and heaven flames. She knew about the powers of heaven flame and the mysteries of the Origin.

A warrior who fused with heaven flames could reach the origin of powers Upanishad to understand the nature of powers Upanishad better. His progress on realm and powers would be much greater than ordinary warriors.

At Second Sky of Original God Realm, Shi Yan had a great innate endowment in Wu Lan's eyes. She had doubts naturally since Shi Yan wasn't old enough to reach such a profound realm. However,

when she saw heaven flames, she understood the answer. She was shocked.

The Blue Ice Jar had the clear blue light of the ocean when the heaven flame entered it. It then turned into a blue light curtain, shrouding the Blue Ice Jar.

The Blue Ice Jar turned into a chunk of the pellucid blue chunk. It was transparent enough to see the Thousand Fold Lotuses inside.

The Blue Ice Jar was a specialized space container, which was customized with a unique method. At this moment, the fire snakes were visible inside the jar. They moved like fire gossamer extending towards every corner of the Blue Ice Jar, seeping into each petal of the flowers.

Wu Lan kept quiet and watched. She didn't dare to disturb him.

Silently, rainbow lights, a red-orange flame, and a gold-red flame appeared, weaving with each other inside the dim blue halo of the Blue Ice Jar with complexity.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

Flows of cold Qi seeped out from the magical lines in the Blue Ice Jar, turning into a white mist. They vanished shortly afterward.

After two hours, Wu Lan didn't know that she had been observing Shi Yan's operation for that long.

Shi Yan's closed eyes opened when he exhaled. He smiled brightly, "I'm done."

The dim blue halo wasn't projected anymore. The Blue Ice Jar sat quietly in his hand. It became simple and natural. As it wasn't pellucid anymore, people couldn't see what it contained.

Wu Lan's body shivered. She woke up from fright. When she looked at Shi Yan again, her eyes were filled with unclear intentions. "You... Sigh... Seems like we've underestimated you. Who could have guessed that you had so many secrets..."

"Ah, not many. I'm just luckier than other people." Shi Yan put the Blue Ice Jar away. Lifting his head to look at the stone door, Shi Yan said, "My people have arrived. I'm going to arrange something."

Wu Lan nodded.

Na Xin of the Giant Tribe, Jester, Long Zhu, Yang Zhuo, and Feng Ke was cautiously following a Demon soldier. They came quietly.

Devil Blood Star was Blood Devil's territory. In Agate Star Area, it was a high-ranked life star where countless experts of the Demon Clan dwelled. To Na Xin's team, they had to be careful as they were the tenants.

When they saw Shi Yan, they exhaled in relief. Yang Zhuo smiled, calling. "Little Yan, what did you call us here for?"

"You guys should talk." Wu Lan smiled and then excused herself. The Demon guards in this hall also behaved. They left with Wu Lan, leaving room for Shi Yan and the others.

"I sold three Thousand Fold Lotuses." Shi Yan looked at Na Xin, his face serious. "One Thousand Fold Lotus was priced at eight million divine crystals. I got twenty-four million top-quality divine crystals."

Na Xin, Jester, Yang Zhuo were perplexed. Their bodies shook as they were thrilled.

"Precursor Na Xin, at the moment, don't sell your Thousand Fold Lotuses. It's easy to sell the flowers, but it's tough to buy them, indeed. We have twenty-four million divine crystals now. I think it's enough to buy cultivating materials from Potion and Tool Pavilion." Shi Yan lowered his voice and advised, "For the money we have, you guys should discuss and see what kind of materials we need."

"Alright!" Na Xin didn't have any other opinions. He agreed

immediately. He said with satisfaction. "Kid, you always have keen eyes. I'll follow you! My tribe's future counts on you and your efforts. My deepest thanks to you."

He didn't wait for Shi Yan to answer. Na Xin bowed to him in the most respectful etiquette of the Giants. His gratitude was visible on his face.

Shi Yan was shocked. He waved his hand continually as he felt shy. Then, he asked Na Xin, Jester, Long Zhu, Feng Ke, and Yang Zhuo to list up the materials they needed so they could place the order with Fu Wei of Potion and Tool Pavilion.

Two hours later, Na Xin's group had a list of different kinds of materials including pellets to refine the body, strange bone materials, Divine Grade secret treasures that could reflect the soul and communicate with the soul altar, different kinds of armor, a Fantasy Sky Ring, herbs that could stimulate energy, and even specialized and customized battleships.

After the five of them came up with this list, they couldn't hold their happy smiles anymore. They had never thought that they could be able to buy so many kinds of precious materials like this one day.

"Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance! We need it!" Yang Zhuo and Long Zhu said, "The Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance has descriptions of power Upanishads that could guide the warriors on their cultivating path. It's a big help to the warriors to determine which power is most suitable for them."

Yang Zhuo and Long Zhu came from Grace Mainland. They understood well the importance of the Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance. For instance, the juniors like Yang Meng and Li Feng hadn't found a suitable power for them to cultivate. Without a power Upanishad, they wouldn't be able to create a soul altar to reach the True God Realm.

Raging Flame Star Area and Agate Star Area had the Source of

Power Upanishad Inheritance. At the same time, there was a classification based on the number of powers Upanishad, level of the power, beginner, medium, or advance. With a high-level Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance, it would be easy to advance in their power Upanishad cultivation to the warriors of Grace Mainland.

Shi Yan understood the mysteries. He nodded and said, "We should discuss in detail with people from Potion and Tool Pavilion."

Everybody nodded and couldn't hide their excitement.

Chapter 981: You like him?

In another palace of the Devil Blood Star, Fu Wei, Shi Yan, and Wu Lan were sitting together, eating crystal-like fruits and drinking wines while chatting cheerily.

Sitting by a round table in the center of the hall under their place were An Yun and Feng An, who were talking with Jester, Na Xin, Feng Ka, Yang Zhuo, and Long Zhu. They were smiling, confirming the price of different cultivating materials of the Potion and Tool Pavilion.

After four hours, the Potion and Tool Pavilion got an order of two million divine crystals, which they had to treat with great care. It included many different cultivating materials that required a great deal of patience to study and list up the price.

Luckily, they had sealed the deal. Na Xin, Yang Zhuo, and the others were so happy.

Wu Lan glared at Fu Wei, grinning, "Mei-mei, you're so generous! Haha... You've always calculated a lot when doing business with our Devil Blood Star. Why do you treat Shi Yan especially?"

Pausing for a while, Wu Lan couldn't help but tease her, "I think you've been touched on seeing our handsome Little Yan. You like him, right?"

Fu Wei blushed, glancing at Wu Lan, "Jie-jie, don't tease me!"

Shi Yan was a little embarrassed. He just chuckled, but didn't intervene.

Wu Lan insisted on being here since she was afraid the Potion and Tool Pavilion's staff could deceive Shi Yan.

In fact, Fu Wei was really generous this time. The prices they offered were much lower when they had done business with Devil Blood Star, which stirred Wu Lan up.

Shi Yan didn't know why this woman did so. As far as he had known about them, the Elders of Potion and Tool Pavilion would calculate a lot when doing business with the others. When they confirmed the price, they wouldn't let the other bargain.

However, Fu Wei gave way from time to time. Moreover, she had initially offered the best price to them. Many expensive materials had been sold with significant discount and promotion.

Listening to her quotation, Wu Lan gawked, her face disbelieving.

Being the Majordomo of the Devil Blood Star, she was in charge of doing business with the Potion and Tool Pavilion. Although they had been working together for years, she hadn't got any advantage from Fu Wei. Sometimes, she had to use all of her skills to get a little discount.

But dealing with Shi Yan this time, Fu Wei didn't wait for him and Wu Lan to bargain. She had offered the materials that they needed to negotiate the price easily at once, which also frightened An Yun and Feng An. It also seemed difficult for them to arrange it.

Fu Wei tried to oppress them, asking them to make deals using the price she told them. Feng An felt irritated, sighing all the time. However, he didn't dare to quarrel with her.

Feng An often looked at Shi Yan with different eyes. He thought that Fu Wei offered them the best price because she favored Shi Yan, who cultivated Space power. He even believed that Fu Wei was a little insane right now, as the other had rejected them. He wouldn't join the Potion and Tool Pavilion, so why should she treat him with more benefits like that?

Fu Wei had given way to this order, which caused the loss of several million divine crystals. Feng An thought it was such a big waste.

Fu Wei had never done that before.

An Yun could guess Fu Wei's intention. However, she didn't agree with her. They got no clue about the Canon, and Fu Wei had already given them low prices. If they got nothing from this, wouldn't it have their veins explode in anger?

After they had closed the deal, Na Xin and Jester looked refreshed and happy as they smiled and excused themselves.

The Potion and Tool Pavilion had sold them a high-grade Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance at one million top-quality divine crystals. However, Wu Lan told Shi Yan it would cost at least one million and three hundred thousand divine crystals. Fu Wei had given them a discount of three hundred thousand divine crystals. It was insane indeed.

Wu Lan had a lot of doubts, though. She sometimes glanced at Fu Wei and Shi Yan, becoming excited discreetly.

Was it true that Fu Wei did like Shi Yan?

She instinctively came up with that idea, so she teased the woman the second time, "Hey mei-mei, if you got the same quotation for our next business, I will treat you as if you are my blood sister. Sigh! You've known Shi Yan for not too long. Well, several months, I think. But, you have given him such a big discount, and you say you don't like him. I wonder what reason you have to do that."

Shi Yan became more embarrassed. He turned around to not look at her, but he was skeptical still.

Fu Wei was teased, glaring at her maliciously as she screamed tenderly, "Jie-jie, can you be quiet? I can see he's your Devil Blood Star's distinguished guest, and today is the first time we've done business, that's why I gave him a discount. In our next deal, I will apply the same price like yours. Well, if not, should I bear the loss another time?"

Wu Lan smiled, but she didn't say anything. However, her eyes were indeed skeptical and meaningful, which indicated she had confirmed the fact that Fu Wei liked Shi Yan.

Fu Wei's lady heart was annoyed. She sighed reluctantly and just ignored the woman.

"Alright, we're looking forward to seeing your delivery." Shi Yan suddenly got up as he thought he would be teased continually by staying here. He wanted to leave now.

Wu Lan also stood up.

At this moment, Fu Wei leaned her softy body over. She put the glass of wine down while sighing and talking sweetly, "Shi Yan, can you stay for a while? I... I have something I want to talk to you in private. Can you spare me a moment?"

Wu Lan was baffled as she oddly looked at her. "Mei mei... Do you... Do you really like him? Argh, never mind. Forget it! I won't disturb you guys anymore. I'm leaving now."

Looking at Fu Wei's blushing face, which was so soft they could squeeze water out of it, Wu Lan knew she shouldn't push it further. As Wu Lan was afraid that she would enrage Fu Wei, she shut her mouth and left.

Fu Wei had her face red, biting her lower lip. She was embarrassed indeed. She looked at Shi Yan and asked her staff. "You guys can go now."

An Yun and Feng An looked odd. However, they didn't say anything. They slightly bent their body to greet her and then left.

Before Feng An had reached the main gate, he turned around to have a glimpse of Shi Yan. He felt a strange fear, but he didn't know why.

"Does our Young Elder really like him?" After they left the room, Feng An suddenly lowered his voice while frowning. "Young Elder's the most prominent candidate for the Pavilion Master

position. It's been so many years, and our Young Elder has seen many types of men, as many as fishes in the river. They are the heirs of clans, leaders of mighty forces, and so on. But, she keeps her heart clear. She has never given them a good face. What about this time?"

"Don't think too much. Young Elder knows what to do. She will behave," An Yun told him off.

Feng An shook his head, his face begrudging. "When the women fall in love, they couldn't do anything else. Take our recent deal for example. We can't earn anything, but we have to spend hundreds of thousands of divine crystals to make up the loss. I can't believe our smart Young Elder would make mistakes because of her passion. Sigh, this deal is such a loss."

"I told you Young Elder has her decision. You don't need to care about that, okay?" An Yun didn't give him a good face.

"We're in a disadvantaged situation. The Great Elder is watching us. They will catch our tail for the loss we made this time. Our party will encounter trouble then," Feng An knitted his brows tightly.

When he mentioned the Great Elder of Potion and Tool Pavilion, An Yun darkened her face. She frowned as she sighed inwardly, hoping they could find some clues of the Canon which would help them ease the tense situation.

There were only Fu Wei and Shi Yan in the hall now. They looked at each other and felt a little bit embarrassed, staying quiet for a while.

Fu Wei had pinned her long hair, making a gorgeous bun with beautiful jade hairpins. Her blue eyes were deep and bright. She slightly bit her lower pink lip while blushing as if she were drunk. She didn't look at Shi Yan as she was arranging her words. She didn't know how to start this.

They didn't have anything ambiguous. However, after Wu Lan had teased them and the odd looks the other two gave them, at this moment, they could feel something equivocal while staying in this hall.

"Cough! Cough!" Seeing Fu Wei keep silent, Shi Yan couldn't be patient anymore. He talked indifferently, "I wonder what you wanted to show me as you've asked me to stay here?"

Fu Wei's soft body slightly shivered as she got out of her thoughts. Her beautiful eyes twinkled. Eventually, she looked at Shi Yan while murmuring. "I want to ask you about the Thousand Fold Lotus."

Shi Yan shook his head, talking resolutely. "I gave them to Wu Lan. I won't sell the remaining."

"The... remaining? You still have some?" Fu Wei's eyes brightened. They projected a light that seemed to gather on Shi Yan's face like the light from diamonds. "How many Thousand Fold Lotuses do you have?"

Her voice trembled as she felt she was one more step closer to the Canon.

The Elder who took the Canon and left had also brought the Thousand Fold Lotus seeds. He had so many seeds. So logically, it should be more than three pieces.

Hearing Shi Yan say that he still had some Thousand Fold Lotuses, Fu Wei's hope, which was only thirty percent, now increased to seventy percent. Her heart beat faster, and her eyes sparkled dazzlingly. At this moment, her astonishment had ameliorated her beauty.

Fu Wei's plump body inside the loose dress was shivering. Her ample breasts bounced like a mountain range having a tremor, releasing a wave of attraction. She was restlessly uneasy.

Shi Yan was baffled, causing him to frown as he looked at her. He

complimented her beauty inwardly. However, he didn't lose his consciousness. "Not many left. Alright, so what you want to tell me is related to the Thousand Fold Lotus?"

"Could you tell me where did you harvest the Thousand Fold Lotus?" Fu Wei breathed tenderly.

Shi Yan could hear her voice trembling. He kept silent for a while, arranging his thoughts. Then, he said calmly, "You know I'm cultivating Space power, right? Yeah, there was a time when I accidentally fell into a space crack and reached a strange area. I found the Thousand Fold Lotuses in there."

He said seriously as if what he was telling her was the truth.

On the other side, Fu Wei felt like she had a bucket of cold water poured on her head. Her excitement vanished rapidly. She was perplexed, sitting idly. "Just like that?"

Shi Yan nodded seriously.

Fu Wei suddenly waved her hand helplessly as she looked at him deep in the eye and said, "Oh, okay... Thanks for your information."

Shi Yan was doubtful, but he didn't ask for more. Seeing her want him to leave, he stood up and left.

After he had gone, An Yun tenderly approached, asking with hope. "Young Elder, did you get any news?"

Fu Wei gritted her teeth, cursing, "That b*stard! He lied to me! I can't trust any word of his!"

An Yun was astounded. She looked at Fu Wei, who was always calm, getting angry, and felt something strange. "What did he say?"

"He said he found them in a space crack." Fu Wei snorted vehemently. "The Thousand Fold Lotuses can't grow in space crack! Without heaven and earth energy, it will wither and die."

That b*stard told me so seriously, that if I didn't know the characteristics of the Thousand Fold Lotus, he could have even fooled me."

Fu Wei clenched her jaw with a lot of resentment as she recalled his serious face when he explained it to her, and hated the fact that she couldn't punch him in the face.

"Ah, he lied indeed." An Yun smiled bitterly.

"However, he slipped his tongue. He told me he still has more Thousand Fold Lotuses! In other words, the place he harvested the flower is 80% or 90% the place our Elder used to live at." Fu Wei was touched, but she smiled. "Daring to fool me? I will show him how serious his headache could be when he messes with a narrow-minded woman."

Chapter 982: Expand the Sea of Consciousness

Inside a grand, conical palace where they could see the deep blue starry sky through the roof...

This palace was built with a strange kind of jade which was inlaid with different-sized divine crystals. There were hundreds of thousands of them, filling up each wall of the palace. At this moment, those divine crystals were sparkling like the most beautiful stars, radiating a marvelous light. They formed a massive energy gathering formation.

Heaven and earth energy congregated like dense clusters of cloud from different areas of the Devil Blood Star. They seeped through the conical roof, entering the palace.

Such a tremendous energy flowed like a silver galaxy as they shone, reflecting and magnifying each other with the divine crystals inside the palace. They made the energy inside the palace so condensed that people could even touch it.

Shi Yan closed his eyes, sitting neatly inside the hall, his face serious.

Outside the palace, a troop of one hundred Demon clansmen was guarding, talking to each other.

"Madame Wu Lan does favor this man. She let him use our Master's training room. I wonder who that man is," A guard said in a lower tone.

"Is he an illegitimate son of our Master? The Devil Cultivating Hall is famous in the entire Agate Star Area, refined by the best formation master. I heard that every time they ran it, it will need hundreds of thousands of divine crystals. At the same, it will take a lot of energy from the Devil Blood Star."

"I don't know what Madame Wu Lan was thinking. She assigned

us to guard this place. Well, we're in Devil Blood Star, right? Who dares to burst out crazy here?"

"Well, we have some strangers, remember? Those people from the Potion and Tool Pavilion always have a lot of intelligence. If they interfere, it will affect the operation of our Devil Hall."

"Wu Lan has brought them to the area our Master had divided. Would Master hand that foreigner the land he had taken up thirty-two years ago?"

"Who knows?"

Members of Demon Clan frowned as they couldn't guess Wu Lan's thought and intention.

Of course, Shi Yan didn't know what they were talking to each other. At this moment, he was concentrating on the Blue Ice Jar in his hand.

He wanted to use the Thousand Fold Lotus!

Swoosh!

The Thousand Fold Lotus unfolded like a black jewel. Layers of petals bloomed, emerging in front of him. Shi Yan's thought flickered and a dominant suction force was generated, aiming at the Thousand Fold Lotus.

The Thousand Fold Lotus was so massive that it looked like a black pool. One thousand petals of the flower extended in every direction, which looked like the magical ripples made by the Sea of Consciousness.

Thousand Fold Lotus was activated as he thought, turning into beams of misty gray light that seeped into his Sea of Consciousness through his glabella.

His Sea of Consciousness suddenly seethed and his soul altar spun unceasingly, releasing a terrifying light. His Sea of Consciousness surged, creating a massive vortex to absorb the Thousand Fold

Lotus.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

The Thousand Fold Lotus shook, melting into that vortex. An immense soul energy diffused, filling each corner of Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness.

Shi Yan felt his head was shaken grumbly. His Soul Consciousness flew like a gliding sword, extending towards the edge of the Sea of Consciousness while accelerating fast.

Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness felt as if it were expanded forcefully, and its coverage was enlarged.

The soul altar was still revolving as a wisp of pure soul energy emerged from it. Shi Yan's three different powers Upanishads in the tier of Upanishads were transforming like outer space Divine Light. They moved, twisted, and changed like the electric beams weaving into each other. They were stimulated altogether with the Seals of Upanishad in his soul.

In Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness, beams of magical soul energy were released from the Thousand Fold Lotus. They mingled, blending with his Sea of Consciousness to expand it.

Shi Yan looked serious, but he was actually happy inwardly, giving the flower his compliment.

The Thousand Fold Lotus provided a marvelous support to the soul altar. It could strengthen and expand the Sea of Consciousness. At the same time, it would fill the soul altar with soul energy, which would accelerate the warrior's breakthrough in his realm and attainment.

The Thousand Fold Lotus was an Original Incipient Grade material, the rarest cultivating material that benefited the soul the most. Even the Incipient God Realm experts could use the Thousand Fold Lotus to boost up their soul and expand their Sea of Consciousness.

The larger Sea of Consciousness could make the Soul Consciousness more refined and strangely robust. It could increase the power of the soul altar in all aspects.

The Thousand Fold Lotus slowly disappeared into the Sea of Consciousness, releasing beams of pure soul energy, which then merged with his Soul Consciousness. As his Sea of Consciousness was changing, Shi Yan found that the range his Soul Consciousness could cover was also increased.

From his body as the core, Shi Yan seemed to turn into a heavenly eye in the sky which could see things in the nine-tiered sky. He was like an unconcerned God watching over the world.

It felt like heaven!

Heaven and earth energy poured into his head like a sea current. Together with the energy stimulated from divine crystals in the palace, beams of colorful light moved in his body. They made his aura distant and surging like an imposing mountain or a vast sea, or like the everlasting stars.

His Star Intent Domain was activated silently.

Tens of thousands of stars in the sky above the palace twinkled marvelously. Beams of starlight connected, falling like a dense sprinkle. They gathered with heaven and earth energy, entering the palace from the top of the conical roof.

Shi Yan seemed to sink into the ocean of energy. His aura became massive and distant, while his face showed his joy.

In this cultivating room of Blood Devil, Shi Yan's soul became clear and bright. He had cleared all the sorrows and worries of this mundane world to enjoy the heaven and earth energy, which would benefit his soul altar the most.

The pure soul energy from the Thousand Fold Lotus had doubled his Sea of Consciousness!

After the Thousand Fold Lotus had fully merged into his soul, Shi

Yan sat there absent-mindedly. While he didn't notice, his soul altar had entered the place which hid the incredible primal power Upanishads. He could see so many light streamers moving at breakneck speed. Shi Yan released his Soul Consciousness, rummaging each power Upanishad light.

Suddenly, he was keen enough to sense a spot where the starlight gathered. It had the star energy surging and fluctuating.

His mind flickered and soul altar flew out, heading fast to that area. Shortly, he felt like he had fallen into a bright nebula. Countless stars twinkled, each of them moving according to the most incredible principles of the universe.

Shi Yan's soul altar moved in the trajectory of the stars. It joined the constellation and moved as if it were learning the changing rules of stars.

Inside the palace, his body suddenly projected the starlight, shooting tens of thousands of meters away. Beams of beautiful starlight seemed to be radiated from his pores. They turned him into a massive object that emitted starlight. He looked like a lone star which would never extinguish in this world, living eternally.

Beams of starlight sprinkled from above his head, seeping into each cell of his body, congregating in his blood, flesh, and bone, and flooding his Sea of Consciousness.

Shi Yan's countenance was strange and ancient. He seemed to turn into an everlasting rock as his aura gradually calmed down.

The divine crystals inlaid on the walls of the palace shattered when their energy was drained. At this moment, those divine crystals exploded, sending clusters of dust and chips everywhere in the palace.

Shi Yan acted as if he didn't see it. His soul was still changing, trying to understand the changes in that particular, unknown area.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

The immense energy impacted, creating the tornados above the palace, pouring into the hall while accelerating.

Wu Lan stood by the window of a stone pavilion in a distant. She laid on the windowsill, focusing on Shi Yan's palace as her beautiful eyes sparkled with a strange light. After a while, she chuckled, talking to herself. "Taking in the Thousand Fold Lotus to expand the Sea of Consciousness, which will help understand the powers Upanishad better... This man is lucky, and his fate is indeed endless."

"Madame, Fu Wei of the Potion and Tool Pavilion has been waiting for two months. Their battleship has arrived," said an old man standing next to Wu Lan. "This delivery is for Shi Yan's group. It's a large quantity, indeed. They have mobilized their materials from the Potion and Tool Pavilion's storages around."

Wu Lan nodded gently. She pondered for a while and then said, "You go help them. Ask them to anchor the battleship. We will send our war chariots to transport the materials."

The old man nodded, leaving immediately.

"Young Elder, our battle has arrived." An Yun stood in front of the stone hall, looking at the Devil Hall where energy was stimulated violently far away. She frowned and then said, "That kid has been in there for two months."

"Yeah, two months. I think he would harvest big this time." Fu Wei's eyes were complicated. "He has absorbed a Thousand Fold Lotus. His Sea of Consciousness would expand, and his realm would advance as well. We can't undervalue this man."

An Yun nodded discreetly. She hesitated for a while and then said, "He has haven flames..."

"Heaven flames?" Fu Wei was bewildered for a while. She turned around and looked at her. "You said his soul has been fused with heaven flames?"

An Yun nodded. "While he's cultivating, the God power energy fluctuating isn't something he can understand at his current realm. Only when he has fused with the Origin can he touch the threshold of God power at his Original God Realm. I think his Original Soul has the Origin as well."

Fu Wei was perplexed. She exhaled. "Seems this man won't be just an ordinary warrior in the future. However, I'm not sure about his relationship with Blood Devil. Blood Devil's haughty and tyrannical. I never heard of him accepting an apprentice. Moreover, that man isn't a Demon clansman, right?"

An Yun was also skeptical about this. She shook her head, "I don't know."

"Yeah, never mind," Fu Wei waved her hand and stopped looking there as she said, "Arrange things. I'm going to check those materials first. When he gets out, I want to trouble him a little bit."

"Young Elder, Wu Lan is a witness. Would she complain?" An Yun reminded her.

Fu Wei shook her head. "It's okay. Even if we do that, we won't violate the contract. What can she say then? Ah, Blood Devil is about to come back, isn't he?"

"Yeah, together with the two guests from the Monster Dragon Star," said An Yun.

"Alright, I got it." Fu Wei floated up, landing on a war chariot. She left with An Yun.

Chapter 983: The Information that is Worth Ten Million

Energy fluctuated around Devil Hall quieted down. There was no rolling earth and heaven energy pouring into the palace anymore. The rippling energy around Shi Yan gradually faded. He was sitting still on the round platform in the center of Devil Hall.

After a while, he opened his eyes and beamed a strange smile.

Thousand Fold Lotus was truly an incredible treasure. It had doubled Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness. When his soul altar comprehended powers Upanishad, his understanding of his realms became more profound.

He suddenly had a premonition that he could break to Third Sky of Original God Realm at any time. Now, he just needed to grow his Essence Qi Ancient Tree to accumulate energy.

Most of the energy from the divine crystals inside Devil Hall, earth and heaven energy, and star energy from the sky had filled his bones and flesh to quench his body another time. However, his Essence Qi Ancient Tree didn't have much energy this time. The energy accumulated was enough to reach the limit to have the next breakthrough.

After the time breaking to Second Sky of Original God Realm, he didn't have a good chance to absorb torrential energy. He didn't have an opportunity to take in Essence Qi of dead warriors.

However, it was a little different this time.

Previously, he had never been in a shortage of energy when he got to his breakthrough. He had just had an advancement in his realm.

But today, his realm had progressed while his energy hadn't met the required amount yet. Thus, he couldn't enter Third Sky of Original God Realm yet.

". . . Energy. Haha, seems like I have to find a chaotic place of fighting and killing." Shi Yan smiled, slowly got up, and walked out of the place.

It was clear. As long as he could kill some warriors at his realm, the Essence Qi he could take when they were killed could change his Essence Qi Ancient Tree, which would be enough to enter Third Sky of Original God Realm. Shi Yan didn't need to worry about energy.

Wu Lan, Leona, Long Zhu, Fel Lan, and Na Xin had been waiting for him outside the palace. Seeing him, their eyes brightened.

"How do you feel?" Wu Lan was all smiles. "Our Master's Devil Hall is the best place to cultivate. You absorbed the Thousand Fold Lotus. You should have a big harvest, right?"

Leona and the others also looked at him expectantly.

"I'm now one step away from Third Sky of Original God Realm. What I need to do now is to accumulate energy to transform my Essence Qi Ancient Tree," explained Shi Yan with a smile.

Wu Lan appraised sincerely, "Your harvest was big, indeed."

Leona, Fei Lan, and Ka Tuo exchanged looks. They couldn't help but grin inwardly. They knew Shi Yan's secrets. People would need time to accumulate the required amount of energy. However, it wasn't a big deal for Shi Yan.

They had even thought that Shi Yan had already broken through to Third Sky of Original God Realm since accumulating energy was just a piece of cake for him.

"Where are the people from Potion and Tool Pavilion?" asked Shi Yan.

"They've arrived," Wu Lan looked in the distance. "Oh right. They'll be here immediately."

Indeed, shortly after, war chariots loaded with piles of materials

roared in the sky and flew towards them. Fu Wei and An Yun stood on the leading war chariot.

"I'm sorry, but we have a problem." As soon as Fu Wei arrived, she exhaled reluctantly, speaking to Shi Yan. "The Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance you've ordered has been sold before that. I'm afraid that we can't deliver it within a short time."

Wu Lan frowned.

Shi Yan was bewildered.

Long Zhu and Yang Zhuo came here with excitement and the most important thing they cared about was the Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance. Hearing her, their excitement was cooled down cruelly. They stood there baffled.

The materials they had bought from Potion and Tool Pavilion cost two million divine crystals, but only the Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance had accounted for one million divine crystals. Potion and Tool Pavilion was generous to give them a discount for the Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance. This was also the item that they thought they had taken the greatest advantage of.

The Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance was what they needed the most. They all felt discontent when Fu Wei said that they couldn't deliver it within a short time.

Wu Lan studied Fu Wei, her bold brows knitting together. She didn't have her usual smile on her face anymore. "Fu Wei mei-mei, what do you mean? When we negotiated, you said that it wasn't a problem to order Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance. You said it would be shipped together with the other materials. You said that, didn't you?"

"I did say that," Fu Wei nodded. She didn't deny it. "But I didn't expect that our Pavilion would sell the nearest Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance to someone else. You guys have ordered a

high-grade Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance. Currently, the nearest storage that keeps this kind of Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance is a distance that would take several years to travel. I didn't expect this. I'm so sorry."

Shi Yan darkened his face. "When will you be able to deliver the new Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance?"

"Well, it's hard to say," Fu Wei sighed, "If everything goes smoothly, I estimate that it will take around three years. But if something unexpected happens, I'm not sure then."

Wu Lan frowned, looking at Fu Wei deep in the eye. "Mei-mei, you don't want to bear the loss, so you're trying to delay the item, aren't you? It's true that you can't earn profit from selling Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance at one million divine crystals. But you agreed to this price. Do you think it's not quite appropriate when you rethink your loss?"

"No, it's not like that," Fu Wei said naturally. "Our business has a contract, but it doesn't regulate the arrival time of Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance. You can't say we've violated the contract. We just need to wait for a period. I only said that you have to wait for it for a little longer."

Yang Zhuo sighed, talking to Shi Yan, "We have many members who don't have a power Upanishad to enter their right cultivating track. They are all waiting hopefully. They hoped that they could use Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance to find a power Upanishad suitable for them. Three years isn't long, but if we miss one more day, we can't take it back. Especially when they all want to make some progress..."

Shi Yan looked at Fu Wei for a while. He suddenly said, "Could you come up with some solutions?"

Fu Wei dropped her arms, talking begrudgingly. "I'm thinking. Give me more time. Before I leave Devil Blood Star, I will tell you."

Shi Yan's face became darker.

He vaguely felt that Fu Wei was making excuses. She was trying to trouble them. However, he had no way to quarrel with her. He felt a little worried.

When did I offend this woman? Shi Yan asked himself, being skeptical.

Leona looked at Fu Wei. She seemed to have a dark green halo slowly expanding on her body. A magical energy fluctuated uncontrollably. The light around her body disappeared, making her area pitch black.

She instantly sensed the change her anger had called. She hurried to retrieve her power.

An Yun was waiting on the war chariot. Seeing that, her eyes had an unclear halo. She looked at Leona and said, "Ma'am, are you cultivating Dark power Upanishad?"

Leona was baffled.

Shi Yan frowned and couldn't help but look at An Yun. "You know Dark power Upanishad?"

Wu Lan was also astounded, looking at An Yun.

An Yun flew out of the war chariot, landing in front of Shi Yan and Leona. Her face was severe. "I saw a man who cultivated this power Upanishad. It's rare, indeed. Our Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance can't carve it. This isn't some kinds of power Upanishad Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance can contain."

"You... You met someone who used it?" Leona's dark green eyes brightened as she stared at the woman. "Who did you see?"

"That person seems to not be from our Agate Star Area. I don't know where he's from. But he used this power Upanishad." An Yun pondered for a while, "He has a brother. That man also has a

special power Upanishad, which could erode everything."

Fei Lan was numb.

"Our Potion and Tool Pavilion always collects special powers Upanishads to carve in our Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance. Since their powers Upanishad are peculiar, we used to try to carve them in the source, but we failed." An Yun explained as she thought that it wasn't something she could conceal.

Leona and Fei Lan were stimulated. They shouted in unison, "Where are they?"

Leona's father and Fei Lan's man used to be inexplicably mighty in Raging Flame Star Area. They cultivated Dark power and Corrosion power respectively. Many years ago, they disappeared mysteriously. No one had seen them ever since.

The star map led to Agate Star Area. The two of them knew the direction. Leona and Fei Lan used to think that they had entered Agate Star Area. However, since it was a vast star area, they didn't know where to find them.

Listening to An Yun, they were moved to tears. An Yun could see their emotions. She thought and exchanged looks with Fu Wei. Fu Wei nodded, her eyes smiling weakly.

An Yun knew what to do. Her face changed immediately. She said arrogantly. "Besides cultivating materials, our Potion and Tool Pavilion does sell intelligence. This information is precious anyway. I think it's not realistic... to tell you for free, right?"

Leona and Fei Lan were stiff. They couldn't help but look at Shi Yan, their eyes begging.

Shi Yan nodded and said to An Yun and Fu Wei, "How many divine crystals are needed for that information?"

"Ten million," Fu Wei considered for a while and then said indifferently.

Everybody discolored. Wu Lan couldn't hold it anymore, hissing. "Fu Wei mei-mei, do you think you've gone too far? What kind of information is worth ten million divine crystals?"

Fu Wei didn't change her face. She didn't look at the woman but explained to Shi Yan. "The most expensive intelligence was sold at one hundred million. This one needs only ten million. I deem it appropriate. Do you want it or not?"

Leona and Fei Lan didn't say much. They just looked at Shi Yan with begging eyes. This was the first time they asked Shi Yan for something.

Leona's father and Fei Lan's man were the overlords of the Dark Sky that year. Since they cultivated Dark power Upanishad and Corrosion Upanishad, they were somehow related to Shi Yan. Whichever the purpose was, he needed to know their general direction.

Shi Yan took a deep breath. He was about to agree with that price.

Right at this moment, Fu Wei smiled tenderly. "Of course, we can exchange intelligence. You have the information I want. We can exchange."

Shi Yan was astounded.

Fu Wei spoke to Wu Lan, making an excuse. "I want to talk to him in private."

"Talking in private again?" Wu Lan was surprised, talking instinctively. "You trouble them on purpose just to have a chance to talk to him in private? You... aren't you being too obvious?"

Fu Wei blushed like she got pink clouds on her cheeks. She glanced at the woman and then said to Shi Yan, "We need to talk."

"Shi Yan!" Fei Lan called, "I also want to hear!" Leona agreed with her.

"Okay," Shi Yan nodded, "seems like I can't talk to you alone. Would you mind?"

"No problem," Fu Wei also exhaled in relief discreetly. She felt a bit excited. She was happy as she found Shi Yan's weakness. She spoke to An Yun and then left with Shi Yan's team to the palace they were staying.

Chapter 984: Exchange Information

Fei Lan and Leona wore a dark and stern face. Their lines of sight were on An Yun. They had great anticipation on their faces.

Fu Wei and An Yun were relaxed. The more restless Fei Lan and Leona were, the more confident they became. Exchanging looks, Fu Wei and An Yun were discreetly happy. They felt calmer too.

Shi Yan sat on a soft couch, frowning. He pondered for a while and then asked, "What do you want to know?"

Fu Wei parted her lips into a gentle smile, her face calm when she spoke, "I want to know where you got the Thousand Fold Lotus."

"Didn't I tell you about that?" Shi Yan rolled his eyes at her, his face dark and unpleasant.

"It's impossible for the Thousand Fold Lotus to grow in a space crack." An Yun snorted. "If you aren't sincere, don't blame us for fabricating things!"

Fei Lan and Leona were stiff. They turned to look at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan pondered for a while and sighed reluctantly. "Alright, we will talk about the conditions first."

"Please do tell us." Fu Wei leaned over, showing her attention. "As long as you tell me the truth, I'm sure I can give you the answer you want." Pausing for a while, Fu Wei smiled. "I will also figure out how to bring you a new Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance. I think I can deliver one in half a month."

Listening to her, Shi Yan's eyes brightened, gazing at her.

Fu Wei said it clearly, and Shi Yan wasn't a fool. He immediately confirmed that Fu Wei had lied to them. They hadn't sold the Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance yet. She just wanted to trouble them.

At this moment, he couldn't calculate much. Shi Yan pouted his

lips and said, "You tell us first."

An Yun looked at Fu Wei. Fu Wei nodded gently, smiling. "To express our sincerity, we'll say our intel first." She signaled An Yun.

An Yun started immediately. "The other two were confined in Shadow Ghostly Prison by Dark Shadow Clan. The Dark Shadow Clan has always dwelled in Shadow Ghostly Prison. This clan doesn't operate in the other areas of Agate Star Area. No other clan is more familiar with Shadow Ghostly Prison than the Dark Shadow Clan."

"Dark Shadow Clan? It's the Dark Shadow Clan again!" Shi Yan suddenly looked ferocious.

When he spoke to Ghost Hunter in the Black Water Star, he knew that the Dark Shadow Clan had killed the King of Demonic Insects, Devouring Gold Silkworm, and Holy Spirit God. The Dark Shadow Clan was a unique force of its kind in the Shadow Ghostly Prison. It was also the most influential force that ran amuck without any fear. They moved like ghosts, getting in and out of different space channels. They were very familiar with the place.

Dark Shadow Clan only dwelled in the Shadow Ghostly Prison. They often emerged in the middle of the chaotic area where battles never stopped to hunt down warriors.

This was a mysterious race with cold Yin God Bodies. People said that it wasn't a race from Agate Star Area. This clan came from another star area through a space crack.

There were many strange legends of the Dark Shadow Clan. Rumors said that this clan was the vanguard from some strong star area. They came to spearhead in the Shadow Ghostly Prison and gather information. One day, they were going to cause a catastrophe to Agate Star Area.

Apparently, people had no way to prove the rumors or legends.

However, it was true that this clan wasn't welcomed in Agate Star Area. If they got out of the Shadow Ghostly Prison, the other clans would hunt them down. The reason was also unknown.

However, Dark Shadow Clan was like fish in water staying in Shadow Ghostly Prison. They understood the mysteries of those space slits deeply. They didn't stay on a fixed base. No one knew where its headquarters was.

"Yeah, they were confined by the Dark Shadow Clan. Our Potion and Tool Pavilion used to have a business with the Dark Shadow Clan. I used to be in charge of collecting special powers Upanishad and carving them on Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance. I was lucky that I met them once." An Yun frowned, explaining in detail. "Dark Shadow Clan wanted us to extract the powers Upanishad of the other two. They had paid a large sum to invite us. However, we couldn't extract their powers Upanishad from the soul altar. Our deal failed, indeed."

"However, I remembered them because of their special powers Upanishad. However, I'm not sure if they are still alive now. The last time I saw them, it was several hundred years ago."

An Yun continued to tell them about the situation and then advised Shi Yan. "I suggest aborting the thought of going to Shadow Ghostly Prison to rescue the two of them even if they have a close relationship with you. The Dark Shadow Clan in Shadow Ghostly Prison is truly mighty."

Pausing for a while, An Yun said earnestly, "You guys can't fight the Dark Shadow Clan."

Fei Lan and Leona listened to her, their faces becoming dark. Flames of rage burst in their eyes. The two men were the most important ones to them and the Dark Shadow Clan had been confining them for so many years. The women didn't know what had happened to them, either.

After hundreds of years, it was hard to tell if they were still alive.

The Dark Shadow Clan might have tortured them for years.

"That's all I know," An Yun took a deep breath, her face changing to a more serious expression. "Can you tell us what you know now?"

Fu Wei's blue eyes glowed. Her face was focused, waiting with hope.

"I took them in Old Orchid Star." Shi Yan didn't conceal it this time. He said faintly, "We discovered and dug up a mysterious city underground. The Thousand Fold Lotus were inside that city. They grew in a dark water pool inside a palace. That palace was buried deep underground of Old Orchid Star where gravity was thousands of times heavier. Someone had used the mountains as the formation eyes to sink the city deep underground. We accidentally found how to dig it up." Shi Yan explained simply.

Fu Wei and An Yun listened to him. Their eyes brightened as they couldn't hold their excitement.

"That run-away Elder cultivated... Gravity power Upanishad!" Fu Wei's soft body shivered. She couldn't control her joy as she became more certain. "Did you find anything strange in that mysterious city?"

Shi Yan was alert. Looking at Fu Wei's and An Yun's happy faces, he had a plan.

"No. Besides the Thousand Fold Lotus, we didn't see anything strange. Oh, right. There was a tough building inside the city. We couldn't open it. Perhaps it had something strange or marvelous. I don't know."

Fu Wei's eyes glistened. She smiled and nodded slightly.

An Yun was also stirred up. She clenched her fists as she was satisfied and cheered up.

The Canon was related to the future Pavilion Master position. If their party could get the Canon, they would step on that peak of

glory. They could overturn the bad situation in one step. How could they not crack like crazy when they finally got clues of the lost Canon?

"The Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance will be delivered soon. I'm sure it won't be delayed this time." Fu Wei was happy, giving Shi Yan a firm answer. Right after that, she waved her hand, smiling tenderly. "Alright, we're done with this business."

Shi Yan didn't say more. He got up and left immediately. Fei Lan and Leona followed him.

"Contact the Pavilion immediately. Send some battleships to Old Orchid Star!" After Shi Yan had left, Fu Wei jolted up from her seat. Her soft body shivered as she gave her order.

An Yun was so happy she couldn't hide it. She nodded continually. "We got a big harvest this time! I didn't expect to get the information of the Canon. Young Elder, should we just ignore Blood Devil and the two leaders of the Monster Dragon Star to travel to Old Orchid Star in Far West region directly?"

Fu Wei was also moved. However, she got herself together quickly, shaking her head. "It's too far. If we go there personally, we will delay them. Let Lord Duo go first."

An Yun smiled. "Okay, it's the same if they go there. However, they must do it quickly and must not disclose this information."

"I'll arrange it myself," Fu Wei looked very happy.

"Shi Yan, it..." Fei Lan wanted to say something, but she didn't finish. It was rare to see her embarrassed countenance.

Leona didn't say anything. She just looked at him and from her eyes, he knew what she wanted to say.

"I know what you want to say," Shi Yan smiled, "You want to go to Shadow Ghostly Prison, right?"

The two of them nodded.

"Wait several days more. I also want to go there. We'll go together," said Shi Yan.

Fei Lan and Leona were surprised. They pondered for a while and then Fei Lan said, "It has nothing to do with you. The Dark Shadow Clan is mighty. You don't need to take risks for us."

"It matters to me," Shi Yan pointed at his glabella, indicating the relations between the blood marks. Then, he waved his hand. "I still have things to do. I have a friend in Shadow Ghostly Prison. Also, Dark Shadow Clan has killed some of my friends. I'm waiting for Blood Devil to return. I have to meet him once. After I've properly arranged the Giant Tribe and people from Grace Mainland, I'm going with you guys to Shadow Ghostly Prison."

"Do you really want to go?" Fei Lan was surprised.

"Yeah, we will bring Ka Tuo together. You three can obtain more benefits from me," Shi Yan pondered and then told them.

Fei Lan and Leona didn't advise him anymore. They felt touched. From this moment, they started to have different feelings for him, which wasn't simply because of the chain relationship they had from the blood mark.

Fifteen days later.

A new war chariot arrived to deliver a high-grade Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance. Shi Yan paid them two million divine crystals to finish his business with Potion and Tool Pavilion.

Warriors of Grace Mainland and Raging Flame Star Area were so thrilled when they knew that the high-grade Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance had arrived. They were eager to try the marvelous powers Upanishads stored in it. Shi Yan assigned Feng Ke and Long Zhu to arrange these chores. He gathered with Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo in the main hall, waiting for Blood Devil.

That day, Wu Lan called Shi Yan, smiled and said firmly, "Our Master is about to come home. The Chiefs of the Evil Dragon Tribe and Brutal Dragon Tribe also go with him. Master asked me to tell you that he wants to meet you immediately."

"Oh yes, I'm waiting for him," Shi Yan smiled, prying, "How is he?"

"Argh, it's hard to tell. You will have to check him yourself." Wu Lan smiled, her eyes strange. She didn't want to explain further.

Shi Yan became skeptical.

Chapter 985: Blood Devil

Center Devil Blood Star.

Shi Yan, Wu Lan, and the experts of the Demon Clan were waiting in silence. They lifted their faces to watch the sky. Besides Wu Lan, there were ten Demon clansmen who had reached Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm. One of them had even reached Incipient God Realm threshold. However, there was no exception since they all had respectful countenances.

They were supportive and utterly loyal to Blood Devil.

People had quickly forgotten Blood Devil's real name. Blood Devil was his current title, which had spread out across the entire Agate Star Area. He was one of the overlords of the Demon Clan with a high position in the clan.

They had many adjectives to describe Blood Devil: brutal, bloodthirsty, lustful, unrestrained, autocratic, and more. It seemed like they had no good words to describe him.

However, Blood Devil lived well and enjoyed his life. Many hated him and wanted to kill him. However, nobody had really made Blood Devil pay any bloody price as of yet.

Fu Wei and An Yun of Potion and Tool Pavilion also received the news. They knew Blood Devil was about to come back. They emerged from their palace and walked to Shi Yan's. After Fu Wei saw Shi Yan, she smiled weakly and nodded to greet him.

Shi Yan also smiled to greet her.

The Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance had been delivered to their territory. Although the process was a bit troublesome, the result had satisfied Shi Yan. Thus, his attitude towards Fu Wei wasn't bad.

Everybody waited in silence.

After six hours, earth-shattering explosions echoed from a deep place in the sky. Dark clouds that looked like black water ink gathered in the sky of the Devil Blood Star. They were so thick they couldn't disperse easily.

Boom! Boom!

The terrible noise of energy impact had almost shaken the entire Devil Blood Star. Accompanying the horrible explosions were wild screams that made people restlessly anxious. They felt very tiny under this circumstance.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Energy exploded in the sky. Layers of demonic clouds turned into a massive hand that covered the sky. It looked as if it was about to tear the whole sky.

Two gigantic silhouettes ran through the void. They turned into their dragon forms shortly after. Each of them was several thousand meters tall. They emerged like mountain ranges on the horizon, making people respect and admire them.

A massive dragon fell through the thick layers of demonic clouds, barging on a corner of the Devil Blood Star. Right after that, the entire star shook and people felt like it was sinking into the vast universe. No one knew a force that even a planet couldn't endure.

"Muahaha! Damn you reptile! Now you know how strong I am?" A haughty voice arose from the clouds. Right after that, a spectacularly robust man descended. His body was covered in blood.

It was a hunky, half-naked Demon man. He had only a leather skirt around his waist. The black-rock-like muscles in his body emerged and connected with each other like they were ropes. His thumb-sized vessels bulged like snakes winding around his entire body. The abundant energy was moving and twirling inside the vessels unceasingly.

His knees, shoulders, and elbows had bushes of sharp and pointy spikes like daggers. He looked as if he was made of brown rock while the dark, energy-like bones covered the soft areas of his God Body.

He had a fierce and brutal face and his eyes were malignant. He looked like an innate fighter who would never stop fighting and was born to fight.

His God Body was perfect with the beauty of power. The curves of his bursting muscles scared people as he released the intimidating aura that was as oppressive as an imposing mountain.

Members of the Demon Clan kneeled down to greet him and called him Master.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

The void rumbled. People heard the dragon roaring angrily. Shortly after, the two dragon Monster experts, which were as big as the mountain range, appeared together. They then transformed into their humanoid forms.

The two of them all had rough and archaic appearances as if they were made of steel and iron. They were around three meters tall, wearing beautiful and luxurious clothes. However, their faces were filled with anger as they glared at the muscular Demon man.

"Gu Te, your body quenching has been a little bit... bad recently. Muahaha. I struck you down right from there. Seems like your Brutal Dragon Clan was about to change the monarch then." The Demon man smiled evilly, "I heard you recruited a kid called Ghost Hunter. You like him very much. Is it true that you're preparing the apprentice for the Brutal Dragon Tribe since you know you're about to be doomed?"

"Well, who got struck to the ground in the Monster Dragon Star?" said the Monster man, his voice like thunderclaps. "This place is the Devil Blood Star, your territory. Of course, you can

have some boosts. What will be counted if you take advantage of this place? If you have the guts, come out and fight!"

"Good!" the Demon man laughed crazily. "I'm going to smash you in this Devil Blood Star!"

"Come here!" The Monster man roared. An incomparable aura diffused violently. The tough ground around him cracked. Many Demon clansmen whose realms weren't high were pressed to the ground. They couldn't even lift their heads.

"Master."

"Master."

"Master."

The Demon clansmen forced a smile, screaming hurriedly.

"Oh please. We have guests here." Wu Lan grimaced and shouted, "Precursors, could you please calm down? Please don't make people laugh at us."

"Who's Shi Yan?" One of the Monster men suddenly shouted, his eyes glistening.

Wu Lan, Fu Wei, and the others looked at Shi Yan.

The three imposing men had fought each other from outer space to this place. They halted and couldn't help but follow the line of sight of the others.

"Ha ha ha ha!" Blood Devil immediately laughed cheerfully. "Our Immortal Demon Tribe's descendant, indeed! I feel so familiar with the aura of Immortal Demon Blood from him. Haha, daddy has finally found a fellow of my tribe!"

Shi Yan suddenly wanted to smile.

He looked at Blood Devil and felt so close. This clingy feeling came from his blood. It felt like he had finally reunited with his family members who've been missing for years. He felt calm and pacific.

"My son McGee told me that you had saved him twice in the space crack. Seems like you're predestined with our tribe, though." Chief Bath of the Evil Dragon Tribe laughed, nodded powerfully. Then, he turned to Gu Te, "I heard that Ghost Hunter is Shi Yan's best friend. I didn't expect that this man had relation to our tribes like this. Yeah, such a good fate."

Fu Wei and people of Potion and Tool Pavilion were baffled. They looked at Shi Yan with many thoughts in their heads.

McGee was Bath's son. This little evil dragon was always arrogant. He was a true troublemaker in Agate Star Area. Ghost Hunter was the new star of the Brutal Dragon Tribe. He was the in the list of subjects of intensive study by Potion and Tool Pavilion. They thought that he could possibly become the new leader of the Monster Clan so they had to pay close attention to him.

Shi Yan had a close relationship with both McGee and Ghost Hunter, which surprised Fu Wei a lot. She looked at Shi Yan with astonishment.

A fellow of Blood Devil's tribe. Having a good relationship with the potential leaders of the Brutal Dragon Tribe and Evil Dragon Tribe. Who was this man? Why have we never heard of him before?

The staff of Potion and Tool Pavilion was discreetly astonished. They decided that they had to investigate Shi Yan's identity. They also decided that they must put him into their list of special characters that they needed to keep track of.

Blood Devil, Bath, and Gu Te stood there while the earth and heaven energy of Devil Blood Star was uncontrollably congregating around them. If they used the Soul Consciousness to sense, they could see the energy streaming into their bodies like a river that never stopped flowing.

None of the other people presenting here, including Shi Yan, could take in earth and heaven energy like the three of them. It

looked like with their presence, no one could take the light of glory.

This tyrannical feature had scared Shi Yan. It was the first time Shi Yan had seen existences at Incipient God Realm. This imposing impression was like a mountain running directly into his soul, which could disperse his fighting will right before the battle. He had a helpless feeling of being a loser when he stood in front of them.

"You guys talk to people from Potion and Tool Pavilion. I'm going to talk to him." Blood Devil thought and then retrieved his imposing aura. He rose his hand and grabbed the air.

The energy in the void turned into a dark light curtain, dragging Shi Yan away. Shortly after, Blood Devil brought Shi Yan to a place that no one knew.

Bath and Gu Te didn't bother with it since they knew that was how Blood Devil was. They just smiled, walking towards Fu Wei. Bath said, "Lately, our Monster Dragon Star has been doing business with the Great Elder of your Potion and Tool Pavilion. But I heard Blood Devil said that you and Great Elder have some disputes. He told us to do business with you directly. Of course, we will give him face to do this."

Fu Wei's blue eyes reflected her happiness. She smiled weakly, speaking to them tenderly, "Thank you for your favor, precursors. I won't fail you."

Gu Te waved his hand. "I'm not interested in your internal conflict. As long as you offer me good prices and a promotion, you'll have me on your side. Haha, even if you guys have an internal war, as long as you pay us well, our Monster Dragon Star can give you a force."

Fu Wei was shy, explaining earnestly. "Our Potion and Tool Pavilion won't have an exposed conflict. Precursor, don't say it like that. Anyway, I appreciate your offer."

Bath and Gu Te sauntered towards Fu Wei. They started to discuss their business.

Wu Lan's team immediately excused themselves, leaving space for them to negotiate.

Westside, Devil Blood Star.

Inside a dense forest where Demon Qi was as thick as the surging sea sat a pool with seething, bubbling blood. Energy visibly fluctuated from this thickly viscous red fluid.

Blood Devil brought Shi Yan by a pool. Pointing at the pool, he said, "This place benefits our cultivation a lot. It can stimulate Immortal Demon Blood. Yeah, this place is exclusively for me. But you can come here to cultivate, too. It's good for your Immortal Demon Blood condensation."

Shi Yan thanked him. He was startled. "This blood pool uses a lot of cultivating materials, right?"

"It uses several million divine crystals each year," nodded Blood Devil.

"Besides me, can other people come here and cultivate?" asked Shi Yan gingerly.

"Unless he has the same Immortal Demon Blood like you, he can't endure staying in this blood pool. One must have the powerful recovery power."

"How about people who are part of the Immortal Demon bloodline but haven't condensed Immortal Demon Blood yet?"

"Of course, but they can't cultivate for a long time. They need to adjust and adapt to the pool slowly."

Blood Devil was surprised. He became thrilled instantly. "Except for you, there is someone with the Immortal Demon Blood?"

"Yes, many."

"Where are they?"

"They are in this Devil Blood Star. People from the direct descendants of the Yang family with the Immortal Martial Spirit all are part of Immortal Demon Tribe's lineage. However, they haven't stimulated the power to condense Immortal Demon Blood yet."

Blood Devil's eyes glittered. He burst out laughing. "Good! I will no longer be lonely! I want to bring the Immortal Demon Tribe to the greatest height of development. I will make the Immortal Demon Tribe one of the strongest tribe in Agate Star Area!"

Chapter 986: Power Upanishad in the Bloodline

A corner of Devil Blood Star.

Inside the viscous blood pool, Shi Yan and Blood Devil were soaked. Blood in the pool bubbled with hovering mist.

Beams of blood mist seeped into Shi Yan's pores and entered his vessels. He could feel his Immortal Demon Blood get nurtured. Shortly after, a drop of Immortal Demon Blood was generated.

"This blood pool consumes a lot of cultivating materials and the main material is the Immortal Grass. The juice of this grass is a great support to condense Immortal Demon Blood. We buy almost all of the Immortal Grass of Agate Star Area through Potion and Tool Pavilion." Blood Devil smiled, explaining the ingredients and functions of this blood pool to Shi Yan. "Cultivating in the blood pool can accelerate our blood condensation. Usually, I have to consume Immortal Demon Blood when fighting other people so I come to this pool to generate more."

Shi Yan felt so comfortable as the Immortal Demon Blood was condensed in his body. His face was calm and happy with a smile. "Yeah, it's extremely suitable for our cultivation."

"Show me your soul altar. I want to observe it," said Blood Devil with a smile.

While talking, he released his soul altar. It was a four-tiered soul altar, which was like the most beautiful and clear ruby. Tiers of Sea of Consciousness, power Upanishad, Incipient Extent, and his soul piled on top of each other. Each tier was connected to another tier with thick blood Qi, which was somehow similar to the blood pool.

Blood Devil's Sea of Consciousness was red and vast. When he showed it, it was more like a vast, torrential blood sea with real

blood scent.

Above the Sea of Consciousness was the powers Upanishad where there were two moving powers. One was the Metal power and the other sent around the vigorous life energy. Shi Yan was startled. His face became strange as he couldn't help but shout. "Life power Upanishad!"

While screaming, he also showed his soul altar. Compared to Blood Devil's, his soul altar was simpler. It had only three tiers.

Above Blood Devil's tier of power Upanishad was a blood chunk. It was his Incipient Extent. It was a cluster of blood mist. Shi Yan couldn't see anything inside that Incipient Extent.

Blood Devil heard his amazed scream and he just laughed. "Yeah, it's the Life power Upanishad. It's a special and yet unique power Upanishad. Potion and Tool Pavilion's Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance doesn't have it. I've developed and cultivated it myself from the characteristics of Immortal Demon Blood."

"The Immortal Demon Blood has a powerful self-healing ability. It has vigorous life energy, which is a sign of Life power Upanishad. Life power Upanishad is our main power. People with Immortal Demon Blood all cultivate this power. It's the most suitable power Upanishad for us."

Pausing for a while, his eyes brightened up as he looked at Shi Yan. "Don't you cultivate Life power Upanishad too?"

Blood Devil had reached Incipient God Realm. Of course, his keen eye wasn't something other people could have. After just a first glance, sweeping over the surface of Shi Yan's soul altar, he confirmed that Shi Yan also has Life power Upanishad in his tier of powers Upanishad.

However, Blood Devil was startled, looking at him bewilderedly. "Your tier of powers Upanishad doesn't seem... normal. You have two souls?"

"I fused with the Origin. My soul and the heaven flames were combined and created that co-soul." Shi Yan smiled. "Indeed, my soul altar and others' aren't similar."

"Your Life power Upanishad isn't very similar to mine, either." Blood Devil studied Shi Yan's soul altar, frowning. "Your Life power Upanishad seems to blend with another power Upanishad. Is it a mixed power Upanishad?"

"My power Upanishad is called Death and Life. It's a mixed power between Death Upanishad and Life Upanishad. I don't know what happened." Shi Yan nodded, "It's different from yours. The two powers of my power Upanishad can't be separated."

"You had fused them after you got them or it began that way?" Blood Devil suddenly became tense. He was a little afraid.

"Since the day I've comprehended it, it has happened that way. Death and Life power Upanishad is one. They have never separated," explained Shi Yan.

Blood Devil contemplated.

After a long time, he woke up from some of his deep thoughts. "Did you get some special power Upanishad Inheritance? As I know, it's very hard to fuse Life power Upanishad with the other power Upanishad. And to fuse with the Death power Upanishad, the totally opposite power Upanishad, is impossible. This is over my understanding of powers Upanishads."

"Yes, I got the other Inheritance," Shi Yan didn't conceal. He didn't know why he felt so close to Blood Devil. Perhaps it was because of the bloodline. This feeling was the same as what he got for Yang Tian Emperor. Shi Yan had instinctively considered Blood Devil his family.

"As you have a combined power Upanishad between Death power and Life power, your future achievements will surpass me. Life power Upanishad is carried within our Immortal Demon Tribe's

blood. It's a more complex martial spirit to be inherited. It's based on the blood of the family." Blood Devil's eyes glistened.

"To Our Immortal Demon Tribe members, when we've reached a specific level, we would have a deep understanding of Immortal Demon Blood, which would naturally develop the Life power Upanishad. This is the unique blood trace of our tribe. If the other races want to learn Life power Upanishad, they have to have a really good fate. Of course, even if they got Life power Upanishad, they wouldn't be able to cultivate it as easily as we do. It's because our Immortal Demon Blood is gifted with the true meanings of Life power Upanishad!

"Each member of the Immortal Demon Tribe considers Life power to be their main power to cultivate because this power and the Immortal Demon Blood support each other. Immortal Demon Blood can make our understanding of Life power Upanishad deeper. Life power Upanishad can strengthen Immortal Demon Blood. This is the most suitable power Upanishad for our tribe.

"Anyway, you've mixed Life power and Death power together. It's strange but great. It's much more profound than what I've thought. Death power Upanishad is even rarer than Life power Upanishad. I've heard about it, but I've never seen it before. Kid, your fortune's much better than mine, indeed."

Blood Devil continued to compliment him.

Shi Yan listened to Blood Devil's instruction attentively. To this precursor of the Immortal Demon Tribe at Second Sky of Incipient God Realm, Shi Yan admired and respected him wholeheartedly.

"Your realm is too low, so your cognition of Life power Upanishad is shallow. I will show you how to use the Life power Upanishad to urge Immortal Demon Blood. I will show you to what level of a miracle it can do." Blood Devil pondered for a while before waving his hand, shooting out two drops of ruby Immortal Demon Blood.

One drop of Immortal Demon Blood flew towards a three-meter-tall tree next to them.

When the drop of blood seeped into the root, a vigorous life energy surged instantly. The small tree thrived fast. The tree trunk expanded, leaves unfolded, and branches jutted outwards. The little tree grew at a speed that the naked eye could observe. Shortly after, it turned into a massive, towering tree.

"The powerful healing ability of Immortal Demon Blood could be applied to any creature that can receive vitality including trees, foliage, and people from any races." Blood Devil grinned, "If my subordinates can achieve merits, I can use my Immortal Demon Blood to boost their bodies to the utmost when they get hurt. It's a way I help them quench their God Bodies!"

Shi Yan's eyes brightened.

"Now let's see what the other drop of blood can do!" Blood Devil extended his arm, shouted curtly.

The other drop of Immortal Demon Blood floated in the air. It then started to develop, changing miraculously.

A small skeleton slowly emerged in the drop of blood. Next, it started to grow vessels, tendons, and flesh. Shortly after, that drop of Immortal Demon Blood had developed into another Blood Devil!

"Demon Blood has the ability of rebirth." Blood Devil stiffened his face, talking seriously. "When we can utilize one drop of blood to the acme, it can develop to eventually become our God Body. Then, we just need time to accumulate energy and we can recover the sturdy body we used to have!"

"If I fight someone to the death, unless he destroys my body entire and burns all of my Immortal Demon Blood, I can grow a new body even if I have only one drop remaining!"

"In other words, as long as we still have Immortal Demon Blood, our body is undying!"

Shi Yan was frightened.

"You may know how to use the Immortal Demon Blood to urge Life power Upanishad to heal yourself and you've used it well. I now will open another door for you to adopt and utilize the power Upanishad and Immortal Demon Blood to a higher level. You can study yourself." Blood Devil smiled, "You have to figure out yourself how to perform this ability. Everybody has different experience and physique, so their understanding and cognition of Immortal Demon Blood and Life power Upanishad are different. My path perhaps won't be suitable for you. If we force it, it will disorient your progress. That's why I didn't explain it in detail. I just told you the other ability of Immortal Demon Blood."

Shi Yan nodded, his face filled with respect.

Suddenly, he heard a soft call from his soul. It was the Blood Vein Ring.

His mind flickered. Shi Yan put his soul altar back to the God Body, using his soul to contact the Blood Vein Ring.

"Impart your Death power Upanishad to him. That's the way we make his Inheritance continue." The Blood Vein Ring sent him messages. "That man was one of the members of the Cortege of Eight, the one who cultivated Death and Life power Upanishad. He was also a precursor of the Immortal Demon Tribe. Originally, he had only the Life power Upanishad. After he had followed our Master, our Master bestowed upon him the Death power Upanishad. That's how both Death and Life powers Upanishad co-exist! You impart his Death power Upanishad to this man. When Death and Life combine in one, he will reach the peak. Then, he may become your right hand!"

Shi Yan was surprised. "You've restored?"

"Not yet, but almost. I remember many things now. However, my memory isn't complete. It still needs a small part to be fully fused. After that, I will remember everything," said the Blood Vein Ring.

"How can I impart the Death power Upanishad to Blood Devil?" asked Shi Yan.

"You send your soul to Blood Devil's forehead and gather your soul energy at the Blood Mark. Leave the rest to me," answered the Blood Vein Ring.

Shi Yan was astounded. He looked at Blood Devil and then said, "I can pass on the Death power Upanishad to you. You can combine Death and Life powers Upanishad then. Death power Upanishad can take vitality and strengthen Life power Upanishad. And it can also help condense more Immortal Demon Blood."

Blood Devil was bewildered. He looked at Shi Yan while thinking it was impossible. "You want to pass on the Death power Upanishad to me? You have only Original God Realm and I'm at Incipient God Realm. You think you can impart the power Upanishad to me?"

"How about giving it a try?" Shi Yan said seriously.

"Are you sure? Imparting power Upanishad is very complicated. I think you haven't mastered it yet. And a low-realm warrior giving power Upanishad to higher-realm warrior is even more dangerous. You are kidding, right?" Blood Devil scratched his head, his face awkward.

"You'll know shortly. I'm sure you'll be alright."

"What could happen to me? I'm worried about you."

"Just try."

"You really want to do it... Alright, but you have to be very careful. When you find that it's difficult, you must terminate the action!"

"Okay."

Chapter 987: Make the Imprint

Blood Devil's torso was naked. His muscles were lean and connected with each other like rocks. Each of his muscles was beautifully filled with exploding energy.

He was agitated, frowning deeply as he looked at Shi Yan's soul flying away and entering his forehead little by little.

Making the God Body open to let another's soul enter was extremely dangerous to any warrior. Opening the God Body meant to put down all kind of defensive abilities. This would put the warrior's soul into a perilous situation.

If the other had some ambiguous intention, he could destroy that warrior's body with a little trick and even hurt the foundation of that warrior.

Blood Devil didn't hesitate to open his body to Shi Yan. He trusted Shi Yan.

Blood Devil had retrieved his aura. Now he was defenseless. Shi Yan was calm, but seeing him like this, he was a little anxious.

He really appreciated Blood Devil's trust to him. However, he was afraid that the Ring Spirit wouldn't be able to handle this and cause some trouble.

"Any problem?" Shi Yan instinctively sent a message to the Ring Spirit. "Unless you're 100% sure, I think we should stop. I'm afraid that we could make mistakes..."

"Don't worry, I know how to do it. With my current abilities, passing on the power Upanishad Inheritance isn't a problem," replied the Ring Spirit. Then, it urged Shi Yan, "Get through his glabella!"

Shi Yan's soul floated. Receiving the Ring Spirit's confirmation, he didn't think much and concentrated wholeheartedly.

Swoosh!

Shi Yan's soul with the blood mark entered the Blood Devil's glabella where it connected directly to the Sea of Consciousness. It was the most critical area of the warrior's God Body. Powers of the Sea of Consciousness, powers Upanishad, and soul energy had to get through this important locus to diffuse.

Blood Devil relaxed. He didn't look worried at all. He was as calm and relaxed as water. He opened his body and his glabella, not setting up any barrier.

Shi Yan's soul appeared between Blood Devil's two brows, turning into a faint blood halo. The blood mark expanded like an octopus, which magnified its blood-red lines. Those lines then connected to each of Blood Devil's vessels and bones. The pure soul energy in the mark flooded Blood Devil's Sea of Consciousness, moving to his tier of powers Upanishad.

Shi Yan and Blood Devil had formed a close connection temporarily.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

That blood mark suddenly glowed like blood fireworks. Energy fluctuations of the magical power Upanishad shot out, moving through the bloodlines to enter Blood Devil's Sea of Consciousness directly. In the next moment, his tier of powers Upanishad, blood, internal organs, soul, and God Body started to resonate with some unknown magical rhythm.

Boom!

Shi Yan heard something echo in his head. He felt a flow of immensely marvelous Soul Consciousness shot out from his blood mark. One small wisp of that Soul Consciousness grumblingly fell to Blood Devil's soul altar right on the tier of powers Upanishad while the other disappeared into Blood Devil's God Body.

Shi Yan was panic-stricken. He seemed to become an onlooker.

He stood aside, silently watching the blood mark automatically proceed the inheritance impartation. A waterfall of unknown energy gushed out from the Blood Vein Ring, pouring into the blood mark in his soul.

All steps of this operation used the energy of the Ring Spirit. The Ring Spirit was the transporter and the blood mark was the leader. Shi Yan didn't need to use his energy or participate in releasing the inheritance.

He just needed to stay aside and observe.

After Shi Yan's soul altar had been washed with the Soul Refining Fluid in that space crack, it seemed like the Ring Spirit had got something good too. It had recovered a significant amount of energy. That was why it could pass the power Upanishad inheritance to exist at Blood Devil's level.

Blood Devil was calm. From the beginning to the end, he didn't generate any beam of energy. He had opened his body to Shi Yan and received the power Upanishad Inheritance. He didn't protest or resist.

Of course, it wasn't that Blood Devil had just stayed put. He could feel it and he was filled with fear.

Imparting power Upanishad wasn't an easy task. Even when a profound-realm expert was giving inheritance to a lower-realm warrior, it required a lot of efforts and an enormous amount of soul energy. And it wasn't guaranteed that the other could endure the inheritance or not.

So, it truly went against the natural order when a lower-realm warrior gave inheritance to a higher-realm warrior.

If Shi Yan didn't insist, Blood Devil would never have let him do something like this. Although his realm was extremely high, he was still afraid of backlash.

However, he was worried about Shi Yan more. He was afraid that

Shi Yan didn't have the competence and energy to complete the procedure of imparting inheritance. If Shi Yan's soul energy drained, he would die for sure. Blood Devil would regret it so much if this last member of his tribe were gone.

However, when the procedure started, Blood Devil was petrified.

An enormous soul energy gushed out from Shi Yan's blood mark, which was so dense that even Blood Devil felt terrified. That strange and intimidating soul energy was apparently not from Shi Yan, a Second Sky of Original God Realm warrior. Even if it was a formidably strong soul, it couldn't have such massive soul energy.

Blood Devil could confirm immediately that Shi Yan must have some secret that he couldn't know. He must have a terrifying creature which helped him complete the inheritance impartation.

Anyway, he didn't know Shi Yan hadn't spent a bit of his energy to do all of these. The Ring Spirit was in charge of carrying the procedure. The Ring Spirit had prepared and imparted the inheritance. Shi Yan had just used his blood mark as the transmitter and himself as an observer.

After the energy fluctuations of the power Upanishad inside that blood mark had connected his Sea of Consciousness and crept toward his tier of power Upanishad, Blood Devil was shaken. He stopped thinking too much immediately.

The procedure has begun!

Inside the blood pool, Blood Devil was soaked in the blood-red liquid, his face grave. He slowly closed his eyes. Shi Yan faced him, his aura long and ancient. Although Shi Yan's soul altar floated above his head, the host soul was gone, connected to Blood Devil's glabella by a blood thread.

Blood Devil slowly diffused a flow of desolate energy, extending forward.

Ancient trees around them writhed as if their vitality was

forcefully drawn away. Gradually, when the Death energy fluctuated and expanded, towering, massive trees within one hundred miles withered, their leaves falling like a rain shower. Branches dried and cracked. Those trees became like dried trees which were dead for years.

Within one hundred miles, life was cut off. Death Qi meandered and hovered as if it was the icy cold Nine Serenity Hell. It even made people's vitality stop moving.

After an unknown time, Shi Yan heard the Ring Spirit calling him feebly. "It's done. You can retrieve your soul."

Shi Yan acted immediately. He retrieved his soul through Blood Devil's glabella, returning to his soul altar and making the soul altar go back to his body.

"Done?" Shi Yan discreetly sent a message.

The Ring Spirit didn't answer him.

Frowning, he couldn't help but look at the Blood Vein Ring on his finger. The ring dimmed and it didn't have any beam of light. It seemed like the ring had used a lot of energy. The weak Ring Spirit had quieted down as it didn't have enough energy to reply. Shi Yan knew that it was also difficult for the ring to give the inheritance to Blood Devil this time.

Blood Devil bared his chest, soaking in the blood pool. He looked calm and pacific. His eyes closed as if he was sleeping.

However, he now had a faint aura of Death. Shi Yan could recognize it in one glance. He knew that the Ring Spirit had succeeded. Blood Devil didn't move. He remained his posture in the blood pool for a very long time.

Above the Devil Blood Star, countless stars were twinkling and sending beams of starlight on the ground, illuminating it with a silver tint.

Shi Yan immersed in the starlight and checked his body. He

found that he hadn't used much energy. The blood mark was still in his soul. It seemed like everything had been done smoothly.

He understood that it was the result of the Ring Spirit using an enormous amount of energy. Shi Yan himself was just a transmitter.

Inside the blood pool, Shi Yan quietly watched Blood Devil, his face serious. He didn't know how Blood Devil's condition was so he was still a bit worried.

Suddenly, his eyes brightened as he looked at Blood Devil's glabella.

He saw a blood flower bloom in Blood Devil's glabella as if it was about to explode shortly.

Shi Yan discolored. He was frightened, his face grimaced.

Blood Devil's glabella exploded. A blood flower appeared, slowly changing. A magical mark was gradually formed, which looked like the blood mark Shi Yan had. Slowly, it had developed to the final form, which was identical to the mark Leona, Ka Tuo, and Fei Lan had.

That mark seemed to be imprinted after Shi Yan had sent his soul into Blood Devil's head. It automatically emerged right in Blood Devil's glabella.

After the mark had sufficiently appeared, Shi Yan was astonished at first. Then, he relaxed as he understood something.

He suddenly knew that when the warriors received the Inheritances from the Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight, they would have the same mark in the glabella, which was somehow the symbol of their echelon or status. It also meant that they belonged to one line and that they were the heirs and heiresses of the powers Upanishads.

Blood Devil hadn't recognized the blood mark in his glabella yet. He was still sinking in the mysteries and powers of Death power

Upanishad. In the sea of power Upanishad, he silently comprehended the powers Upanishad in the respective tier of his soul altar. At this moment, Death power Upanishad and Life power Upanishad in his four-tiered soul altar had combined into one just like Shi Yan's.

When Death and Life combines, they could be promoted to the utmost. At this moment, Blood Devil had an in-depth understanding of it.

He suddenly recognized that this Inheritance from Shi Yan was an incredible, heavenly opportunity. It was the most crucial step for him to get to the peak. When Death and Life merged with each other, Death and Life could support each other and make his achievement impressive and head towards perfect conditions.

"I want to comprehend the powers Upanishad. I won't leave this blood pool quickly. All things regarding management of the Devil Blood Star, I've asked Wu Lan to take care of it. She knows what to do." Closing his eyes, Blood Devil said, "You should consider the Devil Blood Star your home. Don't worry. You and your fellows are safe. No one will have the guts to come here and trouble you guys. And you don't need to go to the Far West region to take revenge. The people who attacked you that year in Broken Star Field are all dead. You can ease your mind and cultivate here."

Shi Yan was amazed. He then showed his gratitude.

"I need time to understand the new power Upanishad," Blood Devil lowered his voice.

Shi Yan nodded and then left the blood pool, heading to the grand palaces of the Devil Blood Star.

He knew that he wouldn't stay for a long time in Devil Blood Star. Fei Lan and Leona were impatient to go to Shadow Ghostly Prison. He also wanted to know if Xia Xin Yan was doing alright there.

However, the most important factor was that Shadow Ghostly Prison was an incredibly chaotic area with unceasing fights and wars. In that place, his Devouring power Upanishad could be promoted to the utmost, which could help his realm advance and reach the new level of energy accumulation.

The Yang family and the Shi family, his beloved family members, were safe in Devil Blood Star. They were secure and they had sufficient materials to cultivate. Shi Yan didn't need to worry about them anymore.

This burden of his had been solved. Later on, he could go anywhere freely like a bird soaring into the sky or fish swimming in the vast ocean.

Chapter 988: Today

Shi Yan returned to the grand palaces in the Devil Blood Star.

When Fei Lan and Leona saw Shi Yan, they cheered up and ran towards him.

"Where is Master?" Wu Lan also stepped forward, smiling.

"He's trying to comprehend power Upanishad. He won't be leaving the blood pool any time soon. If you want to see him, go to the pool." Shi Yan smiled. "How is the business between Potion and Tool Pavilion and the two precursors going?"

"Almost done," Wu Lan smiled and said, "Oh, Master is cultivating his powers Upanishads. It seems like he got something good this time then. He's appointed me to handle the business of Devil Blood Star when he's busy with his cultivation. I know how much Master favors you. If you don't know something in the Devil Blood Star, you can ask me. I'll do my best to help you."

"Thank you."

"Nah, no need to be so distant. This is our Master's advice. As his servants, we must follow his advice to work."

"I may have to leave the Devil Blood Star for a while. Yeah, I'm going to arrange something. I hope you will take care of the people I've brought here."

"Of course."

An area of Devil Blood Star.

High and grand mountain ranges jutted into the sky, hiding in the clouds. Standing on the mountain flanks and feet were many palaces and buildings with some specialized training courts.

This territory used to belong to the Dwarf Demon Tribe. Blood Devil had taken it to prepare a place for Shi Yan's family. This

place had abundant earth and heaven energy, indeed.

The Dwarf Demon Clan had built those buildings and palaces. The Dwarf Demon Tribe was famous for its skillful craftsmen. Those buildings had cultivating rooms and gardens with herbals fields. There was also a mountain that held a lot of demon beasts.

Yang Zhuo, Long Zhu, and the warriors of Raging Flame Star Area were working on this mountain. They felt so satisfied with this place.

They got many cultivating materials and a high-grade Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance from Potion and Tool Pavilion. Yang Zhuo, Long Zhu, Jester, and Na Xin were so happy that they finally got a place to stay. Now they had no burden in their minds, so they were able to continue their cultivation freely.

The Devil Blood Star was Blood Devil's territory. Among the ten life stars around, it was the most favored one. Not only did it have abundant earth and heaven energy and various types of rich natural resources but there was also Blood Devil who guarded the place.

Staying in this area, they wouldn't need to worry about the enemies. They could continue their cultivation freely, which was something others had to struggle a lot to have.

It was evident that Blood Devil had favored Shi Yan, a folk from his tribe a lot. He had spent and given Shi Yan's people prosperous land and was letting them handle it in the ways they liked, which showed how much he loved Shi Yan.

Calling for Yang Zhuo, Jester, Feng Ke, and Feng Rao, inside a palace built by the Dwarf Demon Tribe, Shi Yan looked at his family members and his good friends with their happy faces. He felt more relaxed than ever.

Today, he had finally fulfilled his promise that year. He had found a new life star for people who used to live in the exhausted

Grace Mainland.

When he departed from Grace Mainland that year, he had gone with the most important mission of finding a life star, a new home for his people.

Today, his promise was fulfilled. Looking at the happiness on their faces, Shi Yan felt pleased.

"Without you, we wouldn't be here today. You always surprise us." Yang Zhuo appraised with a lot of emotion. "I could have never imagined that you could reach your current level from your low realm that year. Every time I think about it, I feel like I'm dreaming."

Long Zhu also said, "In Perpetual Night Forest that year, I supported your side because I thought that you could bring a whole new world to Human Clan. However, I have never thought that my instant decision at that moment could create an incredible warrior later."

"I remember when you arrived in the Endless Sea, you only had the Disaster Realm cultivation base." Yang Zhuo said with a smile, "but today, you've reached Original God Realm. I would never have imagined in my dreams how much you've brought to us."

"Boy, you shouldn't be complacent." Shi Jian said with a serious countenance, looking at him. "Agate Star Area has many experts, including Incipient God Realm ones. Since you have extraordinary innate talents, don't lag behind."

Listening to his family and friends' encouragement, Shi Yan was touched and relaxed.

"I want to leave for a while." Contemplating for a while, he said with a smile, "I want to go to Shadow Ghostly Prison. I have something to do there. You guys just stay and cultivate in Devil Blood Star. Don't worry. I know your attainment in the future won't be ordinary."

Out of his expectations, people didn't ask him anything. They all looked at him encouragingly.

"You guys..." Shi Yan was surprised.

"You never rest even for a moment. We get used to it." Yang Zhuo laughed. "Maybe the more you travel, explore, and battle, the better you can do to break through and become stronger. We know how you are. We know you don't like the old-fashioned and conservative cultivation ways. Well, even if you say you're going to Shadow Ghostly Prison, we have no doubt that you will succeed."

"But we heard that Shadow Ghostly Prison is an extreme place. You should be careful," Long Zhu frowned but didn't stop him.

Inside the hall, Shi Yan and his fellows were talking happily. They recalled old stories and laughed with each other, having a relaxing moment.

Long, long afterward, Long Zhu and the others excused themselves and left. Only Yang Zhuo and Shi Jian stayed.

"This is Thousand Fold Lotus. You can merge it with your Sea of Consciousness. It will benefit the soul altar marvelously. Grandfathers, you two keep it carefully and find the chance to use it." Pondering for a while, Shi Yan took out the Blue Ice Jars and gave six refined Thousand Fold Lotuses to Yang Zhuo and Shi Jian.

Shi Yan got thirteen flowers. He sold three to Wu Lan, used one, and saved three for Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo. He handed his grandfathers the six flowers that remained.

"Thousand Fold Lotus is a great tool to aid the soul and Sea of Consciousness. But one person should use it all at once. The second use wouldn't be as effective as the first one. Thus, each of you should have one lotus. You guys can arrange for these six flowers," said Shi Yan.

Yang Zhuo and Shi Jian were astonished. Strange light shot out from their eyes.

They knew the value of Thousand Fold Lotuses...

Shi Yan had sold the Thousand Fold Lotuses to Wu Lan at the price of eight million divine crystals each. However, they heard that the real price of the flower could be more than ten million, which was enough to buy ten gigantic battleships. Ten million divine crystals was an enormous amount in Agate Star Area, indeed.

Six Thousand Fold Lotuses were equal to sixty million divine crystals! What was going on?

"Grandpa Yang, Grandpa Shi, you are my family. Of course, I will reserve good things for my family." Shi Yan smiled, "Grandpas, I want you two to use the flowers. Next time I see you, I want to see what realm you can reach."

Shi Jian and Yang Zhuo were at Peak of Spirit Realm. They just needed a little more to enter True God Realm. If they were in Grace Mainland, they would be on top of the pyramid. But in this Agate Star Area...

Warriors at True God Realm in Shi Yan's eyes at this moment were just ants. However, family was always family. Although their realms were low, he would never change his attitude towards them. He had six Thousand Fold Lotuses. He never thought to give Feng Rao some. He gave Yang Zhuo and Shi Jian all six.

The two old men were happy. They nodded discreetly. No words were needed to express their gratitude.

After discussing with Long Zhu, Jester, Na Xin, Tang Yuan Nan, and Yun Hao for a while, he arranged everything before leaving.

Hovering in the air, he turned his head to look at the layers of mountains, the palaces, his family and his friends. Shi Yan felt relaxed. He felt the heavy responsibility he had shouldered finally lift.

His family members and friends were appropriately arranged. This was a level 7 life star with abundant cultivating materials and Blood Devil's care. He'd done what he had to do. He had given them the best conditions to cultivate. He couldn't interfere with their progress though, so they could only depend on their efforts.

Smiling, he turned into a blood mist, dashing towards the center of Devil Blood Star.

Some women on the mountain range behind him lifted their heads to watch him, their countenances complicated.

Cao Zhi Lan, He Qing Man, and Qu Yan Qing were standing on a rock cliff of a mountain, looking at Shi Yan with lonely visages.

They couldn't have anything with Shi Yan. They regretted a little bit. The man that they hadn't lay their eyes on that year now had an earth-shaking achievement. He himself alone had overturned the situation of Grace Mainland. He had brought them from the far Grace Mainland to Agate Star Area. He found a perfect place for them to cultivate indeed.

At this moment, Shi Yan was distant and strange to them. Even if they could have thicker facial skin, they knew that they would never be people in his class. Even if they wanted to pay instead of getting paid, they didn't have that right.

The difference between their realms was like a wide canal that they could never cross. In front of Shi Yan, their pressure was massive. No matter how hard they tried, they couldn't be themselves and couldn't feel comfortable.

They suddenly understood.

If you can hold on to the man when he's poor and weak, when he's finally wealthy, you can only look at him with desire for the rest of your life. You will never be able to touch him...

Inside a stone building in another mountain range.

Feng Ke and Feng Rao were standing by the window, looking at

Shi Yan zooming out. Feng Ke glanced at his daughter and chuckled. "Your eyes are always keener than mine. I used to have no clue why you wanted to be with that man. I thought you were just impulsive. But today, you proved your good eyes. Sigh, I can't imagine that he reached such a level. In the future, he will be more dazzling. Do you think you will be pressured even more?"

"Of course," Feng Rao thought, answering softly. "Thus, I want to make double efforts. I want to shorten the distance between us. At least... I don't want to lag too far behind."

"He doesn't have only one woman, right?" frowned Feng Ke.

"Is it a problem?" Feng Rao smiled. "A strong, attractive man like him, of course, will attract beauties. Well, people aren't foolish. They can see his incredible features, right? I'm lucky because I have a large place in his heart. Although it's still small, I feel like it's good enough."

Feng Rao's line of sight moved further away from where Cao Zhi Lan, He Qing Man, and Qu Yan Qing stood. She lowered her voice, chuckling. "Some women would regret it for the rest of their life. They regret that they couldn't have anything with him. Because they were narrow-minded, they couldn't hold on to him when he wasn't good enough. So now, they have to mourn their loss for the rest of their lives. I'm lucky I made the right decision that year. Otherwise, we wouldn't have come to this place; my father and my people wouldn't have been taken care of so nicely."

Feng Ke nodded, sighing inwardly.

Chapter 989: Travel with a Beauty

When Shi Yan returned to the center of the Devil Blood Star, Fu Wei of Potion and Tool Pavilion, Bath of Evil Dragon Tribe, and Gu Te of Brutal Dragon Tribe had just finished their negotiation. They had come up with a trading and shipping contract for the future. They looked satisfied.

Fu Wei had offered them many preferential prices compared to before. As Fu Wei had the approval of Bath and Gu Te, she got the support of the Monster Clan.

Bath and Gu Te had dozens of life stars. They were indeed the prominent regional force in Agate Star Area. Many other branches of the Monster Clan had depended on Bath and Gu Te. In some aspects, Fu Wei had the exclusive right to do business with the entire Monster Clan.

The next meeting to be held was going to be in the Monster Dragon Star. At that time, Fu Wei would arrange for her staff to deliver the materials required to the Monster Clan to quench their bodies. She would receive big profits from Monster Clan.

Both sides were happy.

Bath and Gu Te saw Shi Yan coming. They nodded to greet him.

Talking to Shi Yan, they knew Blood Devil was cultivating in seclusion. Thus, they didn't stay for a long time and they departed from Devil Blood Star.

"I heard that you wanna go to Shadow Ghostly Prison?" Fu Wei got this information from Wu Lan. She seemed to not be surprised and just smiled. "I'm also going there. Do you need a ride?"

"Are you going to Shadow Ghostly Prison too?" Shi Yan was surprised.

"Yes, I have some business there. Our battleship can move faster than you guys fly. You don't need to use your energy too. What do

you think? Do you want to go with us?" invited Fu Wei.

She was still so curious about Shi Yan. The man who had the approval of the two Chiefs of Monster Dragon Star and was related to Blood Devil somehow was going to bloom with great achievement in Agate Star Area later.

Potion and Tool Pavilion had always valued potential experts, which was its persistent working policy.

"Ah, mei-mei, you do favor our Shi Yan a lot. You're going to the same destination again. I think your destiny is deep enough. Haha." Wu Lan teased her. "Haha, I heard you have many men chase after you in Potion and Tool Pavilion, but you never lay your eyes on anyone. You haven't had any rumors or scandals with anyone. Don't you think when this information is released, your flower-bodyguards would be jealous and chase after Shi Yan and confront him?"

Fu Wei blushed, glancing at her reluctantly. "Jie-jie, why don't you let me go?"

"Because you look so cute when you're blushing. I like to see you blush." Wu Lan smiled deliberately and then said to Shi Yan, "Going with Potion and Tool Pavilion will save you from trouble. No matter which area it is, the battleship of Potion and Tool Pavilion can cross wars and fights. It's like a pass. You won't encounter troubles."

Pausing for a while, Wu Lan said, "If something happens, it will only be the internal competition between the parties of Potion and Tool Pavilion itself. Haha, other forces don't dare to mess with them."

Fu Wei was bewildered. She shook her head, sighing as if she had to accept what Wu Lan said.

Potion and Tool Pavilion was a unique force that stayed away from the mundane forces of Agate Star Area. It was truly the

biggest business of Agate Star Area. No matter how strong they were, those forces had to have a close or even complicated relationship with Potion and Tool Pavilion. They needed to exchange for cultivating materials from Potion and Tool Pavilion, anyway.

Each life star and mineral star had some special cultivating materials. However, the warriors' demands were strange. Things they could exploit from their life star wasn't necessarily what they needed.

What Potion and Tool Pavilion did was to manage the cultivating materials of Agate Star Area. It would deliver what the warriors needed and exchange them for the items they didn't need. Potion and Tool Pavilion could earn from the difference between prices.

Also, Potion and Tool Pavilion had employed many alchemists and blacksmiths. They could refine materials into pellets, medicines, secret treasures, and battleships. At the same time, they had different Source of Power Upanishad Inheritances and books of special powers Upanishads. Together, they brought the enormous turnover to Potion and Tool Pavilion.

No one objected to the fact that Potion and Tool Pavilion was the wealthiest force in Agate Star Area. Rumors even said that if any mighty force could have Potion and Tool Pavilion, they received the ability to rule the entire star area alone.

From this aspect, people knew how strong Potion and Tool Pavilion was. Having Potion and Tool Pavilion meant having endless pellets and medicines, battleships and cultivating materials. At the same time, they could even cut off materials supply for the enemies. With the right time and right force, they would become invincible.

However, Potion and Tool Pavilion had never participated in any battles of the forces. They would remain neutral forever, staying away from wars and competitions.

Its real competition happened... internally between the Elders.

The internal war of Potion and Tool Pavilion was exclusive. It restricted the other forces from joining. People said that it was also brutal. However, outsiders couldn't know that.

"... If you also go there, I should say thanks in advance." Shi Yan pondered for a while and then nodded with a smile. He knew that it would be good for his team.

"We want to depart right now." Fu Wei adjusted a piece of jade on her dress, her face calm like water. "We've stayed in the Devil Blood Star for a long time. We're delayed. We should hurry to go to Shadow Ghostly Prison."

"I have no problem with that," Shi Yan smiled. He knew Fei Lan and Leona couldn't wait very long.

"Good then. We're going to depart now." Fu Wei said and then called a war chariot for Shi Yan, Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo. They flew towards the battleship of Potion and Tool Pavilion, which was anchored out there.

When the rumbling noise of the battleship's engine starting, the battleship that looked like an antique beast slowly soared up from the Devil Blood Star, flying into the immense galaxy.

They treated Shi Yan differently this time.

The previous time he hopped in this battleship, he could only sit on a corner of the deck. Potion and Tool Pavilion's staff didn't care about him much.

However, Fu Wei had given him a spacious cultivating room inside the battleship this time, which had a meditating platform that could gather energy. It also had a stone room where he could practice power Upanishad, a bathroom, and even good wines and fruits. He could reach for everything he needed. The cultivating chamber was several hundred meters large divided into ten rooms. Each of them was decorated with gorgeous jewels and exquisite

drawings on the wall. All looked stunningly luxurious.

It seemed like Fu Wei wanted to form a good relationship with Shi Yan. After she took Shi Yan's team of four to the room, she said with a smile, "You can stay here and cultivate. When we get there, I'll notify you. The conditions here are good for your cultivation. We've set up the barrier outside. You can strike your blows. Warriors at Incipient God Realm can't break the barrier. Don't worry about it."

"Thanks for your excellent hospitality."

"Don't be so polite. If you have any materials to sell or buy, remember to call me."

"Of course! Of course!"

Fu Wei smiled and nodded. She didn't linger. At the moment the battleship moved through the atmosphere of Devil Blood Star, she left.

As soon as she left, Shi Yan released his Soul Consciousness to sense around. He then took out a Blue Ice Jar. "This jar has three Thousand Fold Lotuses. I've refined them. You three should take one for each. It will benefit your Sea of Consciousness and soul altar very well."

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo had cultivated the Inheritances of the Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight. They all had the similar blood mark on their forehead. According to the Ring Spirit, the heirs and heiresses of the eight servants of Bloodthirsty would become his servants too. Strengthening them meant improving his hands.

Thus, he had saved three Thousand Fold Lotuses for the three of them. He wanted to increase their realms and powers faster.

"Thank you, senior," Ka Tuo laughed. He didn't try to be shy or lie to Shi Yan. He received the Blue Ice Jar directly. "We won't fail you, senior."

Although he still called Shi Yan senior, he had considered Shi

Yan his Master and intended to serve him wholeheartedly.

After this period of time staying together, Ka Tuo gradually recognized that Ge Lu, who had imparted him the inheritance, was one of the eight members of the Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight. He had solemnly pledged to fulfill the wish of that deceased precursor. He was clear and determined. He knew that he had to become the member of Shi Yan's entourage.

However, for face-saving consideration, he couldn't address the other Master directly. Thus, he still called Shi Yan his senior.

Shi Yan smiled. Through some small details, he had seen the changes in Ka Tuo's personality. He was glad because it was easier for them to address each other that way.

If Ka Tuo called him Master every time, Shi Yan would feel pretty awkward. He couldn't adapt to it.

Fei Lan and Leona weren't talkative. They just nodded and didn't say even a 'thank you.' However, Shi Yan understood that if he was in any trouble, Fei Lan and Leona would risk their lives to help him. They were trustful colleagues who he could reveal his back to.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo took one Thousand Fold Lotus each. After that, they found their own rooms and started to absorb the lotus as Shi Yan had done.

Shi Yan also quieted down. He found a place where he could calm down his mind and meditate. He started to think and comprehend Blood Devil's instructions which were related to Life power Upanishad.

Blood Devil had great attainment on his cultivation of Life power Upanishad. It had almost reached the perfect level, the utmost natural level of Life power Upanishad. The powers of Life Upanishad combined with Immortal Demon Blood had made Shi Yan drop his jaw in awe. That was the first time he knew that Life power Upanishad could reach such a magical level.

As long as he had one drop of Immortal Demon Blood remaining, he could still revive even if his God Body was smashed. This was the most terrifyingly, marvelous feature of the Immortal Demon Blood.

Using Immortal Demon Blood to heal a poorly wounded warrior was another application of Immortal Demon Blood. As long as he had enough Demon Blood in his body, people who accompanied him could recover if they weren't smashed into a pulp. Shi Yan could use his Demon Blood to bestow his magical recovery ability to others.

This was a terrific yet intimidating ability!

Life power Upanishad in his blood was the exclusive feature of Immortal Demon Blood, which no other races could compare to. Also, it was the main power Upanishad of the Immortal Demon Tribe. Shi Yan was lucky that he had combined Death and Life powers Upanishads right at the beginning. He had created a new level of combined powers Upanishad, which could support each other.

The performance of Life power Upanishad and Demon Blood by Blood Devil had opened a new door to Shi Yan. It showed him the powers of a higher level. It had impressed him deeply.

There was still a long time to go before they reached Shadow Ghostly Prison. Shi Yan decided to use this time most sufficiently to break through his powers Upanishads. This way, he could grow his energy and power Upanishads at the same time. He lacked improvement of powers Upanishad and realm. About the required amount of energy...

Shi Yan smiled, his face relaxed.

When they arrived in Shadow Ghostly Prison, why would he worry about not having enough energy to break through?

Chapter 990: Ancient City Battleship

Old Orchid Star, Far West region, Agate Star Area.

After thirty-two years, Old Orchid Star was now dominated by wild weed. The grand mountain that the Giant Tribe used to live on was now leveled. However, this level 7 life star didn't have many races dwelling on it due to its terrible gravity.

Forces of Far West joined hands to sweep out this life star. This planet was now devastated. They had exploited all the strange and rare mineral ores and crystals.

However, one mysterious ancient city stood firm in a corner of Old Orchid Star. It was dusted and decorated with spider webs, and became a playground for many small animals.

This mysterious ancient city was made of some special stone material. It was so firm. That year, those warriors who came to rampage this place didn't find anything precious in the city. They returned with nothing.

Anyway, those people all were savaged by Blood Devil's subordinates. They would never have another chance to get back to Old Orchid Star.

Today, a gigantic battleship landed on Old Orchid Star and anchored by that ancient city. Warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion got out of their battleship and headed to that mysterious city, their faces earnest.

The leader of this group was blacksmith Zha Duo of Potion and Tool Pavilion who was also Lord Duo, Fu Wei's Uncle Duo. He was an expert at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm who cultivated the extraordinary Space power Upanishad.

Zha Duo was wearing bright silver clothes with exquisite embroideries. He was agile and lively although he looked thin at his fifties or sixties with silver hair draped over his shoulder. Other

warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion followed him with great respect.

Zha Duo walked to the mysterious ancient city. Looking at the rigid city that had stood against tens of thousands of years, he was amazed.

He directly headed to the toughest building in the city, which Shi Yan and Na Xin had tried to open but failed even though they had tried all kinds of strength.

Zha Duo stood in front of the door, slowly reached out and touched it. He squinted to sense for a moment.

Swish!

A lightsaber shot out from his fingertip, moving like a soft ribbon. It ripped off layers of barrier on the stone doors.

Boom!

The stone door was smashed.

Zha Duo was still calm and natural, sauntering into the stone building with bright eyes.

The circles inside the stone building glowed, releasing colorful light rings. They connected with each other and created a massive light sphere. Each loop was filled with beautiful and expensive divine crystals, which were all top-quality ones. There were dozens of thousands of them.

The divine crystals were shining dazzlingly like stars in the universe, sparkling in each corner of the stone building.

Zha Duo was moving between the circles, trying to find something. He didn't want to miss any corner. However, after several times of searching, he got nothing and he knitted his brows.

After a while, Zha Duo's fingers shot out beams of light, aiming at the light ball as if he wanted to ignite the divine crystals.

Millions of divine crystals released their energy at once. The abundant energy erupted like a volcano. It filled the stone building immediately and then overflowed, reaching each corner of this mysterious city in the form of red light.

Rumble! Rumble!

The mysterious ancient city that stood on Old Orchid Star slowly floated up into the sky with such energy supplemented.

Zha Duo got out of the stone building, walking around the ancient city hovering in the sky. He carefully searched through every corner. Gradually, his face grimaced.

In the vast sea of stars, a massive battleship was moving like a wild meteor. Fu Wei and An Yun were staying in the center chamber, staring at a mirror with hope.

Gradually, the bright mirror glowed in a dim halo. A shadow became clearer. It was Zha Duo, the one who was in Old Orchid Star at this moment.

"Uncle Duo!" Fu Wei couldn't help but call. With a gentle figure, she said tenderly, "Did you find the Canon?"

In that mirror, Zha Duo appeared with a pale face. "The Canon isn't here. This ancient city is a battleship fabricated by the very First Pavilion Master. That Elder had stolen it. I'm sure he used to live here. The Thousand Fold Lotuses they got grew here. The boy you said did that. I've searched every corner of the battleship. I got nothing, not even a rock."

Fu Wei and An Yun stiffened their faces.

They could see the mysterious city moving slowly and then accelerating through that mirror. It was getting out of the atmosphere of Old Orchid Star and entering the sea of stars.

That year, the First Pavilion Master had fabricated himself a

strange battleship, which looked like a city moving in the void of the endless sea of stars. That city was the symbol of the First Pavilion Master.

The Elder who took the Canon and ran away was the key captain that drove the battleship. During that internal war, he activated the battleship and ran away, disappearing from Agate Star Area.

They found the battleship and the Thousand Fold Lotuses, which confirmed the fact that the Elder used to live in the ancient city. However, they couldn't find his body or the Canon. They didn't see anything that described the Canon or was related to the Canon, which gave Zha Duo a lot of resentment for traveling all the way here for nothing.

"I heard that the battleship was buried in the ground of the Old Orchid Star. Those people had found it by chance. Should the Canon be hidden in the core of the planet?" Fu Wei thought, frowning.

"The planet core of Old Orchid Star?" Zha Duo's face changed, his eyes more solemn. "The Old Orchid Star has a gravity that is a hundred times heavier compared to the other planets. The gravity in the core should be more terrifying and unpredictable. Even I can't jump in there."

Zha Duo knitted his brow tightly as he was thinking. "I think I can use the Soul Consciousness to sense a little bit."

Then, Zha Duo sat down on the battleship and closed his eyes and released the Soul Consciousness, sending it towards the core of Old Orchid Star.

Fu Wei and An Yun anxiously watched him.

After a while, Zha Duo retrieved his Soul Consciousness. With a dark countenance, he shook his head. "Nothing. It's empty."

Fu Wei and An Yun were disappointed.

"The Canon isn't there. If not, I could have sensed some aura

though." Zha Duo contemplated for a while and then said, "Keep an eye on that boy. Try to ask him for more details. Besides the Thousand Fold Lotus, ask if he saw anything else."

Fu Wei nodded begrudgingly.

"The Canon is crucial. You have to get that information no matter what. If needed, you can use some extreme tricks then." Zha Duo said with a malignant face and snorted. "If he wants to conceal his information force his soul altar out of his God Body. We can use Soul Searching Technique to take his memories and investigate!"

"It is not that easy," An Yun's face was bitter. "He's from the same tribe as Blood Devil. Blood Devil favors him a lot. He also has some relations with Bath and Gu Te of Monster Clan. If they want to plot against us, they can harm our Potion and Tool Pavilion's reputation. Plus, we would even receive the anger of Monster Clan."

Hearing her, Zha Duo arched his brows, "Who is that kid?"

"Not clear yet. Our Potion and Tool Pavilion has no record of him. He suddenly came out from nowhere," answered An Yun in a soft tone.

"If he has some relations with Demon Clan and Monster Clan, we can't use force, of course. Hmm, I'm too far away from you guys. Fu Wei, you work on it. Try to take true information from him. The information of the Canon seems to be disclosed. The Great Elder has asked me about this. You guys must be careful. Do not disclose anything." After Zha Duo said this, his imaged dimmed out and disappeared.

Fu Wei and An Yun exchanged looks, sighing reluctantly.

The relationships within Potion and Tool Pavilion were complicated and troublesome. Great Elder had arranged some insiders to his enemy parties. Fu Wei didn't know who they were.

Sometimes, Great Elder knew their operation and information.

They couldn't do anything about this so they could only be more cautious.

"Oh, I have to talk to him again. What a headache!" Fu Wei smoothed her tangled hair, her face involuntary. "That man's full of lies. Eight out of ten things he says are lies. I'm afraid that it's not easy to take information from him."

"Young Elder, how about... using the Seven Emotion and Six Desire liquor?" An Yun hesitated, giving a suggestion.

Fu Wei blushed. "Even I can't control my feelings if I drink that liquor. It's easy to confess... I'm afraid unexpected things could happen... I shouldn't do that..."

"I believe in your strong willpower." An Yun sighed inwardly, but she was persistent. "The Seven Emotion and Six Desire liquor is effective. It's the only method to force him to tell the truth without using force. The Canon is crucial. Young Elder, you should think about the general picture. I know it's hard for you though."

Fu Wei's cheeks reddened as she had a lot of thoughts struggling in her mind.

"Young Elder, as soon as we get news about the Canon, we can stop right there. I think with your ability, you can take the real information from him." An Yun stooped, not daring to look at her, but she still insisted.

Fu Wei pondered for a while. She thought a lot before nodding reluctantly. "Okay, we can try. Invite him for me... Umm... to my room."

An Yun was bewildered. She nodded silently.

Training room inside the battleship.

Shi Yan sat like a rock. He had stayed put for a long time already.

He held his aura, but his energy was moving around his body.

Inside the other three rooms, Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo were using the Thousand Fold Lotuses to refine their soul altars and strengthen their souls.

Knock! Knock!

The closed jade door transmitted sounds of gentle knocking.

Shi Yan woke up and walked to the door with a frown. Looking at An Yun with her awkward face, he said impatiently. "What's up?"

"Our Yong Elder wants to discuss something with you." An Yun sighed inwardly. She felt guilty. However, they had to put Young Elder in a great inconvenience for the Canon.

"If it's not important, I don't care." Shi Yan waved his hand. He was trying his best to understand the mysteries and powers of Demon Blood. This disturbance annoyed and irritated him.

An Yun's face stiffened. She cursed inwardly but still smiled. "I don't know the details. But I think it should be very important. Please, come to see her."

"Oh," Shi Yan paused for a while and said reluctantly, "then lead me."

"Follow me," An Yun immediately led him towards a stone corridor, walking deep inside the battleship.

Chapter 991: Seven Emotion and Six Desire

Liquor

An Yun stopped by a jade door, speaking with a complicated countenance. "Young Elder is waiting for you inside."

Then, An Yun bent her body slightly and sighed inwardly before she left.

Shi Yan was bewildered. Looking at the jade door, he had no clue at all.

He reached out, gently knocking on the door. The clear noise echoing in this empty stone corridor was unpleasant to the ears.

"Come in, please." Fu Wei's soft voice came out from inside. Her tender, weak voice was somehow like a tranquilizer, which made people relaxed.

Pushing the jade door with a skeptical look, Shi Yan entered the door. His eyes glistened immediately.

Inside that hundred square meters jade room, the ceiling was decorated with tender-glowing jewels. It was like a curtain of a galaxy hanging above people's heads, giving them a relaxing feeling. The walls were carved with delicate drawings and patterns, which carried hidden energy. Many exquisite tools were displayed on the wall. They looked like decorations that made the room more luxurious and elegant.

The doors of smaller rooms in this chamber were half opened. Shi Yan could see the bathroom, the cultivating room, and the pellet refining rooms. Everything here was extremely opulent.

A graceful blue figure stood by a white jade table in the middle of the room. Apparently, she had put on her makeup. Her face blushed while her beautiful eyes were like the deep ocean or fulgent blue gems.

She wore a long light-blue dress, which exposed her white shoulder and moon-like wrists. She wore a blue crystal necklace; her long hair was pinned up into an elegant and noble bun. She looked tender and stylish. Her slender fingers clutched a white jade bottle and she poured an amber-colored liquor into a glass.

The pure and pleasant scent of liquor entered Shi Yan's nostrils, moving into his internal organs. It relaxed Shi Yan and made him calm and unwind.

Fu Wei was trying to create a cozy, comfy atmosphere. She smiled faintly. Her bright eyes rippled with lights when she waved at him, talking tenderly. "Come sit here."

Shi Yan was surprised. His mouth curves into a strange smile. "Miss Fu Wei, you called me here to drink with you?" While talking, he walked forward and sat in front of that beautiful blue figure.

"Isn't it okay?" Fu Wei smiled naturally. "The journey to Shadow Ghostly Prison isn't short. Cultivating isn't a good way to kill time. If you sink into it, your mental state will be limited. Drinking a little bit will help you relax and adjust."

"Seems like you do know how to enjoy life." Studying the stone room, Shi Yan smiled. "I can tell that from this room. Haha, anyway, I'm a rough and rude guy. I may disturb your relaxing time."

"Why do you think so? How can you be rude and rough?" Fu Wei's hand lifted the jade glass, giving it to Shi Yan deliberately. "Try this liquor. Our Potion and Tool Pavilion made it. We don't sell it. This liquor is called "Passion." I don't know if it suits your taste or not."

Shi Yan smiled, receiving the glass. However, he didn't drink it immediately. He just looked at her with bright and sharp eyes.

Cunning!

Fu Wei cursed him under her breath. She was afraid that he would doubt the liquor. Thus, she tried to calm her nerves as she poured herself a full glass. Then, she slowly took one sip after another until she finished her glass. "I've been drinking it for years. But still, I like it the most."

Shi Yan nodded and finished his glass. He felt like he had gulped a mouthful of water from an extremely fresh stream. The fragrance and taste were so good that he couldn't even open his mouth to give it his compliments.

This good liquor was like a fresh stream dispersing in his tummy. Shi Yan's seven emotions and six desires were aroused from the bottom of his heart. He suddenly felt an urge to confess to his loved one.

Shi Yan eased his mind by using his Soul Consciousness to check his body. It found nothing strange so he smiled brightly, "Indeed, it tastes pure and very good!"

"Then drink more." Fu Wei was happy discreetly. She tried to be more charming when pouring him another full glass. She smiled and then said, "Well, even if our staff in the organization want to buy this kind of liquor, it costs one hundred thousand divine crystals per bottle. Outsiders hardly got a chance to taste it."

"Oh, so I should drink more," Shi Yan smiled frankly, making a toast. "Thank you for your warm hospitality. Come, we drink!"

Fu Wei was reluctant, but she could only pour a full glass for herself. She clinked her glass with his as she smiled. She noticed his glass while taking small sips from her glass.

"I heard that you're the youngest Elder of Potion and Tool Pavilion. I... can't see your realm. What's your power Upanishad?" asked Shi Yan curiously.

After his soul altar was cleaned with the Soul Refining Fluid, he could know the realm of warriors around him easily. However, he

couldn't see Fu Wei's realm. Every time he tried, it was like waving his arms in the thick mist. He couldn't see anything though.

"My soul altar is protected by a special soul treasure. You can't see my realm." Fu Wei parted her lips to grin, her jade-like finger pointing at the hairpin in her hair bun. "It helps me prevent the Soul Consciousness from sensing my head. Unless it's an Incipient God Realm expert, people can't see my real realm."

"What's your real realm then? Which power Upanishad are you cultivating?" asked Shi Yan with a smile.

"Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. I cultivate Fire power Upanishad. Most of the alchemists and blacksmiths in Potion and Tool Pavilion cultivate Fire power Upanishad." After Fu Wei took two glasses of wine, she seemed to freely speak more and she couldn't help it. "Elders in our Potion and Tool Pavilion are all good at refining pellets and secret treasures. I've made the small toys and accessories on my body myself. Haha. My biggest hobby is to fabricate secret treasures from a bunch of mixed cultivating materials. I will feel accomplished as I can achieve something that way. It feels so good to me."

"Hm, I know a little about blacksmithing," Shi Yan said, unable to control his mind. "But I don't really invest in this field. I only care to increase my competence and my realm... I hope to push my fighting competence to the peak. Forging tools is just an activity I use to calm down my restless mind. I don't want to put too much effort into it."

"You know how to forge treasures?" Fu Wei was excited, giggling. "Can you show me what you've refined?"

"No problem." Shi Yan's mind was now defenseless. He didn't know why he became so easy to be talked into things. He took out the three Bone Thorns he had refined and put them on that roundtable.

"Drink more, drink more." Fu Wei still remembered her purpose.

She poured one more glass for Shi Yan before picking up a Bone Thorn to check. Beams of light sparkled from her delicate fingers, twirling around the bone thorn.

Fu Wei's eyes glistened, giving a sincere compliment. "You do have a gift in forging treasures. This Bone Thorn is between level 2 and level 3 of the Divine Grade. You... can be considered a Divine Grade blacksmith. If you invest more, I'm sure your future attainment will be pretty good."

"Too bad that I can't distract my mind that much." Shi Yan sighed reluctantly. He instinctively gulped all the liquor in his glass. Then, he pried, "They say that your Potion and Tool Pavilion has never joined any war of Agate Star Area. You guys will remain neutral forever. Is it true? I'm curious. A big monster like Potion and Tool Pavilion has no ambition. It's unreasonable, right?"

"We don't participate directly in the wars of the star area. But some Elders will discreetly promote or urge the forces to fight against each other. They will use the others' force to get what they want in Agate Star Area." Fu Wei explained, "For example, Great Elder wants to take a black metal mine in a mineral star, but the holder doesn't want to sell it to him. Then, Great Elder will spread out the news that he will buy that mine at a great price. Naturally, people will come to clear that mineral star and sell the ores to him."

Shi Yan was surprised, "Seems like you guys aren't always neutral like it is claimed."

"Of course, we won't be absolutely neutral." Fu Wei sighed and nodded. "We will support the forces who have a good relationship with us. We will try our best to subdue the ones who betray us. We will plot against them and make other forces eliminate them. After many years, the forces that were cleared indirectly by Potion and Tool Pavilion could be more than several dozens. At the same time, our internal competition seems to never end. We urge our forces to fight each other. We control the general situation of the entire

Agate Star Area behind the curtain and we won't show ourselves in any fight."

Shi Yan listened to her earnestly. He nodded in his mind. "That's how it is."

"Potion and Tool Pavilion is much crueler than you think. My parents and relatives were also sacrifices." Fu Wei's eyes were sad and distant. "I was born in a small life star. My parents were just ordinary people. One day, my master passed by and he found that I have the trace of Fire power Upanishad. He brought me away and taught me how to cultivate. That's how I became an alchemist. However, my little life star was invaded shortly afterward. They even killed civilians. My family was all killed.

"Many years later, when I become the youngest Elder of Potion and Tool Pavilion after my master died, I got to know that Potion and Tool Pavilion had an unwritten rule: to prevent the apprentice from the tie of affection, they would arrange people to kill the apprentice's entire family. My master had arranged another force to kill my family."

Fu Wei was down. She merely explained to him the story she'd been hiding for a long time. She had never told anyone before.

"My master died early. However, when he was alive, he had treated me well, much better than my parents. I used to respect and love him a lot. After I knew it, it felt so painful and resentful..."

"You must hate him a lot," Shi Yan frowned, speaking faintly. "If I were you, I would do my best to kill him. Even if he died, I would curse him every day until I die! To enroll a disciple, he had killed all of your family members. Is it a rule of your Potion and Tool Pavilion? Oh man, you guys are so cruel!"

"Thus, I hate this place. I hate the Elders in the Pavilion. I hope I can crush it!" Fu Wei gritted her teeth and lifted her head up all of a sudden. "But only when I get the Pavilion Master position I can

have the power to crush them. However, I still need one thing to do that. If I can get it, I can fulfill my wish."

Pausing for a while, Fu Wei spoke as if she was begging him. "You can help me."

"I can help you?" Shi Yan pointed at himself, his face confused.

"Yeah, you can. As long as you tell me where the Canon is." Finally, Fu Wei had asked him what she needed to ask.

Chapter 992: This Book?

"Canon?"

Shi Yan was confused. He thought for a while and then said carefully. "I never heard about that before. I'm afraid that you will be disappointed."

Fu Wei's blue eyes sparkled. Her heart was filled with anticipation. "In that ancient battleship, did you see the Canon?" Fu Wei was hurried. She was a little pale and she looked lost.

From the day she got the information of the Thousand Fold Lotus, which gave her clues of the Canon, her mind was always occupied. After a detailed investigation, she confirmed that the Elder used to live in the ancient battleship. Her pieces of evidence showed that if Shi Yan found the Thousand Fold Lotus, he must know about the Canon.

To get the information of the Canon's whereabouts from Shi Yan, she didn't mind her reputation as she drank "Passion Liquor" of Potion and Tool Pavilion with him. She had opened her heart to him and told him secrets of Potion and Tool Pavilion and her private stories, the ones that she had buried deep in her heart.

She thought that she could get something to make it up. However, hearing Shi Yan say that he doesn't know such a thing, she was so bitter that she even wanted to vomit blood.

Shi Yan was sensitive enough to realize her changing mood. Due to the effect of the liquor, Shi Yan wanted to say something. He instinctively pried, "What's the Canon?"

"It's a book." Fu Wei was so bitter. She sighed reluctantly. "That book can affect the selection of the next Pavilion Master of Potion and Tool Pavilion. Our party is in a bad situation. If we get the Canon, we may overturn it."

". . . A book?" Shi Yan's mind flickered. He instinctively touched

the Fantasy Sky Ring. A faint halo flashed. The yellowed, dilapidated book emerged, the one he couldn't understand. It fell in his hand. "This book?"

Fu Wei was still sinking in her significant loss. Her beautiful eyes became hot as her soft body shivered. She couldn't help but grab that book. Her slender finger shivered anxiously. She was so thrilled she ever clutched Shi Yan's big hand.

Fu Wei was shocked as if she was electrocuted. Her gentle body trembled hard. Her face became so red it was as if she could drip blood. She couldn't help but yell, "Yes! That's it... It's the Canon! You have the Canon!"

As their hands were touching, Shi Yan could feel the terrifying heat from her jade fingers. However, the feeling of touching something white and so smooth had touched Shi Yan.

Fu Wei gripped both the Canon and Shi Yan's fingers. She was shaking. She suddenly reacted and she blushed when she retracted her hand, letting out the Canon that she had ever seen in her dream. Her voice trembled as she said, "You tell me. What do you want to exchange for the Canon?"

Shi Yan was confused. He frowned but it was hard to recognize. "So this book is very important to you?"

"Very very important!" Fu Wei nodded. Her face has never been as solemn as it was now. "You tell me and I can satisfy any conditions of yours as long as you give me the Canon."

"Then take it," Shi Yan smiled generously, throwing her the book that he couldn't understand. "It's useless to me. If you like, I'm giving it to you. About the condition... Hmm, it's alright."

Perhaps it was because of the liquor or because Fu Wei had opened her heart to him. As Shi Yan hadn't recognized the value of that book, he didn't give any strict condition. His generosity had shaken the maiden heart of Fu Wei.

Under the effect of a big thrill, Fu Wei was so excited. She grabbed the book and jolted up as if she had just found a precious treasure. She stepped forward. Under the urge of some emotion she couldn't name, she jumped over and hugged Shi Yan, screaming. "Thank you! Thank you! I don't know how to say thank you enough! I will carve it into my heart!"

Fu Wei grabbed the Canon. She was both happy and angry. She didn't feel good as if she had a mix of feelings right now.

After fifteen minutes of talking to each other, she had a lot of mixed feelings together. She was pushed between happiness and sadness, which were totally opposite. Together with her private parts violated, Fu Wei felt her mind a mess of gossamers. She suddenly felt that Shi Yan's face was somehow cute but somehow also something so disgusting that she hated it. She fought the urge to smash it with one punch.

Shi Yan stood alone in Fu Wei's room, his face strange. The wonderful feeling he just had made him miss it already.

Fu Wei was gentle and elegant. Her bearings were pacific and clear like water. People could easily have a good feeling talking to her and relax their defense. This woman usually wore loose garments to hide her voluptuous body. People would never know how wonderful her curves were.

As Shi Yan had the chance to feel it today, he thought that he missed it already. He stood there, recalling that feeling.

After a while, he gradually pulled himself together. Looking at the glass on that roundtable, he knew that liquor was somehow magical.

Meditating for two hours, the effect of the liquor had vanished. Shi Yan got up from his dreamy feelings. He immediately regretted it.

From Fu Wei's attitude, he knew that the Canon he couldn't understand was extremely precious to Potion and Tool Pavilion. Otherwise, Fu Wei wouldn't stick to him like that and she wouldn't have needed to use this trick on him. She had almost added her body into her plan.

I should have talked about the conditions!

Shi Yan thought instinctively. Then, he shook his head, chuckling. He had given away the Canon generously without a condition. It was the effect of the liquor. However, Fu Wei telling him her story sincerely had also had a particular impact on him.

This woman had to struggle a lot though. The master she respected had killed her parents indirectly. Surviving in that dark and heavy Potion and Tool Pavilion wasn't as glorious and beautiful as what people saw.

If that useless book could overturn Fu Wei's situation, Shi Yan thought that it was acceptable. As it was valueless in his hand, it could help Fu Wei on something which would be good then.

Thud! Thud! Thud! Thud!

The low footsteps echoed. An Yun gingerly appeared at the door. She looked around, but she couldn't find Fu Wei. She slightly paled, hissing. "Where's Young Elder?"

"She has just gone." Shi Yan glared at her deliberately, talking. "You guys are good at trapping people. You've set all these things to treat me. Well done."

An Yun felt her heart sinking. She spoke sternly. "What did you do to Young Elder?" Her voice was tense and anxious. She had always protected Fu Wei sincerely. As she worried that Fu Wei could meet any inconvenience, she shouted. "If you dare to touch Young Elder, even if you have relations to Monster Clan and Demon Clan, Potion and Tool Pavilion won't let it go easily."

Shi Yan snorted, walking towards her. "You go ask her."

He passed An Yun, returning to his cultivating room.

An Yun's face was complicated. She hesitated for a while and then left quickly.

The center room of the battleship.

Fu Wei held the book in her hand, her face glowing beautifully. She grinned as she was cracked with joy. She couldn't help but mumble to herself. "Canon! It's the real Canon. I can have it easily..."

"Young Elder?" An Yun suddenly appeared. After asking, she was bewildered as she was filled with joy instantly. Pointing at the book, she shivered. "It... It... Is it real?"

"True, it's the Canon of Potion and Tool Pavilion that has been missing for tens of thousands of years!" Fu Wei took a deep breath, answering her resolutely.

An Yun was dumbstruck. She couldn't help but nod her head. She couldn't make a sound.

Fu Wei didn't mind her. She took a deep breath, her bosom rippling mesmerizingly. She touched the ring on her jade fingers, releasing a bright mirror. Fu Wei pulled herself together, releasing the light that made the mirror brighter.

Zha Duo's image appeared in the shadow, his face impatient. He scolded, "What happened? Didn't I tell you not to call me if it's not urgent? We have an insider. It's easy to disclose information if we do long-distance communication."

"Uncle Duo, I have the Canon."

The image in the mirror was stirred up hearing her.

Chapter 993: Generous Gift!

Inside the unknown fountain of powers Upanishad, two souls were floating and bobbing like spooky ghost flames searching for something.

Different marvelous powers Upanishads moved like outer space light streamers. They swooshed quickly. Each light streamer contained one power Upanishad. There were also space light streamers with the same power Upanishad but at different levels. It was like developed forms of the same mysteriously mighty power.

Obviously, it wasn't the first time that Shi Yan's host soul and co-soul entered this place. They were like regular customers now. In this area, he had comprehended Space power Upanishad and Star power Upanishad. However, this place didn't have only one kind of Space power Upanishad and Star power Upanishad. As he tried to sense, there were dozens of them in the area he had wandered around. They were the performances of the two powers Upanishads.

Of course, he wasn't aiming at Space power or Star power this time. He wanted to accumulate something for his Death and Life power Upanishad.

However, after one round around the place, Shi Yan was disappointed that he couldn't find any space streamers related to Death or Life power Upanishad.

Metal, Fire, Wood, Lightning, Ice, Gravity, Wind, and the other popular powers Upanishad were easy to find here. However, they were so different to what he was cultivating. Thus, he didn't try to study them.

In the blood pool, Blood Devil had used Demon Blood to perform the special abilities of Life power Upanishad, which touched him deeply. He got new cognition of Life power Upanishad. Thus, he

wanted to see if he could advance Life power Upanishad in this place.

However, this vast fountain of powers Upanishads was immense and torrential. Various powers Upanishads scattered around endlessly and every hour he wandered here, he had to consume a lot of energy.

However, he could only move within a limited area. If he got out of this safe place, his soul energy would all be consumed. So he shouldn't linger for a long time.

Due to his low realm and weak soul, he could only operate in a limited area. Shi Yan knew this well.

Begrudgingly, he couldn't do anything but let his soul immerse in a brilliant space, where there was a pulsation of space power that rippled like unceasing seawater. It had some kind of marvelous space energy that piled up in layers. Shi Yan let his soul wander in there and slowly quiet down as he tried to comprehend.

The space pulsation was the key to build Space Teleport Formation. If he understood this, Shi Yan could use his energy with the special materials to build the space formation like Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation, which could connect two life stars.

His soul immersed in magical space energy fluctuation. He relaxed and released flows of Soul Consciousness to resonate with the space energy ripples. He tried carefully to sense each pulse of space.

Time flew hurriedly.

After an unknown period, his soul felt tired. A thought popped up in his head. He felt like the whole place was turning upside down in panic.

When he could react, his soul had returned to the soul altar already. He woke up in his room.

The three shadows sitting next to him smiled when they saw him waking up.

"Have you finished absorbing the Thousand Fold Lotus?" Shi Yan smiled and asked.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo nodded, their eyes full of joy. Ka Tuo laughed, speaking loudly and wildly. "Senior, this Thousand Fold Lotus is really good. My Sea of Consciousness has expanded twice. My Soul Consciousness is refined and my soul altar seems to have been quenched once."

"How about you?" Shi Yan smiled, looking at Fei Lan and Leona.

"I'm about to break to Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm." Fei Lan smiled and then turned to Leona. "She has generated the Ethereal Extent. The effects of the Thousand Fold Lotus are really amazing. Each Thousand Fold Lotus is worth the price of eight million divine crystals!"

Leona nodded quietly. Her savage and stubborn face showed her genuine happiness.

In Agate Star Area, the Thousand Fold Lotus was an Original Incipient Grade material that could nurture the soul the best. Even Incipient God Realm experts could use it to refine their soul. At the same time, it was the precious material to refine many unique soul class pellets and medicines. It was the rarest and precious item in the market, indeed.

Three of the Thousand Fold Lotuses were absorbed. The three experts who had a relationship with Shi Yan all had their souls strengthened greatly. Their realms had improved on a large scale. Of course, all of them were happy.

Shi Yan nodded and smiled. "All of you have enlarged your Sea of Consciousness and strengthened your soul. You didn't waste the Thousand Fold Lotus. I hope we will all advance during this trip to Shadow Ghostly Prison. I hope we can soon reach the realms we

have always yearned for."

The three of them smiled.

Perhaps because their realms improved, Leona and Fei Lan had gradually calmed down even though were worried for her father and her man. They were filled with hope for this trip.

"Fu Wei was here. She wanted to see you, but you were still cultivating, so we stopped her." Ka Tuo said with an ambiguous smile. "Senior, this woman is good. She is into you. She was really polite when she came here. She treated us well. She even asked if we needed pellets for our cultivation. Do you... have something with her?"

Shi Yan recalled the beautiful experience that happened in Fu Wei's room previously. He was a little bit touched, but his face showed no particular emotion. "You think too much. That woman just wants to cooperate with us more in the future. She's a real businesswoman. She will only choose the partner she thinks is worth her cooperation."

"That woman isn't simple," frowned Fei Lan. "I can't even see her real realm. She has a high position in Potion and Tool Pavilion and is also the youngest Elder. I heard Potion and Tool Pavilion has only twelve Elders..."

Shi Yan nodded quietly.

He spoke to Fu Wei. He knew Fu Wei's sad stories and he knew Fu Wei wanted to destroy Potion and Tool Pavilion. If he disclosed her idea, Fu Wei would be crossed out of Potion and Tool Pavilion. She would suffer and it would be a disaster.

This woman had used the peculiar wine to take information from him, but she also told him her deepest secrets. In some aspect, Shi Yan now kept her biggest secret. If he wanted to harm her, he could make Potion and Tool Pavilion expel her in any minute.

"I'm going to see her then." Pondering for a while, Shi Yan stood

up and left the cultivating room.

His cultivating room was inside the battleship. He could reach other places through the stone corridors. However, when he got out of his room this time, he saw a guard of Potion and Tool Pavilion standing at an intersection not far from them. Seeing him come, the guard asked with respect. "Do you need anything, Sir?"

"I want to meet your Young Elder."

"Please wait for a moment. I'm going to notify them."

"Okay."

That guard left immediately. He flashed like an electric beam between the intersections. Shortly after, he returned and bowed, "Young Elder invites you."

Shi Yan nodded, following him.

The guard didn't lead him to Fu Wei's private room but instead to the center of the battleship where they controlled the magical barriers and restrictions that protected the battleship. The green stone ceiling above his head had a vast star map with locations connected to each other by brilliant light beams. It looked like an utmost complicated spider web.

Shi Yan lifted his head to read the map. He recognized that it was the layout of Agate Star Area. It was something that every battleship should have for long-distance journeys in the sea of stars.

The control center of the battleship had layers of glowing imprints of barriers and restrictions. They looked like human fingerprints carved on the stone walls, which were control by the Soul Consciousness.

Of course, understanding the barriers and having an approval of them by the battleship were necessary to control it.

Shi Yan was just an outsider. Although he knew what those

imprints represented, he couldn't control them.

Fu Wei sat neatly on a crystal lotus throne in the center of the room. Her long blue dress spread like flower petals, covering her sexy body. She looked like a blooming blue flower. Glancing at Shi Yan, she thinned her lips, waving her hand gently. "Dismiss."

The guard who took Shi Yan to this place quietly left, closing the stone behind him.

Fu Wei stooped. Blue flames flew out of her palms. An exquisite, small jade cauldron was bouncing in her soft palm. It sent a pleasant fragrance to the air that seeped into people's souls.

She was concentrating on refining something.

Shi Yan chuckled. He stayed aside, not bothering her. He watched her performance with interest.

Fu Wei suddenly felt her heart become a mess under his gaze. Her calm mind suddenly had many unclear thoughts. She was fluttered. She made a mistake while carving the imprint.

Boom!

A clear sound echoed. It seemed like something in her cauldron had exploded. Fu Wei was confused, her beautiful brows knitting together. She sighed weakly and reluctantly said, "Failed."

Shi Yan just smiled, giving no comment.

Fu Wei put her jade cauldron aside, looking at Shi Yan. She was still elegant and calm as usual. "These books are for you. They can help your Space power Upanishad."

New books flew and floated like leaves. They moved, swaying in front of Shi Yan. He picked up one of them and glanced at it. Shi Yan was astounded. "Books of Space power Upanishad? Didn't you say that Potion and Tool Pavilion wouldn't sell these books and only members of Potion and Tool Pavilion with some merits could read them?"

While talking, he grabbed the books, skimming through them. He became more astonished.

They were all instructions and lectures about Space power Upanishad with different branches of the power and their abilities. Although the books didn't say it clearly, Shi Yan knew it would be of help to his cultivation.

Space power Upanishad was rare and peculiar. No Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance could have it. And there was almost no book about it. Although Potion and Tool Pavilion was the strongest and wealthiest force in Agate Star Area, it had only some writings of warriors who cultivated Space power. To other warriors cultivating the same power, these writings were priceless.

"Those are the copies I asked my staff to replicate." Fu Wei explained simply. "You helped us greatly this time. This is how I will repay you. We should do that. Besides, I've talked to Uncle Duo myself. He will send a battleship to Demon Blood Star to deliver a group of cultivating materials of around fifty million divine crystals to your fellows."

"Fifty million divine crystals?" Shi Yan gawked, his jaws dropping. "You're not kidding, right?"

"No joke." Fu Wei smiled seeing him startled. "With the copies of books of Space power Upanishad I gave you, the total value is more than one hundred million... This is to pay tribute to you... for the Canon."

Shi Yan shivered as he was thrilled. After a while, he looked at her solemnly. He asked gingerly, "Hey... Miss Fu Wei... It's... You like me, do you?"

Chapter 994: The Potion and Tool Pavilion's Crisis

"Bull!"

Fu Wei rolled her eyes, burst out laughing. "You... Haha, turns out you do babble. I always thought that you were kinda serious all the time."

Looking at the arrangement of the control center of the battleship and those explicable marks, Shi Yan smiled and then said, "I didn't think that the crap book was worth one hundred million divine crystals. I earned a fortune this time."

He smiled, speaking about the three things they found in that mysterious ancient city. "The Giant Tribe kept the lumber of the Life Ancient Tree of the Wood Clan and the evil dragon skull. They thought that those two items were priceless to them. They didn't consider that the unknown book would be valuable. Turns out it was the most precious one."

"Your vision was much better than the Giant Tribe." Listening to him, Fu Wei also smiled. "The Canon is crucial. If you thought one hundred million divine crystals wasn't enough, we would have bought it even if you asked for one billion divine crystals. Of course, if you dared to ask for one billion divine crystals, I think some people in the Pavilion would find another way around."

Last time, they had drunk the "Passion liquor," they had opened their hearts to each other with a little romance scene that followed. While they didn't recognize it, the distance between them shortened.

Fu Wei didn't feel it difficult to tell Shi Yan the dark business of Potion and Tool Pavilion. She had considered him someone she could reveal her secrets to. She had told him secrets from the bottom of her heart. Shi Yan was curious about Potion and Tool

Pavilion. He tried his best to guide their story, making Fu Wei tell him a lot of secrets of Potion and Tool Pavilion.

"The twelve Elders of the pavilion follow three different parties. The internal competitions have never ceased." Fu Wei sighed, hesitating. "I always feel like it would be a big change in the pavilion. Someone has started something. They all have close relationships with other star areas' forces."

Shi Yan's countenance changed. "The other star areas' forces?"

"Yeah, Shadow Ghostly Prison has many hollow channels that connect to other star areas. Well, most of them do, but they are all shattered and incomplete." Fu Wei thought for a while and then said, "However, only the Dark Shadow Clan knows those space channel clearly. Great Elder of our organization has a close relationship with Dark Shadow Clan. They have some connection. I used to worry that they would do business with forces in another star area. Maybe... maybe they could harm the welfare of Agate Star Area."

Shi Yan frowned and stood up earnestly. "Why are you telling me all these things?"

Potion and Tool Pavilion in Agate Star Area was extremely mysterious. They had private contracts and businesses with strong forces and mighty clans all around. Discreetly, they could make a significant impact on Agate Star Area. If someone of this organization cooperated with forces from another galaxy to plot something in Agate Star Area, the impact would be immeasurable.

"Because except for you, I don't know who I can talk to and rant about what is in my mind. Sometimes, holding a secret for too long can be a big burden." Fu Wei gently adjusted her tangled hair draped on her forehead. She said miserably. "Last time we drank, you heard many things about me. It happened anyway. Now, it's okay if I tell you more."

Shi Yan nodded quietly.

The two of them stayed in the control center of the battleship and spoke about some stuff of Potion and Tool Pavilion. The more stories Fu Wei told him, the more Shi Yan grimaced.

Shadow Ghostly Prison was like a key intersection connecting Agate Star Area to other galaxies. The mysterious Dark Shadow Clan controlled the checkpoint. They moved and operated like ghosts. No one knew what it wanted to do. However, Potion and Tool Pavilion had pieces of evidence prove that Dark Shadow Clan has a connection to another star area.

The Great Elder's party of Potion and Tool Pavilion still maintained business with Dark Shadow Clan. They cooperated closely and they usually had a private business, which wasn't monitored by the Pavilion. Fu Wei guessed that Potion and Tool Pavilion also had some connection to another star area through the Dark Shadow Clan.

The very First Pavilion Master had stated clearly when he established the organization that Potion and Tool Pavilion would only operate in Agate Star Area. It wasn't allowed to contact any other star area. Also, the organization wouldn't join disputes or conflicts of other clans and forces in Agate Star Area.

Until this generation, Potion and Tool Pavilion seemed to follow the rules of the founder. However, they discreetly reached out to other forces around Agate Star Area. Today, they wanted to break the first rule that the Pavilion Master had set. Fu Wei and many other people were alerted since they felt that some mechanism has been triggered. They felt a terrible danger was silently covering all of them.

"Your Pavilion Master doesn't care at all? Does he know about this?" Shi Yan asked after feeling frightened for a while.

"I'm afraid our current Pavilion Master can't do anything." Fu Wei sighed, explaining. "In each generation, the Pavilion Master is the most brilliant blacksmith who can refine Divine Grade or

Original Incipient Grade items. But it's unknown why when their attainment has reached a specific level, they can't break through anymore. When they forge the Original Incipient Grade secret treasures, they often make mistakes. They could break the rules of Nature. Our current Pavilion Master had fallen into bedevilment three hundred years ago when he was refining an Original Incipient Grade treasure. His soul altar has collapsed. Until today, he has consumed a considerable amount of materials to save his soul from vanishing. He doesn't have free time to manage the Pavilion.

"The same thing happened with the second and the third Pavilion Master. They got some excellent achievements and then when they refined Original Incipient Grade treasures, they would fall into bedevilment, which led to the collapse of their soul altars. Their souls fragmented little by little. The Elders came to the same idea that without the Canon, we would never see the marvelous, utmost secret of blacksmithing. That was why all the Pavilion Masters made mistakes.

"Only the soul of the current Pavilion Master remains. And it's slowly perishing day after day. Thus, the competition to the Master position has become fierce. At the same time, we have a rule saying that the one with the Canon can step on the precious throne of the Pavilion Master. The one who has the Canon can understand the most marvelous essence of blacksmithing. That way, he could avoid falling into the same mistake of the previous Pavilion Masters. Now you know how crucial the Canon is to us, right?"

Shi Yan nodded slowly. "Yeah, it's indeed crucial. That's why you have to let yourself suffer drinking that kind of wine with me to take information from me..."

Fu Wei blushed, rolling her eyes at him. She was a bit embarrassed, so she shouted at Shi Yan to hide it. "You bastard! Can you not brag about what you've done? I prohibit you from

talking about it from now on!"

Shi Yan was surprised. He burst out laughing. He nodded, indicating he understood.

Pausing for a while, he decided to leave. As he got a lot of information, he needed time to digest and plan something all of a sudden.

Fu Wei got up. She wanted to see him off. However, as soon as she stood up, her deep and bright blue eyes gazed at a mark on the wall.

That mark stayed in a corner, glowing in the fulgent purple light. That light was rippling a lot as if it had something to report.

Fu Wei frowned, pondering. She didn't ask Shi Yan to leave as she extended her beautiful arms, touching the mark.

The purple light slowly twisted and projected the hologram of a battleship moving in the dim-lit universe. There were many people running to and fro on the battleship. However, it wasn't clear enough to see.

"It reacts to battleships around." Fu Wei explained. "That battleship isn't far from us. It also goes to Shadow Ghostly Prison. Anyway, that ship doesn't have a symbol of any force. I don't know which force it belongs."

Shi Yan nodded as he understood.

The battleship he was standing on and the other battleships that Potion and Tool Pavilion sold weren't similar. This battleship could defend and attack with the best barriers and restrictions. It could even block Soul Consciousness. It was absolutely the best of the best battleships.

They could stay inside the battleship and observe the shape and trajectory of the battleships moving near them while they couldn't see them. If Fu Wei wanted, she could use the tremendous attack system of this battleship to wreck that battleship and kill the

warriors there in just a blink of an eye.

This was also one of the formidable abilities of Potion and Tool Pavilion.

Shi Yan didn't bother with that battleship very much. He nodded and left. However, after taking a step, he felt something as the Demon Blood in his body had a subtle vibe.

He halted, frowning as he watched the battleship projected by the purple light. His eyes became strange.

Perhaps it was because his clear soul altar had been refined by the Soul Refining Fluid, which had cleaned up all the contaminants, together with Life power Upanishad and Demon Blood. Recently, Shi Yan found that he could sense the location of people who had some relation to him within a specific distance.

For example, when he was in the Devil Blood Star, he could know the location of Yang Zhuo and Shi Jian, the ones who had a relation to him.

The vibe sent out from his Demon Blood told him that battleship was carrying someone he knew. If it weren't his friend or a member of his family, the Demon Blood wouldn't have any vibe. It might be a new ability when the Life power Upanishad and Demon Blood combined together to another level.

"What's going on?" Fu Wei turned and looked at him. "Is that battleship important?"

Shi Yan gave a slight nod.

Fu Wei thought for a while and then suggested, "Then shall we go there and check it out?" Initially, she wanted to avoid that battleship. However, seeing Shi Yan move, she offered.

"Alright, it's good if we can see it. That battleship has someone I know," Shi Yan thanked her, nodding.

Fu Wei released magical light beams from her fingers, which flew

towards an unknown mark. She was driving the battleship and changing its route.

Shi Yan was sensitive enough to feel the energy in the battleship moving fiercer and faster as the ship turned. From his angle, he could see the battleship projected by the purple light get clearer. Figures on the deck slowly became clearer.

Pfff!

A drop of Demon Blood exploded. The magical sensing moved together with Soul Consciousness, reaching afar like an invisible rope towards that battleship.

His eyes shrank as he focused on that battleship, which was slowly zoomed in. He followed the subtle sense of the Demon Blood to search something.

After a while, he was shaken. His face was dumbstruck as he couldn't believe what he was seeing.

In that place, he saw two silhouettes among the crowd. A slightly boorish old man was hunched, his mouth moving gingerly as if he was explaining something.

Standing next to the old man was a glamorous figure. She had a beautifully slender pair of legs. Her small face was delicate and cute. However, she looked so angry as she was shouting at the old man.

"Zuo Shi!" Shi Yan hissed.

Chapter 995: Xuan Ming and Zuo Shi

Leonard was the leader of a small force called "Drifting Cloud" in Southwest of Agate Star Area. He was at Third Sky of Original God Realm, which was just one step away from Ethereal God Realm.

Chief of the Drifting Cloud was a Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm expert who always operated in Southwest of Agate Star Area. This force consisted of warriors from everywhere. They provided warriors to Shadow Ghostly Prison and transported people to earn divine crystals.

Shadow Ghostly Prison was a place of year-round chaos. However, it had many peculiar and precious mineral stars, many of them unowned. Warriors in Southwest of Agate Star Area would take risks and visit Shadow Ghostly Prison for a better cultivating condition.

The danger was also a kind of opportunity. Many had died in Shadow Ghostly Prison. However, some people were lucky enough to collect a lot of cultivating materials. When they got back, they made a little fortune.

Leonard usually gathered warriors from everywhere in Southwest region and transported them to Shadow Ghostly Prison using his battleship. That was how he earned divine crystals for Drifting Cloud. He was indeed a little powerful in the organization. His voice mattered somehow.

Leonard was standing in a corner of the battleship. His lewd eyes were scanning a long-limbed girl, beaming a cold grin.

He had laid his eyes on this girl since she had been onboard. He had waited for a chance to flirt with her ever since.

However, that innocent girl didn't bat an eye at him. She stood in a corner with that old man. They were talking from time to time, which made Leonard's plan fail.

Although he was a little boss of Drifting Cloud, he didn't dare do things wantonly. He decided to use another way to force the girl.

Looking at her sexy legs, Leonard gulped. His mind was disordered while his eyes became hotter.

"Before we got onboard, we had submitted two thousand divine crystals. It should have been enough to transport us to Shadow Ghostly Prison. What do you mean you're asking for more?" Xuan Ming grimaced, thundering with red eyes. However, he was anxious as he wasn't strong enough.

He knew Leonard was a small boss of Drifting cloud with Third Sky of Original God Realm. This man was also famous in the Southwest.

Xuan Ming had heard the rumors about this pervert before, but he didn't think that Leonard would lay his eyes on Zuo Shi.

Xuan Ming and Zuo Shi soon came to Agate Star Area. They had landed on a mineral star in Southwest of Agate Star Area. When they were still in Grace Mainland, Xuan Ming was the peak level 9 monster. He was just one step away from being level 10. Xuan Ming's understanding of Grace Mainland was much deeper than the majority of people living there.

He had soon found a Teleport Formation that his ancestors left in Grace Mainland. The energy from that formation was weak. It was just enough to deliver him and Zuo Shi.

Zuo Shi had the bloodline of his Black Tortoise holy ancestor. After he had found her, he had tried his best to nourish her. As he knew the energy in Grace Mainland was about to be all drained, he lied to Zuo Shi and took her to Southwest of Agate Star Area.

After they had arrived in Agate Star Area, Xuan Ming finally knew how small he was in this area despite his peak status in Grace Mainland. He knew that the high-grade star area had more intimidating existences.

Their lives in Agate Star Area weren't pleasurable. They had to struggle a lot. Danger awaited them with each step. He had brought Zuo Shi to be the miner, the farmer cultivating herbs and more. They had lived gingerly and didn't dare to provoke any strong warriors.

Zuo Shi had made every effort to succeed. Her innate endowment was unparalleled. Soon, she had reached King God Realm. She understood the mysteries of her bloodline and the power Upanishad of the Holy Beast Black Tortoise. Xuan Ming felt hopeful.

Recently, Xuan Ming accidentally found a piece of his holy ancestor Black Tortoise in a small shop. He asked and they told him it was from Shadow Ghostly Prison. Xuan Ming was excited. He wanted to take Zuo Shi to Shadow Ghostly Prison to find the body of the Black Tortoise. They wanted to see if Zuo Shi could receive the most essence inheritance from Xuan Ming's holy ancestor. It would help Zuo Shi break through to another realm.

Shadow Ghostly Prison was really far from Southwest of Agate Star Area. They could encounter a lot of dangers too. Xuan Ming and Zuo Shi weren't rich. They couldn't afford a battleship or a war chariot. Since it was a long trip ahead, they weren't sure whether they could protect themselves or not.

Thus, Xuan Ming came to Drifting Cloud, using his savings to pay two thousand divine crystals to get on this battleship that was heading to Shadow Ghostly Prison in the hope of finding the Black Tortoise's body there. Xuan Ming hoped that it could complete the inheritance for Zuo Shi.

From the day they got onboard, Xuan Ming found Leonard looking at Zuo Shi with his perverted eyes. As Xuan Ming was a cunningly wise, old monster, he knew what Leonard wanted. He took care of Zuo Shi, staying quietly in a corner of the battleship. They didn't talk to people much or cause any dispute. Xuan Ming hoped that Leonard would forget him and elegant Zuo Shi so they

could dodge this disaster.

It was too bad that Leonard often came to talk to them over and over again, suggesting Zuo Shi to accompany him.

Xuan Ming had tried his best to protect her. Since they were staying with many people, Leonard didn't dare to act rashly because he could shame the Drifting Cloud with his deeds. After several times, he had to step back.

However, Leonard decided to move again today. This time, he didn't come with good intentions. He said that the divine crystals Xuan Ming paid them weren't all good. He wanted them to pay again. Xuan Ming understood that Leonard was playing hard. However, Xuan Ming felt a little hopeless as he tried to resist.

"We've checked your two thousand divine crystals carefully. Some of them are of bad quality." Leonard lifted his head, talking coldly. "You guys have to submit one thousand high-quality divine crystals. Or else, you will have to leave the ship and take care of yourself."

Xuan Ming and Zuo Shi had spent all of their savings to pay two thousand divine crystals. They had nothing left. If they left the battleship now, they wouldn't be able to survive in this vast universe without divine crystals to refill their energy.

Xuan Ming paled in anger. "When we paid the divine crystals, you guys had them checked at the spot. Why was it a mistake?"

"There's a mistake." Leonard gave a faint grin as he relaxing. "You guys pay the divine crystals or get lost. Oh right. You can also just let this little girl escort me while I drink and chat for a while. Perhaps with proper payment, I will be satisfied and then I will let you stay."

"You bastard! I'm not going with you!" Zuo Shi's small face was filled with rage. She put her hands on her waist, telling that pervert off.

After so many years, Zuo Shi was still innocently beautiful. She was like a fresh flower that had just bloomed. Her tight warrior clothing lingered on her white-skinned body. Her legs were long and mesmerizing. Her tight clothes drew the curves of her body. Together with the naive, small face, she made others' hearts beat faster.

Leonard guffawed, his eyes like a snake's that wantonly raked through Zuo Shi's body. He swallowed his saliva. "Little mei-mei, why do you need to do that? Drink and enjoy with me. You can save yourself from dying in the galaxy. It's good for you either way. Don't worry. I won't mistreat you. Think about it."

"Even if I have to die, I won't go with you!" Zuo Shi said through her gritted teeth.

This ship didn't transport only Xuan Ming and Zuo Shi. There were many warriors of unknown origins. Most of them didn't have powerful backgrounds and they were just at True God Realm, King God Realm, or Original God Realm. However, all of them together weren't enough to deal with Leonard's force.

The Drifting Cloud had rules. Usually, when they transported passengers to Agate Star Area, the power of the captain and the guards were more than sufficient to subdue the passengers. It was to prevent the case of passengers trying to take control of the ship.

Since they didn't have strong backgrounds, they had to use Drifting Cloud's service to get into Agate Star Area. At this moment, all of them combined weren't enough to threaten Leonard.

Thus, although they knew what Leonard wanted and that he just wanted to trouble the others, they couldn't stand up and deliver justice. They could only look at Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming with their sorry faces as they sighed.

"Seems like you do want to die!" Leonard thundered when Zuo Shi infuriated him. His face darkened gradually. "I'm giving you

guys two hours to think about it. When the time's up and you can't give me an answer that satisfies me, I will throw you overboard."

Leonard snorted, jumping to the tower atop the battleship. From that height, he coldly looked at people like a god who held their lives in his hands.

"Little girl, if they throw you out of the battleship, you won't survive." Someone whispered, giving advice. "If you don't have enough divine crystals, just bear the inconvenience a little while. Being alive... is more important than anything else, you know."

"Yes, compared to life, dignity and purity mean nothing. Relax and survive. Just consider it... as something that has bitten you." Someone told her while looking at the tower. He had to lower his voice as he was afraid that Leonard could hear him.

"First, we have to survive. We will find the chance to take revenge later," said another person.

As they were all miserable, they had a good feeling for Zuo Shi. No one wanted to see the innocent girl get violated. And they didn't want to see Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming get kicked off the ship to death. They tried to console Zuo Shi with the hope that she would have a wider vision.

"I would rather die!" Zuo Shi's face was resolute. She took a deep breath, looking at Xuan Ming. Old man, I'm sorry. I may make you disappointed.

Xuan Ming paled indignantly. He looked at Leonard on the tower, clenching his jaws. "We will leave the battleship. As long as we can survive, this man will pay a big price for what he's done today!"

But he was so bitter and miserable.

This universe was endless. He had just the level 10 cultivation base and Zuo Shi had just Second Sky of King God Realm. They didn't have divine crystals to refill their consumed energy if they

left the ship. Once they jumped into outer space, they needed the divine crystals immediately. Although they wouldn't meet the space energy storm, they couldn't resist for a long time. If they weren't lucky, they would die shortly after.

Xuan Ming suddenly regretted it. He thought that he shouldn't bring Zuo Shi to this place. If they had still been in Grace Mainland, they would still have had a chance to survive even if the earth and heaven energy there was running out. At most, they would only need to use their energy and become mortal.

However...

Xuan Ming's face was reluctant and desperate.

"We won't wait for him to kick us out. We will leave now!" Zuo Shi gritted her teeth, glaring at Leonard maliciously. She prepared to jump off the battleship.

"Who are you?"

However, at this moment, surprising screams arose from the other corner of the battleships. Warriors of Drifting Cloud were crying in fear.

Chapter 996: Send Them Off!

After the screams arose, many passengers on the battleship became anxious. They wanted to know what was going on.

Usually, it was easy to meet other battleships traveling in the galaxy. Unless they encountered enemies, they didn't fight. However, landing on someone else's battleship wasn't okay without permission.

Leonard stood on the control tower of the battleship, his face cold and stern. Hearing the noise, he couldn't help but look. After the first glance, he was shaken. He descended from the tower and shouted, "We're from the Drifting Cloud. Why are you getting on our ship? Don't you know the rules?"

More than ten King God Realm and Original God Realm warriors emerged from different areas of the battleship. They stood by Leonard with grimaced faces.

Shi Yan, Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo landed on the deck, walking towards Zuo Shi's general direction without batting an eye at anyone else. Seeing Leonard and his guards standing in their way, Shi Yan frowned, but he didn't bother giving them a look. He just kept sauntering forward.

One guard of Leonard made a step forward and tried to stop them with a pale face.

Ka Tuo's eyes rolled around as he laughed evilly. A flow of chaotic energy twisted, giving him an intimidating suction force, which then drew that guard towards him despite how hard the guard was struggling.

"Get lost!"

Ka Tuo laughed, releasing his power. His energy rippled like a rolling tide, which sent the guard horizontally several hundred meters away. He was blown from this end of the battleship to the

other end. His body had a lot of deep cuts as if he was whipped with thorny bushes.

Leonard changed his countenance, looking at Ka Tuo with fear. He glared at Fei Lan and Leona, his face becoming more solemn.

Shi Yan didn't bat an eye. He continued walking towards his target. Warriors of Drifting Cloud and the passengers made way seeing him coming. They were all frightened.

"What happened? Fighting?" Xuan Ming's stooped body straightened, his spirit raising. "If Drifting Cloud gets into some trouble, they won't have spare time to mind us. We don't need to jump off the battleship now. Let's see the situation then."

Innocent Zuo Shi nodded. She quietly looked at the general direction where the noise arose.

Shortly after, her clear eyes brightened. Her soft body got stiff. Her succulent lips parted as if she saw something unbelievable. She instinctively gasped for her breath.

Zuo Shi was dumbstruck for seconds. She used both hands to rub her eyes and then shouted. "Shi Yan ge-ge!"

Xuan Ming's body stiffened. He was shocked and couldn't help but look at the oncoming warriors. His line of sight fixed on that warrior as he was cheered up.

Shi Yan's keen eyes scanned the crowd and directly caught the beautifully tall figure. His dark face cracked a warm smile. "It's you, indeed."

Zuo Shi nodded excitedly. "Yeah, yeah! It's us! Shi Yan ge-ge, you... Why are you in Agate Star Area? Why are you here?" She was so happy that she couldn't find her words. "Where are my father and grandfather? Are they... Are they all right? How are they in Grace Mainland? Is everything okay?"

"They're all in Agate Star Area." Shi Yan sighed and chuckled. While talking, he reached for Zuo Shi.

Xuan Ming looked at Shi Yan deep in the eye. The shock he felt was indescribable. As he met this man in Agate Star Area, he didn't know what to say.

He knew things this young man had done in the Perpetual Night Forest. Shi Yan had gathered different clans to resist the Ghost Mark Clan, Corpse Clan, and Dark Spirit Clan. He wanted to use the force of Monster Clan too. Xuan Ming had observed that battle discreetly. He saw the Utmost Eight Purgatory City in the Perpetual Night Forest get to its height. They had expelled Ghost Mark Clan, Corpse Clan, and Dark Spirit Clan out of Perpetual Night Forest. Shi Yan had protected his people.

It has been so long since they last met. Xuan Ming released his Soul Consciousness to sense the young man. Chaotic moods reflected in his mind that he couldn't calm them down no matter what.

... I can't figure out his realm. His realm is higher than mine???

Xuan Ming was bewildered. His eyes sparkled as his mind was startled. He was startled and he stayed put at his spot.

"Who are you?" Leonard's voice arose. He brought the guards of Drifting Cloud gathering by Shi Yan. His voice was gingerly. "We're the Drifting Cloud from the Southwest. We don't have any grudge against you guys. Why are you on our battleship?"

Seeing him, Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming were so indignant that they couldn't hide it. Zuo Shi glared at Leonard maliciously.

She didn't know why but she felt so safe when she saw Shi Yan. However, she didn't know Shi Yan's realm so she was still worried. She lowered her voice, talking to Shi Yan. "Drifting Cloud is a strong force in the Southwest. The leader has Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. Shi Yan ge-ge, can you... can you take us out of here?" Her voice was uncertain.

Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming had to struggle a lot in Agate Star Area.

They had walked each step with difficulty and danger. After so many years, they had known many intimidating warriors. In their minds, Drifting Cloud was already a dominant force.

Zuo Shi didn't want Shi Yan to have any dispute with Drifting Cloud. She just wanted to get rid of this battleship. In her view, not being harmed by Drifting Cloud was already a perfect ending.

"Drifting Cloud?" Shi Yan shook his head, "Never heard of them before. Is it a small and weak force?"

Zuo Shi was surprised, jabbering. "Very strong!"

Shi Yan just chuckled. He asked, "You've quarreled with them. What happened?"

"Sir, if you have a good relationship with them, I won't calculate their debts anymore. I will let them go to Shadow Ghostly Prison with us." Leonard felt tense and he hurriedly expressed his opinion.

"Who made you talk? Shut up!" Ka Tuo glowered at him, snorting with a ferocious aura. A murderous aura rose from his body.

Leonard paled. His lips trembled, but he didn't talk.

Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming were surprised. Looking at Shi Yan, they thought that they were dreaming.

During this trip, Leonard was the wanton little boss here. No one dared to quarrel with him on this ship or even talk loudly.

Leonard was the master of this battleship. He could even control people's lives. He could make up anything to trouble the passengers.

However, he shut his mouth in front of that brutal man. What was going on?

Zuo Shi had so many questions in her mind. She looked at Ka Tuo anxiously.

"They troubled us on purpose... They want Zuo Shi to escort

him..." Xuan Ming contemplated and then explained their situation. The more he talked, the darker and colder his face became. "He has just told us that he would throw us off the battleship if we didn't let Zuo Shi serve him."

While Xuan Ming was talking, Shi Yan's dark face raked through Leonard. Under his gaze, Leonard was anxiously restless. He felt that something terrible would happen shortly.

Leonard took a deep breath, giving him more guts. He said coldly. "I'm a member of Drifting Cloud!"

"Told you I don't know names of small forces." Shi Yan waved his hand, talking. "All right, that's it. Send them off!"

Leonard and the other warriors of Drifting Cloud were baffled.

The other passengers were shocked. They couldn't react to what Shi Yan said. They didn't know what he meant.

However, in the next moment, they knew what he meant.

The painful, mournful screeching echoed in this quiet battleship.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo seemed to turn into demons. With dark and harsh countenances, they moved between the warriors of Drifting Cloud like lightning. Drifting Cloud's warriors screamed in fear, trying to run for their lives as if they were encountering spooky ghosts.

Blood splashed. People were ripped apart. Their soul altars were burned down. They perished, leaving nothing behind.

Leonard, the small boss of Drifting Cloud who had swaggered wantonly during this trip, was in the hand of an old woman. She placed one of her hands on his head. Leonard's God Body rotted at a speed that naked eyes could observe like someone had dipped him into the dense acid substance. Shortly after, he turned into a blood puddle on the ground.

They could even see the terrible footage of Leonard's skull

melting down bit by bit. It was so nauseating that they almost vomited.

The woman who looked like a wailing ghost was like a Messenger of Death. She pulled the Drifting Cloud's warrior into absolute darkness. People could only hear the warriors begging in the dark. Gradually, the noise faded.

The brutal man laughed fiendishly. He grabbed Drifting Cloud's warriors as if he was picking up small chickens. He just ripped them apart deliberately and brutally. The others couldn't help but shiver. Their legs became soft and couldn't support their bodies anymore.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo were like hungry wolves moving through a sheep pasture. They had risen the blood shower in this battleship.

Warriors of Drifting Cloud had the symbol of their force on their clothes. They could recognize them at first glance. They ground Drifting Cloud warriors, killing every one of them in their sight. It seemed like they didn't want to leave any live witness.

Xuan Ming and Zuo Shi were petrified, standing by Shi Yan. They looked at the bloody massacre on the battleship, watching the muscular Drifting Cloud warriors being killed like they were tiny ants being smashed. The two of them were panic-stricken.

Are they... the powerful King God Realm and Original God Realm guards of Drifting Cloud?

The two of them were terrified.

Shortly after, around one hundred warriors of Drifting Cloud in this battleship were slaughtered. They were now bones or blood puddles on the ground here and there.

Shi Yan squinted. He felt a little joy as he absorbed the Essence Qi from the dead. He smiled relaxedly.

Xuan Ming and Zuo Shi were still sinking in their terrible fright.

They couldn't react.

Ka Tuo laughed, walking towards them. He had killed a lot and he was stirred up now. His fierce eyes raked through the group of passengers who shivered as if they had fallen into an ice chamber. They didn't dare to move an inch of their bodies.

"Senior, do you want to clear them all? Those people can benefit us a bit, anyway." Ka Tuo lowered his voice and suggested.

Ka Tuo liked killing. As he knew Shi Yan's marvelous absorption ability, he had another thought. He wanted to kill all the low-realm warriors on this battleship to advance his power.

Fei Lan and Leona also looked at Shi Yan with asking eyes.

Ka Tuo had muttered so others people besides SK, Zuo Shi, and Xuan Ming couldn't hear him. However, as the others saw his malicious eyes, none of them felt well.

Shi Yan frowned, looking at the shivering warriors of different races. He said faintly, "Kill them all."

Shi Yan nodded continually. Another ferocious aura was shot out.

Zuo Shi paled. She couldn't help but shout, "Shi Yan ge-ge, don't! Don't kill them. They... they didn't bully me. I'm begging you. Don't let them kill more."

Zuo Shi's screeching made the other passengers so frightened. People screamed and cried pathetically.

Shi Yan frowned, pondering for a while. He waved his hand. "All right, let's go."

Ka Tuo was disappointed. He sighed, speaking to Fei Lan and Leona. "Oh... that's too bad..."

Fei Lan and Leona were indifferent.

"Zuo Shi, Xuan Ming, come with me." Shi Yan nodded to the other two and brought them flying out of the battleship moving to

a dark area of the galaxy.

Chapter 997: Inexplicable Shock

Xuan Ming and Zuo Shi followed Shi Yan flying in the dark universe.

Xuan Ming looked at the refined body in front of him, his eyes complicated. He had a regret that he couldn't hide in his face.

He had always remembered this young man. He was the most outstanding talent of Human Clan in Grace Mainland. He used to raise a storm, cooperating with Monster Clan in Perpetual Night Forest to resist other clans. He won in the end.

At that moment, this young man had only True God Realm cultivation base. During the great war that happened in Perpetual Night Forest, Yan Long and the Monster clansmen had asked Xuan Ming if he wanted to join this operation.

However, Xuan Ming had always cared for Zuo Shi. He wanted to deny it but he couldn't shake Zuo Shi's persistent will. In the end, he allowed the Monster Clan to join that epic battle.

In that year, Xuan Ming was the peak warrior of Grace Mainland, the leader of the Monster Clan in Perpetual Night Forest. He was the decision-maker of his clan.

In that year, this young man had shown his talent and lead his team to victory. He had helped his people settle in Perpetual Night Forest.

In that year, this young man wasn't bad in Xuan Ming's eyes. But he was just... wasn't bad. Xuan Ming didn't put him in his mind. He helped him because of Zuo Shi.

Times flew. Things change. Meeting up today in Agate Star Area, this young man had the realm and powers that he couldn't see through. He also has three bloodthirsty warriors accompanying him. They smashed Drifting Cloud's warriors, the ones that Xuan Ming couldn't even have the thought of resisting against! The

young man's team had crushed them all.

It hasn't been one hundred years yet and this man in Agate Star Area has reached such high level!

Xuan Ming had an inexplicable shock. Looking at the young man in front of him, Xuan Ming felt like he had made a wrong presumption that year. A big mistake, indeed.

The young man had surpassed him and was heading to the marvelous heights that he could never imagine. Not only did he settle down in Agate Star Area, he also seemed to have a better life here.

Xuan Ming felt bitter. He sighed reluctantly. He knew some people were born to be fighters. Such types of people were never able to be predicted.

"Shi Yan ge-ge, you... you killed Leonard of Drifting Cloud. Aren't you afraid?" Zuo Shi asked as she was frightened. After that shocking scene, she had immeasurable respect towards Shi Yan. Her voice wasn't as smooth as it used to be.

In her mind, Drifting Cloud was an intimidatingly powerful force with many warriors and a Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm warrior. They were famous in the Southwest. She thought that they were a force that she could never resist.

However, Shi Yan's warriors were like brutal Gods that had slaughtered the others. Zuo Shi was happy at that moment, but now she somehow felt anxiously insecure. She was afraid that Shi Yan had provoked great trouble and that the Drifting Cloud would chase after him to kill him.

"It's okay. Let alone Leonard, if the Master of Drifting Cloud were on the ship... he would be killed too." Shi Yan snickered, his aura surging torrentially.

Almost one hundred warriors were massacred. Most of them were at King God Realm and Original God Realm. While their

Essence Qi was being filtered through his acupuncture points, Shi Yan had a premonition! After he had digested this energy, he would inevitably break to another level and easily reach Third Sky of Original God Realm!

His realm was secure and strengthened. Now, he just needed sufficient energy to break through. The previous slaughter was enough for him to transform his energy!

"Are you sure? Everything will be alright?" Zuo Shi asked carefully.

Shi Yan smiled, shaking his head and talking firmly. "Don't worry. From now on, you don't need to struggle to survive anymore."

Zuo Shi's eyes brightened. She clenched her small fists. Her innocent face now had a new, different lively aura.

Xuan Ming was suddenly baffled. He looked ahead of them and his face changed as he couldn't help but shout, "Battleship! It's so huge!"

Zuo Shi saw that and screamed in astonishment, "What an amazing battleship!"

In front of them was the anchored battleship of Potion and Tool Pavilion. It was several thousand meters long and hovered like a dormant, ancient beast. In this dark space, it gave people an imposing feeling.

Drifting Cloud's battleship was just a toy compared to this one. It was ten times smaller. Although Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming weren't experts in this field, they knew that the battleship in front of them was of the top-quality battleships in Agate Star Area. Drifting Cloud's battleship was nothing compared to this one.

Of course, their values were much different.

Xuan Ming was anxious, watching here and there. He looked at Shi Yan's team who was quite calm. He suddenly understood and

asked, "What's that battleship doing here?"

"Waiting for us," Shi Yan chuckled.

Xuan Ming and Zuo Shi were so surprised. They looked at that battleship with fear, their eyes so strange.

Fu Wei of Potion and Tool Pavilion was wearing a long blue dress, standing on the deck of the battleship. She looked like an elegant and gorgeous blue flower. She beamed a smile, waving at them and urging, "Hurry up!"

Xuan Ming and Zuo Shi looked at Fu Wei of Potion and Tool Pavilion and the flag on the ship. They suddenly recalled the force that they had heard in their legends.

"Potion... Potion and Tool Pavilion! Are they people of Potion and Tool Pavilion?" Xuan Ming's voice trembled worriedly.

Potion and Tool Pavilion was really famous in Agate Star Area. Its name was even more well-known than intimidating forces everywhere. It was the most mysterious and unpredictable force. Compared to Potion and Tool Pavilion, Drifting Cloud wasn't worth holding its shoes or having its voice matter. Basically, they weren't on the same level.

Xuan Ming knew that the strong forces in the Southwest considered doing business with Potion and Tool Pavilion for their glory. The Southwest was a remote area anyway. Every time the battleship of Potion and Tool Pavilion arrived, masters of the strongest forces there would sway through the crowd in order to get approval from Potion and Tool Pavilion.

In Xuan Ming's heart, Potion and Tool Pavilion was one of the most influential forces in Agate Star Area. It was a force that they could only look at and not be able to touch. This organization was the most terrifying existence in legend they had never seen before.

However, the battleship of Potion and Tool Pavilion anchored here to wait for Shi Yan's team today. What kind of level has he

reached?!?

Xuan Ming didn't dare to imagine further.

While Xuan Ming and Zuo Shi were perplexed, layers of barriers of the battleship opened, making a channel for them to land.

At the moment they landed on the deck of the ship, layers of barriers closed again. The aura of this battleship disappeared as if it had vanished in this universe from this moment. Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming became more frightened. Now, they understood how mighty Potion and Tool Pavilion was.

"Shi Yan ge-ge, are you a member of Potion and Tool Pavilion?" Zuo Shi stammered. She became helpless with her limbs.

"No, he isn't." Fu Wei smiled gently. "Our Potion and Tool Pavilion doesn't have such a fortune. He's arrogant. He doesn't like us."

Fu Wei still kept it in her mind. Shi Yan had denied her offer, making her feel lost. She knew Shi Yan had a close relationship with Monster Clan and Demon Clan. He would never join Potion and Tool Pavilion. She was disappointed with this. That was why she teased them.

Xuan Ming and Zuo Shi were bewildered. Looking at Shi Yan at this moment, they found the man to be more mysterious.

"This is the youngest Elder of Potion and Tool Pavilion, Fu Wei." Shi Yan smiled and introduced. "This is my little sister, and old...friend. I hope Miss Fu Wei will take care of her well. I'm going to cultivate for a while. Please help me with this."

"Don't worry, leave it to me." Fu Wei smiled and said.

Shi Yan nodded to Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming who were still baffled. "You guys stay here. Don't worry about anything. After I'm done with my cultivation, I'm going to find you. We'll talk."

Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming nodded instinctively though they were

filled with shock.

Potion and Tool Pavilion had only twelve Elders. Each of them held powers. They were all legendary existences in Agate Star Area. Xuan Ming and Zuo Shi knew this well.

The gentle girl in front of them was one of the Elders of Potion and Tool Pavilion. Also, rumors said that she was the youngest one with the best innate talents. That Young Elder had treated Shi Yan very well and was very friendly... He... What kind of position did he have in this Agate Star Area?

Xuan Ming felt lost and down. Comparing his helter-skelter situation to Shi Yan's, a bitter feeling flooded his heart that he couldn't drive it away.

Shi Yan and Fei Lan's group left immediately, heading into the battleship.

Fu Wei smiled tenderly. She came and held Zuo Shi's hand. "What a cute little sister. Come with me. I'm going to give you something nice."

She nodded to An Yun, asking, "Treat this venerable gentleman well."

Xuan Ming was surprised and kept saying thanks. "Oh please, don't be so polite."

Xuan Ming felt like a dream staying in this huge battleship guarded by the Elder of Potion and Tool Pavilion. He felt as if he was walking on thin ice. He couldn't adapt to this environment just like an old countryman entering a royal palace. No matter what he tried, he felt so uncomfortable.

"Sir, come with me. I'm going to show you your place and the cultivating room." An Yun bent her body slightly although she disdained him. For what Shi Yan had supported her party, she appreciated him much. He had given her weak party a chance to overturn everything.

As they had to give Shi Yan's face, she was hospitable to Xuan Ming. With a faint smile, she led Xuan Ming to the battleship.

Fu Wei directly took Zuo Shi to her private room. She smiled and then asked, "Are you close to Shi Yan?"

"Oh yes. We were born in the same city. I've known him since I was a little girl." Zuo Shi also felt the pressure. She admired and respected this tender woman. "Does he live well in Agate Star Area?"

"Him? Of course, he's good. The Chiefs of Monster Clan and Demon Clan favor him. He doesn't have anything to be afraid of in this star area. He will be the new star of Agate Star Area." Fu Wei smiled, "Tell me something about him. I'm curious."

"He... He was also powerful in our place. He has always been powerful."

Zuo Shi was anxious, telling the other Shi Yan's stories.

Zuo Shi was naive. She didn't know that Fu Wei just wanted to pry her. She was tense. However, Fu Wei tried to guide her and help her relax. She started to talk and she couldn't stop. Her voice was like the birds singing. When she came to the fun facts, she laughed and giggled cheerfully.

Fu Wei listened to her attentively. Sometimes, she would say something to make the atmosphere better. She made Zuo Shi feel more relaxed.

Fu Wei didn't know Shi Yan's real identity. Potion and Tool Pavilion didn't have any record about him, either. As she finally had a chance, she knew how to seize it. She hated that she couldn't ask to identify at least eighteen generations of his family.

As Zuo Shi was telling her his stories, Fu Wei became more interested. She smiled like warm sunlight. Her maiden heart sent out vibes.

Chapter 998: The Third Sky of Original God Realm!

Inside the battleship.

Shi Yan's acupuncture points in his body sparkled like diamonds. Bright beams of light were emitted dazzlingly. His aura was sharp like a sword while he was sitting cross-legged.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo surrounded him in a triangle formation. They looked at him, yearning.

Time flew quickly. Energy fluctuations on Shi Yan's body surged fiercely. Pure energy overflowed from his acupuncture points, seeping towards his bones and Essence Qi Ancient Tree. His energy surged unceasingly, making his aura more intimidating.

After a while, Shi Yan's aura gradually calmed down. The light from his acupuncture points dimmed and vanished.

Sitting quietly for a while, he opened his eyes, chuckling. "You guys don't have a chance to gather more energy this time."

Fei Lan and the other two were bewildered and then nodded silently.

Shi Yan got up, stretching his body. Joints in his body moved, producing clear and pleasant sounds like pearls colliding. "Third Sky of Original God Realm." Shi Yan smiled.

This time, his breakthrough was as smooth as a stream joining the river. His Essence Qi Ancient Tree grew and his Sea of Consciousness extended. Everything went smooth and logically. He reached the new realm easily, which was the magical result of achieving the realm earlier.

However, the deaths of one hundred warriors of Drifting Cloud were just enough for Shi Yan to break through to Third Sky of Original God Realm. He didn't refine extra energy to send to Fei

Lan and the other two.

Most of the dead warriors were at King God Realm and some of them were at Original God Realm. Since their realms weren't high, the energy refined was limited. He got just enough to reach the new level.

"Senior, it's good that you can breakthrough. We aren't hurried. When we get to Shadow Ghostly Prison, we will have a lot of chances," Ka Tuo forced a smile.

Fei Lan and Leona nodded.

Shi Yan smiled and didn't say more. He got out of the cultivating room, telling the guard standing by his door that he wanted to meet Fu Wei.

The guard led his way. Shortly after, Shi Yan arrived in Fu Wei's private room.

The blue arch ceiling of this room was filled with pieces of gemstones, which was a resemblance to the starry sky. It illuminated the room with tender light, giving it an elegant and warm atmosphere.

Zuo Shi closed her eyes, her hands holding a lot of divine crystals. She was absorbing the energy of the divine crystals and the medical efficacy of the marvelous pellets she had eaten. Her face was calm like the water as her God Domain appeared automatically. Water waves rippled around her like the deep sea.

The Black Tortoise was the holy beast of Water Element. As Zuo Shi got the inheritance from its bloodline, she knew Water power Upanishad.

Her God Domain looked like a vast, torrential sea. It appeared quietly like the nature of water. Her aura was also immense and tender, making people relax.

Zuo Shi was cultivating in silence.

Fu Wei was wearing a long blue dress, which exposed her white shoulder. She was drinking and watching Zuo Shi with glistening eyes. She couldn't hide her surprise, indeed.

She had given Zuo Shi a lot of precious pellets and let her cultivate here. After the girl had swallowed the pellets, their medicinal efficacy quickly expanded. Instantaneously, Zuo Shi's realm started to change subtly. Under the Fu Wei's gaze, Zuo Shi began to comprehend Water power Upanishad in a more profound level. She was breaking through to the new realm very fast.

Fu Wei was surprised a lot. She observed carefully. She found that Zuo Shi's realm was increasing steadily. The pellets she had taken were refining her body, merging with her flesh and bones.

Zuo Shi's bloodline seemed to have the essence of Water. It gave her a marvelous feeling, allowing her to increase her realm unlimitedly.

This discovery shocked Fu Wei. Her face became complex.

"Oh, you arrived," Fu Wei pulled herself together, smiling gently. She waved her hand at him, asking him to come closer. She muttered, "This little girl is a prodigy. She seems to not encounter any bottleneck. She... is about to break through shortly. She has almost reached Third Sky of King God Realm. I don't know how she could comprehend her realm so easily like it's just a piece of cake to her. I have never seen anybody increase the realm that fast."

Shi Yan focused on Zuo Shi and nodded inwardly. He explained instinctively, "She's the unique prodigy."

When they were still in the Sky Meteor City, Zuo Shi had already been famous for her gifted talents. This lazy little girl hadn't put an effort in her cultivation, but she still reached high realm. Chi Xiao had accepted her as an apprentice to nurture her talents.

This little girl could comprehend her realm stunningly fast. A

little bit of her effort could be as much as a long time of cultivation to other people. Once she became serious in her cultivation, her progress could be extremely fast.

When Zuo Shi encountered Xuan Ming, the old man knew Zuo Shi had the bloodline of the Holy Beast Black Tortoise. With her unique talent, her future would be unlimited if she focused on her cultivation. In Agate Star Area, she had reached Second Sky of King God Realm under a difficult cultivating condition, which showed how tremendously she was gifted.

With Fu Wei's pellets, she was boosted. Her performance could shock even Fu Wei who had seen a lot of things. It was enough to prove that Zuo Shi was unquestionably a genius that this world had never seen.

"Well, this little girl told me many things about you." Fu Wei's eyes were twinkling. She smiled. "I didn't know you were so famous in Grace Mainland. On that almost abandoned life star, you reached Peak of True God Realm in dozens of years. How did you do that?"

What Zuo Shi had told Fu Wei about Shi Yan had surprised her a lot. If she didn't know that Zuo Shi was naive, she would have thought that the girl was telling lies.

Within dozens of years in a nearly-exhausted life star, a warrior had reached Peak of True God Realm from nothing. In Fu Wei's point of view, such a man was a monster, indeed.

Fu Wei suddenly recognized that it wasn't his good fortune that Shi Yan got the approval from the Leaders of Monster Clan and Demon Clan. He had something she didn't know yet.

"I heard you're amorous." Fu Wei smiled, talking softly. Light rippled from her eyes.

"Nah, don't listen to her." Shi Yan rubbed his nose, feeling a little embarrassed.

He suddenly remembered the woman in the far-away Shadow Ghostly Prison. After so many years, he didn't know how she was doing. He also expected an encounter.

Among so many young beauties, she was the first one who had touched his heart. In that martial yard in the Sky Meteor City where time was paused, he had a deep imprint, which stayed forever in his heart.

After dozens of years, he didn't know if she was still like she used to be.

A dark place shielded by the stars, Agate Star Area.

Six life stars formed a hexagonal formation. However, those six stars weren't still. They moved like six gigantic beasts, slowly heading in a general direction.

One of those life stars had hundreds of herbal fields where dozens of thousands of types of herbs grew. The thick, sweet fragrance of the herbs furred around the place. Mist and steam gathered here year round and never dispersed.

Ten massive cauldrons used to refine pellets stood amid the fields. Those cauldrons were made of different, strange metallic materials. The smoke from those cauldrons was so aromatic that they could even seep into people's internal organs. Taking a deep breath here, the warriors would feel refreshed and comfortable.

A lanky Ghost Mark old man had exquisite drawings and patterns on his arms and face. He wore luxurious clothes and was standing by the cauldrons. Behind him were more than ten warriors at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm. They seemed to be the retinue of that Ghost Mark oldie who was checking the cauldrons.

The old man walked between the cauldrons. Sometimes he nodded, smiling as if he was satisfied. Suddenly, a shadow descended from the sky, kneeling and talking respectfully. "Great

Elder."

Zuo Lou frowned. He had an aquiline nose, the thin lips of a heartless man, and deep eyes. He looked malignant and cunning in general. He waved his hand to let the other stand up, speaking in a gloomy voice. "Got anything?"

"They... They seemed to have found the Canon!" The messenger was also a Ghost Mark warrior at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm who had a little hoarse voice.

The Great Elder of the Potion and Tool Pavilion Zuo Lou's eyes brightened up. He laughed evilly. "Good!" Pausing for a while, he took a deep breath and spoke excitedly. "Assign our men. We must blockade and seize the Canon at any cost! About Little Fu Wei... I don't want to see her again."

"Yes, Sir!" The messenger drew his mouth into a fiendishly malicious curve and nodded.

"Clear everything. Do not leave any trace that would allow others to track us," advised Zuo Lou.

"I understand." The warrior replied and then flew up to the sky. Shortly after, he disappeared.

Many orders were delivered in Potion and Tool Pavilion. They had contacted powerful forces that had a good relationship with them. Many forces in Agate Star Area had sent their battleships discreetly.

"The Canon appears. Muahahaha. Except for me, no one eligible is to have it!" Zuo Lou clasped his hands, looking at the sky and speaking arrogantly.

The control center of the massive battleship.

While Fu Wei was talking to Shi Yan, her countenance changed. She rose a bright mirror over her head and then nodded to Shi

Yan. "Give me a private moment, please."

Shi Yan left the room, his face indifferent.

Fu Wei walked to a secret room behind her chamber. The bright mirror followed her like a ghost. After closing the door, Fu Wei took a deep breath and released an electric beam from her palm. The mirror projected Zha Duo's image, the warrior with Space power of Potion and Tool Pavilion. He looked pale as he was shouting. "Our information is disclosed. Zuo Lou knows you have the Canon. He's going to Shadow Ghostly Prison now. You have to be cautious. Try to protect yourself at any cost. I'm departing. We'll use the Space Teleport Formation to reach you. Before I arrive, you must hold onto the Canon. Do not let them seize it!"

Fu Wei grimaced. Her blue eyes' color faded. She screamed in fright. "How did it happen?"

"Zha Lou has eyes and ears everywhere. His inside men scatter to every corner. He also controls the Satellite Eye. It's not strange that he got the news." Zha Duo sighed reluctantly. "Great Elder has been in the Pavilion for so many years. The forces they control aren't something we can rival. I knew that the information would be disclosed soon. You must be careful. Zuo Lou will do anything to get the Canon. I'm not sure if you can beat him."

"I'm going to Shadow Ghostly Prison faster!" said Fu Wei solemnly.

"Yeah, enter the Shadow Ghostly Prison at your maximum speed. If you see a battleship on the way, avoid it as much as you can." Zha Duo advised her carefully. "Do not cause any trouble. Do not conflict with any force. Once you find that some force is after you, use all your force to slaughter them if you can't dodge. Do not show mercy!"

"I know what to do," Fu Wei nodded earnestly.

"Try your best to resist. We'll arrive soon. But before we arrive,

you have to protect yourself!"

"Understood."

Chapter 999: Crisis – Opportunity!

In the immensely vast galaxy, a battleship was moving at breakneck speed like lightning.

In a secret room inside the battleship, Shi Yan was sitting neatly. There were some new books placed by him. All were related to the abilities of space power.

He read each book. Sometimes he shook his head and sighed. Once he determined that a book was useless to him, it was burned down immediately.

The books of Space power Upanishad that Fu Wei had copied for him were from the original hand-written books by the warrior who cultivated Space power Upanishad in Potion and Tool Pavilion. These books were his personal experiences. However, the owner of those writings didn't have a profound realm because Shi Yan had already known the secrets he jotted down in his books.

Shi Yan's understanding of Space power Upanishad was much deeper than most of the information that the writers of these books had. In Shi Yan's eyes, those records were shallow and useless to him.

Shortly after, he had only one copy in his hand. Shi Yan squinted and read earnestly. From time to time, he read something that he needed to analyze and comprehend. His brows slowly furrowed.

The writer of these documents had a unique approach and stress on space nodes.

In his explanation, he assumed that space could become a globe with a lot of spider webs and the intersections of the spider webs were space nodes. Space lines were used to connect different space nodes. Warriors who cultivated Space power Upanishad could use space nodes to teleport.

The space nodes were extremely unstable. Some could even lead

to the chaotic space basin. However, most of the space nodes were stable enough that they could use Space power Upanishad to get through them.

There were as many space nodes inside the globe were as blinking stars in the sky. Ordinary people would never know or be able to touch them.

Only warriors cultivating Space power Upanishad at a specific realm could use the souls to recognize the nodes. According to the writer, marvelous space energy fluctuations were inside the space nodes. Once the soul vibe of the warriors cultivating space power resonated with the energy fluctuations in one space node, they could run directly into that space node and instantly teleport.

Since Shi Yan had reached Third Sky of Original God Realm, his understanding of Space power Upanishad in that magnificent, unknown space became deeper.

He knew every space had space nodes. However, it was hard to detect them. After reading that document, Shi Yan recognized that if he could use his soul to touch the space nodes, he could have an exit regardless of where he was.

With this thought in his mind, Shi Yan released his Soul Consciousness.

Wisps of Soul Consciousness added with Space energy moved like arrows that shot out of a bow. They scattered from him and entered the vast universe to find the space nodes.

While he didn't recognize the passing time, his soul became bright and empty. A flow of his Soul Consciousness suddenly felt some energy fluctuations of the magical space energy, which were very fierce.

His squinted eyes brightened.

Taking a deep breath, his Soul Consciousness moved around, dedicatedly sensing the changes of space energy. Then, he adjusted

himself and made his calm Sea of Consciousness seethe violently. He was trying to create the waves to resonate with the energy fluctuations over there.

However, the energy in that area was so turbulent. It wasn't easy for his Sea of Consciousness to create the resonance.

This was especially because Shi Yan had just touched the threshold. It was the first time he had ever comprehended this subtlety.

Understanding the resonance of energy fluctuations was a slow and lengthy process. Shi Yan wasn't hurried. It was too dull in this battleship. He'd better study his power Upanishad then.

Time flew hurriedly.

Today, Shi Yan was still immersed in space energy resonance. His Sea of Consciousness surged as if it was about to explore.

All of a sudden, a flow of his Soul Consciousness, which had elongated to an unknown area, reported to Shi Yan with a panic feeling. Right after that, he saw many shark-like battleships as black as ink moving fast in a direction.

A fear reflected in his head. Shi Yan stopped his space energy resonating work to check the wisp of Soul Consciousness that had reported the black shark battleships.

There were dozens of them. They were around one thousand to three thousand meters long. It was obvious that they belonged to one force. They were moving in a neat formation. Some dark clouds covered the battleships, preventing people from looking at the interior. Each battleship had a fiercely torrential energy with a ferocious aura.

Navigating, Shi Yan shuddered. He immediately retreated his Soul Consciousness.

Staying inside the battleship, Shi Yan's face became more solemn. He shot up from his seat, walking out of his room.

Fei Lan and the other two were cultivating in their private rooms so they didn't know about Shi Yan's commotion or his discovery.

"Sir, where do you want to go?" asked a guard standing in front of his door with respect.

"I want to meet your Elder Fu Wei. Please notify her immediately!" Shi Yan was cold and stern. He looked a bit hurried.

The guard nodded and told him, "Follow me."

Shortly after, Shi Yan walked to the control center of the battleship with his guide. Fu Wei, An Yun, and Feng An, the three leaders of Potion and Tool Pavilion were there. They were discussing something. Seeing him, they stopped immediately.

The guard left the room. Shi Yan took a deep breath and then said, "A fleet of battleships is heading fast towards us. They're moving really fast. I estimate that they will reach us in four hours. There are dozens of them. They come with murderous auras... Seems like they don't have good intentions toward us."

Fu Wei discolored in fright. She jolted from her seat, her soft body shivering. "Which direction? What kind of battleships are they? What's the situation?"

An Yun and Feng An grimaced. They clenched their jaws, their face malicious. "Young Elder! It's them!" said An Yun.

Fu Wei nodded, raising her small hand to stop the woman. Her eyes gazed at Shi Yan.

She knew warriors who cultivate space power could reach a very long distance with their Soul Consciousness. Although it couldn't cover a large area, one fine beam of Soul Consciousness could reach much further than what the others could reach.

"Those battleships are black like ink. They look like sharks. There are dozens of them. They have many symbols. Most of them are black and blue. A few are purple." Shi Yan recalled and described what his Soul Consciousness had seen.

"Blue and black shark battleships of the Ghost Mark Clan!" An Yun took a cold breath, her face grim. "Those shark battleships are manufactured by the force under Great Elder's party. Great Elder used to be a member of the Ghost Mark Clan. Those blue and black shark battleships belong to the Mad Shark Fleet of the Chief of Ghost Mark Clan! Yeah, it can't be wrong. They are heading towards us!"

Fu Wei put on a cold face and nodded. Then, she didn't talk but started to release magnificent light beams towards the corners of the control center.

Boom! Boom!

Ear-splitting explosions blasted from the bottom of the battleship, which changed its direction immediately. Energy from countless divine crystals was drawn from this deviation. The battleship moved like lightning from outer space, heading fast in the new direction.

After it was done, Fu Wei wiped the sweat on her forehead. She looked a little tired, trying to smile at Shi Yan. She said softly, "This time, I have to thank you."

"What happened?" Shi Yan frowned.

"The Canon's whereabouts are disclosed," Fu Wei sighed weakly. "Great Elder's party wants to seize the Canon. He has urged the forces to cooperate with him. They will kill us and take the Canon. They don't want our party to keep it."

Shi Yan was surprised, but he just nodded nonchalantly. "You guys can endure it or not?"

"Who knows?" Fu Wei whispered in dismay. She pondered for a while and then said to Shi Yan, "I thought we could deliver you guys smoothly to Shadow Ghostly Prison. But now there is an issue. Hmm, going with us isn't a good idea for you guys. Okay, so..."

Fu Wei looked at An Yun, asking, "Aunt An, you choose the best war chariot and send them off."

An Yun bent her body to greet and left.

"Hold on," Shi Yan waved his hand to stop them. He asked coldly, "Will you fight against them? If you encounter them, will you do your best to defend and destroy the enemies?"

"Of course," Fu Wei's eyes were cold. Her brows showed her murderous aura. "They come this time to wipe us out in a single operation. Of course, we will resist with our best efforts. We will not show mercy."

Shi Yan smiled coldly. "Good. I'll stay to fight with you guys."

Fu Wei, An Yun, and Feng An were surprised. They looked at him with odd faces.

"No, it has nothing to do with you. You just find trouble for yourself staying with us. We're not sure if we can defeat them or not. Why do you need to take risks with us?" Fu Wei's blue eyes rippled strangely. She felt something touching her heart. She said tenderly, "There are many Mad Shark Battleships of the Ghost Mark Clan. I'm not sure if I can deal with them. Do you really want to stand on the same side with us and fight against them?"

"Oh yeah," Shi Yan grinned. He didn't say more. He turned around and left the control center.

He wanted to go to Shadow Ghostly Prison even though he knew that the place was madly chaotic. He knew the place where warriors died continually was the best place for him. It was the key for him to transform. This time, it was going to be a rare chance. He didn't want to let it go.

Fu Wei and the other two didn't know what he was thinking. After he had left, they looked at each other in astonishment.

"This man... he does employ the code of brotherhood." An Yun was baffled for a while. "It's worth your feelings for him. In

danger, he doesn't run away to protect himself. He wants to stay with us! Such a good man!"

Feng An nodded. "I didn't expect him to be that way. I misunderstood him before. I thought he was a type of greedy men. I had never thought that he would help us in a time of danger."

Fu Wei thinned her lips. She smiled tenderly and then said, "I didn't expect that, either. He chose to stay."

"Time to feast, guys."

Inside the battleship, Shi Yan woke up Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo. He grinned, "Previously, we didn't harvest enough energy. This time, I will feed you until you're full."

Fei Lan and the others' eyes brightened, their faces expecting a good harvest.

Chapter 1000: A Former Pursuer

The observation platform of a black shark battleship.

Du Lin wore blue combat clothes with gold plated hems. He looked handsome with blue tattoos on his face. The corner of his mouth always held a tender smile.

Two enchanting and charming sisters were leaning close to him. They were holding a glass of wine and a tray of fruits, serving him with smiles.

Du Lin was the most prominent young talent of the new generation of Ghost Mark Clan. He had Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm cultivation base. This young man was a genius and a potential candidate for the Chief position of the Ghost Mark Clan. He was born in the most influential family of Ghost Mark Clan, the one with the tough, placid minds. Du Lin managed the Mad Shark Fleet, which consisted of forty-nine battleships. This force was the mightiest force of the Ghost Mark Clan.

Du Lin smiled tenderly, sitting on the stone platform imposingly. The two beauties served him, making him comfortable while he looked at the immense galaxy with his dark, deep eyes.

"Fu Wei. . ."

Du Lin chuckled as his eyes became hot. He extended his arms, hugging the two ladies and enjoying their sexy bodies.

Under the stone platform, the Ghost Mark Clan's soldiers were stooping. They didn't dare to look at Du Lin on the high platform. Their faces showed their admiration and respect for their commander.

Swoosh!

A shadow glided from inside the battle. He kneeled down before Du Lin. "Young Master, Fu Wei's battleship changed its direction. They now have sped up twice."

Mad Shark Fleet was built by Du Lin's family. All the soldiers addressed him as Young Master. Du Lin's family was the most potent force of the Ghost Mark Clan. To boost Du Lin and give him the most powerful influence, his family had spent a lot of materials to build him Mad Shark battleships with the hope that he could set his foot on the glorious Chief position of the clan.

"They changed the route?" Du Lin squinted while his big hands were still lingering on the beauties' waist and rear. He thought for a while and then burst out laughing. "Seems like she knows we're here."

"What should we do now?" The other kneeled and lifted his head to look at Du Lin.

"Scatter the Mad Sharks and circle them. As long as we can beat their speed, they will be surrounded by our frenzy of sharks. Then, they will never get out." Du Lin waved his hand, talking indifferently. "Although her battleship is a good one, she has only one. She can't resist us."

"I got it, Sir!" the man left.

"Arrogant Fu Wei... Let see how you deal with me this time..."

Du Lin enjoyed drinking and playing with the two beautiful sisters. He looked tender when he embraced a girl, whispering to her. "You should belong to me... It's time to put my belle into my gold palace..."

The two girls smiled servilely and charmingly, hugging him tightly. They wanted to win him over.

On the deck of the massive battleship, Fu Wei and An Yun stood silently.

They were observing their surroundings. Their Soul Consciousness rippled like water waves. They could sense any commotion around.

Warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion scattered in each corner of the deck. They were all stern, watching everywhere cautiously.

"The commander of those Mad Shark battleships is Du Lin..."

An Yun kept silent for a while. Suddenly, she looked at Fu Wei. She spoke with a face strange, "Du Lin... used to pursue you crazily..."

Fu Wei set her line of sight to the place afar, frowning.

She also had a deep impression of Du Lin.

He was the prominent and good-looking talent of the new generation of the Kroc family. He had an amazing innate endowment which was proven when he reached Peak of Ethereal God Realm in just a short time. He was so tender and handsome. However, what made him special was that he was crazy about Fu Wei.

The Kroc family was the oldest and strongest family in the Ghost Mark Clan. They could compare to the Feng Du family, the family of the current Ghost Mark Clan's Chief. The former Head of the Krocs had made a mistake while breaking from Ethereal God Realm to Incipient God Realm. He couldn't make any progress. That was why he couldn't beat the Feng Du family to become the next Chief of Ghost Mark Clan.

Anyway, a thin camel is still bigger than a horse. The Kroc family was still the strongest force of the Ghost Mark Clan. Du Lin of the current generation was the powerful character of the Krocs. He shouldered the hope of the entire family.

Zuo Lou, Great Elder of Potion and Tool Pavilion, was also one of the Krocs of the Ghost Mark Clan. However, a former precursor of Potion and Tool Pavilion had made him his apprentice and separated him from the Ghost Mark Clan when he was young.

Zuo Lou had always been concerned about the Kroc family of the Ghost Mark Clan. After he had known about Du Lin, he had

discreetly sent his staff to gift him a lot of precious cultivating materials. The fact that Du Lin could break through so quickly was closely related to Zuo Lou's sufficient support.

When Fu Wei's teacher had passed away, Zuo Lou tried to recruit her for his team. He had arranged Du Lin with Potion and Tool Pavilion and set up plans for him to pursue her.

Zuo Lou hoped Du Lin could marry her so she could assist Zuo Lou. Previously, Du Lin had spent a lot of his efforts to win her heart. However, due to the different parties they had followed, she didn't want to go on the same path as Zuo Lou. Eventually, she denied him resolutely.

Du Lin was a bright gentleman. He always got the girls he wanted in the Ghost Mark Clan and Agate Star Area. However, after Fu Wei had rejected him, he changed. He was depressed for a while. After he got the shadow out of his heart, he became uncontrollable in his personal relationships.

"Du Lin..."

Fu Wei recalled the man, sighing weakly.

"Du Lin is at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm. He has forty-nine Mad Shark battleships. If they scatter and circle us, we won't be able to get rid of that trap," said An Yun seriously.

Fu Wei contemplated for a while and then ordered, "Once we find the battleships of the Mad Shark Sleet, we will smash them down if they stand in our way at any cost!"

"Once we attack them, we'll break the rules. Young Elder, are you sure?" An Yun was surprised.

"Du Lin is from the same clan as Great Elder. Naturally, he will protect the Great Elder's benefits. We know this since Great Elder has sent him here." Fu Wei forced a smile. "Unless I give them the Canon and marry Du Lin, they will never let us go. As we've come to this, we can't return. We must be resolute!"

An Yun nodded, "I understand."

While inside the cultivating room, Shi Yan listened to Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming's stories as they had to struggle a lot to survive. Occasionally, he sighed.

Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming didn't have his luck. After they had arrived in Agate Star Area, they used to work as miners or slaves on herbal farms. For the divine crystals, they had to eat bitter fruits and bear the humiliation.

The peak characters in Grace Mainland were just low people in high-grade star areas. Glory and powers in the past weren't worth mentioning here. They had to start everything from the beginning. To many people, this was really cruel.

Today, Xuan Ming had reached level 12 in Monster's cultivating ranking. Zuo Shi had reached Peak of King God Realm thanks to Fu Wei's pellets. She had surpassed Xuan Ming. It reflected the fact that Zuo Shi was a real prodigy.

"Shi Yan ge-ge, how about you? How have you been? Have you experienced the same things? Did you have to struggle a lot to survive?" Zuo Shi eyed him and asked in a low tone.

Xuan Ming also looked at him, his face curious.

"Me?" Shi Yan smiled miserably. "Yeah, at first, my situation was even worse than yours. I used to be a human cauldron. If my body hasn't been special, I would have been dead

He remembered the painful past when he had just arrived in Raging Flame Star Area. Today, he recalled the utmost bitter moments when he thought about it. If Zi Yao hadn't brought him to Dark Firmament Heaven Nation, the alchemist of Underworld League would have soon killed him. Warriors from the low-grade star area entering the high-grade star area did have old, struggle-filled stories to tell. He wasn't an exception.

However, he had survived even though it was a bit reluctant. He had struggled through Raging Flame Star Area like a fish in troubled waters. After he had come to Agate Star Area, he also had tough times. Anyway, he still stood firm.

"You've taken troubles," said Zuo Shi.

Shi Yan smiled at her. "Your father and other fellows are living well now. Don't worry about them. They're safe and they have a secure source of cultivating materials. After we are done with things here, I'll take care of you. You don't need to worry about stuff anymore."

"I knew you were the best." Zuo Shi's eyes were like the crescent moon. Her smile was innocent and cute. "I thought we would never meet again. It's good to see you, ge-ge."

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo sat in three different corners of the cultivating room, squinting as if they were half-conscious.

"The battle will start soon," Shi Yan got up, retreating his elongated Soul Consciousness. He told Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming, "You guys stay here and don't act rashly. You can't join this level of battle. Just stay here and cultivate."

"Isn't it a battleship of Potion and Tool Pavilion?" Xuan Ming was perplexed. "Is there any force that dares to attack Potion and Tool Pavilion?"

"There's no absolute in everything," Shi Yan chuckled. He didn't explain in details. He nodded to Fei Lan and the other two and then headed out of the room. Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo immediately got up and followed him.

"We may encounter them shortly," said Shi Yan as soon as he reached the deck. Shi Yan saw the guards of Potion and Tool Pavilion watching at their spots cautiously.

Fu Wei, An Yun, and Feng An were stern. Hearing his voice, they

turned around to see him.

"The enemy's battleships have scattered. They're going to besiege us from all directions. They're weaving a thick mesh net. Unless we can break their net and get rid of their siege, things will get tough since we will be surrounded." Shi Yan looked ahead of them, slightly narrowing his eyes. "Two battleships are waiting in front of us. We will meet them in one hour. We can't avoid them. If we change our route now, we will just head to their net sooner."

Fu Wei was still calm, smiling. "You understand the situation well."

An Yun and Feng An nodded to greet Shi Yan. Since they'd known Shi Yan, they decided to stay and fight with them. Their attitude towards him had changed.

In their eyes, Shi Yan didn't try to protect only himself. He joined others in combat, which showed his excellent code of brotherhood.

Of course, they didn't know Shi Yan's other conspiracy.

"Have you prepared everything well?" said Shi Yan calmly.

"It's okay. Although Potion and Tool Pavilion doesn't participate in battles in this star area, we aren't afraid of fighting, you know." Fu Wei smiled tenderly. She suddenly straightened her back, chin up, and spoke bravely, "We will show you how strong we are soon!"

Shi Yan's eyes brightened and he nodded quietly.

He knew that Potion and Tool Pavilion weren't ordinary. However, rumors about the competence and powers of Potion and Tool Pavilion in Agate Star Area weren't clear enough.

Today, as he got a lucky chance to fight with Fu Wei, perhaps he would have a good chance to see Potion and Tool Pavilion's real power.

Table of Contents

[God Of Slaughter](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 901: Origin](#)

[Chapter 902: The Heaven Flame that Ranks First](#)

[Chapter 903: Seize the Origin!](#)

[Chapter 904: Witness Billions of Years Pass By](#)

[Chapter 905: Two Souls](#)

[Chapter 906: Original God Realm!](#)

[Chapter 907: The Sole God](#)

[Chapter 908: Her News](#)

[Chapter 909: A great migration](#)

[Chapter 910: One thousand miles underground](#)

[Chapter 911: Thousand Fold Lotus](#)

[Chapter 912: Myriad Weighty Stone](#)

[Chapter 913: Fix the ancient formation](#)

[Chapter 914: The Mysterious Ancient City](#)

[Chapter 915: Harvest](#)

[Chapter 916: The Ransom of Seven Hundred Thousand Divine Crystals](#)

[Chapter 917: Yang Tian Emperor is Well Prepared](#)

[Chapter 918: A Long, Lonely journey](#)

[Chapter 919: Blood Halberd](#)

[Chapter 920: Today, I Come to Fulfill My Pledge!](#)

[Chapter 921: You're Dead...](#)

[Chapter 922: Energy Divergence](#)

[Chapter 923: Taboo Power](#)

[Chapter 924: A Reward of One Million](#)

[Chapter 925: Big Business](#)

[Chapter 926: Treasury](#)

[Chapter 927: Blue Ice Jar](#)

[Chapter 928: Open the Heart](#)

[Chapter 929: Outsmart](#)

[Chapter 930: Well Played!](#)

[Chapter 931: Occupy All Advantages](#)

[Chapter 932: Blood Replacement!](#)

[Chapter 933: Blood is Boiling! Perfect Form?](#)
[Chapter 934: Proper Arrangement](#)
[Chapter 935: Opportunity](#)
[Chapter 936: A Hug](#)
[Chapter 937: Broken Star Field](#)
[Chapter 938: Becoming Enemies](#)
[Chapter 939: Immortal Grass](#)
[Chapter 940: Enemies on a Narrow Road](#)
[Chapter 941: It's Dark. Please Close Your Eyes](#)
[Chapter 942: Consequences of Having a Lousy Mouth](#)
[Chapter 943: Connect Two Places!](#)
[Chapter 944: Whereabouts Disclosed](#)
[Chapter 945: Revive the Deathtrap](#)
[Chapter 946: Lift the Siege](#)
[Chapter 947: Death and Life Bridge](#)
[Chapter 948: Inheritance](#)
[Chapter 949: The Star Area Split](#)
[Chapter 950: Inevitable Fierce Combat](#)
[Chapter 951: Space Spider Web](#)
[Chapter 952: Vicious Natural Instincts](#)
[Chapter 953: The World of Shadows](#)
[Chapter 954: Sharpening](#)
[Chapter 955: An Eccentric Man](#)
[Chapter 956: Thorough Comprehension](#)
[Chapter 957: Three Souls](#)
[Chapter 958: Meddle!](#)
[Chapter 959: Butcher the Chicken with the Cattle Knife.](#)
[Chapter 960: Evil Dragon McGee](#)
[Chapter 961: Inexorable doom](#)
[Chapter 962: Soul changing!](#)
[Chapter 963: Expel](#)
[Chapter 964: I'm sure I'll handle it!](#)
[Chapter 965: Soul Refining Pool](#)
[Chapter 966: Black Water Star](#)
[Chapter 967: Evil Dragon's Natural Instincts](#)
[Chapter 968: Gu Mo](#)
[Chapter 969: Ghost Hunter at This Moment...](#)
[Chapter 970: Shi Yan's Guarantee](#)
[Chapter 971: Stop there!](#)

[Chapter 972: After all, who is he?](#)
[Chapter 973: Master and Servant](#)
[Chapter 974: Potion and Tool Pavilion](#)
[Chapter 975: Fu Wei](#)
[Chapter 976: Devil Blood Star](#)
[Chapter 977: Reunion](#)
[Chapter 978: The most distinguished guest](#)
[Chapter 979: Immense Wealth](#)
[Chapter 980: Refine Thousand Fold Lotus](#)
[Chapter 981: You like him?](#)
[Chapter 982: Expand the Sea of Consciousness](#)
[Chapter 983: The Information that is Worth Ten Million](#)
[Chapter 984: Exchange Information](#)
[Chapter 985: Blood Devil](#)
[Chapter 986: Power Upanishad in the Bloodline](#)
[Chapter 987: Make the Imprint](#)
[Chapter 988: Today](#)
[Chapter 989: Travel with a Beauty](#)
[Chapter 990: Ancient City Battleship](#)
[Chapter 991: Seven Emotion and Six Desire Liquor](#)
[Chapter 992: This Book?](#)
[Chapter 993: Generous Gift!](#)
[Chapter 994: The Potion and Tool Pavilion's Crisis](#)
[Chapter 995: Xuan Ming and Zuo Shi](#)
[Chapter 996: Send Them Off!](#)
[Chapter 997: Inexplicable Shock](#)
[Chapter 998: The Third Sky of Original God Realm!](#)
[Chapter 999: Crisis – Opportunity!](#)
[Chapter 1000: A Former Pursuer](#)